

# Subatomic quantification

Marcin Wałgiel

Open Slavic Linguistics 6



## Open Slavic Linguistics

Editors: Berit Gehrke, Denisa Lenertová, Roland Meyer, Radek Šimík & Luka Szucsich

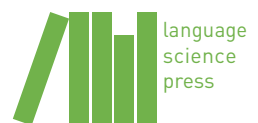
In this series:

1. Lenertová, Denisa, Roland Meyer, Radek Šimík & Luka Szucsich (Eds.). *Advances in formal Slavic linguistics 2016*.
2. Wiland, Bartosz. *The spell-out algorithm and lexicalization patterns: Slavic verbs and complementizers*.
3. Marušič, Franc, Petra Mišmaš & Rok Žaucer (eds.). *Advances in formal Slavic linguistics 2017*.
4. Blümel, Andreas, Jovana Gajić, Ljudmila Geist, Uwe Junghanns & Hagen Pitsch (eds.). *Advances in formal Slavic linguistics 2018*.
5. Dočekal, Mojmír & Marcin Wağiel (eds.). *Formal approaches to number in Slavic and beyond*.
6. Wağiel, Marcin. *Subatomic quantification*.

ISSN (print): 2627-8324  
ISSN (electronic): 2627-8332

# Subatomic quantification

Marcin Wągiel




Marcin Wałiel. 2021. *Subatomic quantification* (Open Slavic Linguistics 6).  
Berlin: Language Science Press.

This title can be downloaded at:

<http://langsci-press.org/catalog/book/317>

© 2021, Marcin Wałiel

Published under the Creative Commons Attribution 4.0 Licence (CC BY 4.0):

<http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/> 

GAČR grant number GA17-1611S

Reviewers: Adam Przepiórkowski, Peter Sutton

ISBN: 978-3-96110-315-7 (Digital)

978-3-98554-011-2 (Hardcover)

ISSN (print): 2627-8324

ISSN (electronic): 2627-8332

DOI: 10.5281/zenodo.5106382

Source code available from [www.github.com/langsci/317](http://www.github.com/langsci/317)

Collaborative reading: [paperhive.org/documents/remote?type=langsci&id=317](http://paperhive.org/documents/remote?type=langsci&id=317)

Cover and concept of design: Ulrike Harbort

Typesetting: Marcin Wałiel

Proofreading: Berit Gehrke, Nina Haslinger, Adam Przepiórkowski, Viola  
Schmitt, Peter Sutton

Fonts: Libertinus, Arimo, DejaVu Sans Mono

Typesetting software: Xe<sub>La</sub>TeX

Language Science Press

xHain

Grünberger Str. 16

10243 Berlin, Germany

[langsci-press.org](http://langsci-press.org)

Storage and cataloguing done by FU Berlin

Freie Universität  Berlin

Dla Mamy i Taty



# Contents

<b>Acknowledgments</b>	<b>v</b>
<b>Abbreviations</b>	<b>ix</b>
<b>1 Introduction</b>	<b>1</b>
1.1 What's this all about . . . . .	1
1.1.1 Intuitive notions of a whole and part . . . . .	3
1.1.2 The claims in a nutshell . . . . .	7
1.2 General assumptions . . . . .	9
1.2.1 Cognitive view of meaning . . . . .	9
1.2.2 Ontology . . . . .	10
1.3 Conventions . . . . .	11
1.3.1 Examples . . . . .	11
1.3.2 Notation . . . . .	12
1.4 The things to come . . . . .	13
<b>2 Partitives and part-whole structures</b>	<b>15</b>
2.1 Partitives . . . . .	15
2.2 The analogy . . . . .	20
2.2.1 Ambiguity or indeterminacy . . . . .	23
2.2.2 Entity and set partitives across languages . . . . .	26
2.2.3 Partitivity and countability . . . . .	37
2.3 Italian irregular plurals . . . . .	46
2.3.1 Aggregate meaning . . . . .	51
2.3.2 Interaction with cardinals in partitives . . . . .	54
2.4 Parts vs. subsets . . . . .	57
2.5 Summary . . . . .	68
<b>3 Exploring topological sensitivity</b>	<b>71</b>
3.1 Continuous and discontinuous parts . . . . .	71
3.1.1 Polish half-words . . . . .	72
3.1.2 Inherent vagueness . . . . .	82

## Contents

3.2	More topology-sensitive partitive words . . . . .	83
3.2.1	Quarter-words . . . . .	83
3.2.2	Piece-words . . . . .	87
3.3	Mass, parts, quantities, and pieces . . . . .	92
3.4	Cross-linguistic parallels . . . . .	98
3.5	Whole-adjectives . . . . .	109
3.5.1	German <i>ganz</i> and plurals . . . . .	113
3.5.2	Integrity vs. maximality . . . . .	115
3.5.3	Universal quantification over parts and wholes . . . . .	118
3.6	Summary . . . . .	123
<b>4</b>	<b>Multipliers</b> . . . . .	<b>125</b>
4.1	Significance of multipliers . . . . .	126
4.1.1	Morphological complexity of Slavic multipliers . . . . .	127
4.1.2	Subatomic quantifiers . . . . .	130
4.1.3	Cross-linguistic similarities . . . . .	134
4.1.4	Multipliers as degree modifiers . . . . .	137
4.2	Less obvious cases . . . . .	138
4.2.1	Essential parts . . . . .	138
4.2.2	Measures . . . . .	142
4.2.3	Events . . . . .	145
4.2.4	Social roles . . . . .	147
4.3	Multipliers vs. cardinals . . . . .	148
4.4	Summary . . . . .	151
<b>5</b>	<b>Conceptual background</b> . . . . .	<b>153</b>
5.1	Psychological evidence . . . . .	154
5.1.1	Object/substance distinction . . . . .	154
5.1.2	Whole object assumption . . . . .	157
5.1.3	Part-whole perception . . . . .	158
5.1.4	Number sense . . . . .	160
5.2	The three claims . . . . .	164
5.2.1	Relevance of topological notions with respect to part-whole structures . . . . .	164
5.2.2	General counting principles . . . . .	167
5.2.3	Counting vs. measuring . . . . .	174
5.2.4	Subatomic quantification . . . . .	177
5.3	Summary . . . . .	181



<b>6</b>	<b>Theory of parts and wholes</b>	<b>183</b>
6.1	Mereology . . . . .	183
6.1.1	Mereology vs. set theory . . . . .	189
6.1.2	Limits of mereology . . . . .	190
6.2	Mereotopology . . . . .	192
6.2.1	Integrated wholes . . . . .	196
6.2.2	Other types of connection . . . . .	200
6.3	Summary . . . . .	205
<b>7</b>	<b>Mereotopological account for subatomic quantification</b>	<b>207</b>
7.1	Doing without atoms . . . . .	207
7.2	Common nouns . . . . .	212
7.2.1	Count nouns . . . . .	213
7.2.2	Artifacts and functional units . . . . .	215
7.2.3	Pluralization . . . . .	219
7.2.4	Consequences . . . . .	221
7.3	Measure functions . . . . .	224
7.3.1	Counting operation . . . . .	225
7.3.2	Contextual conditioning . . . . .	226
7.3.3	Counting essential parts . . . . .	228
7.4	Numerical expressions . . . . .	230
7.4.1	Numeral roots . . . . .	231
7.4.2	Cardinals . . . . .	231
7.4.3	Multipliers . . . . .	234
7.4.4	Cross-linguistic support . . . . .	236
7.5	Partitives . . . . .	238
7.5.1	Partitivity . . . . .	239
7.5.2	Maximization . . . . .	240
7.5.3	Choice functions . . . . .	242
7.5.4	Topology-sensitive transitivity . . . . .	243
7.5.5	Partitions . . . . .	244
7.5.6	Individuation . . . . .	246
7.5.7	Partitive words . . . . .	248
7.6	Composition . . . . .	252
7.6.1	Explicit entity partitives . . . . .	252
7.6.2	Explicit set partitives . . . . .	254
7.6.3	Count explicit partitives . . . . .	255
7.6.4	Topology-neutral proportional partitives . . . . .	258
7.6.5	Topology-sensitive proportional partitives . . . . .	261

## *Contents*

7.6.6	Multiplier phrases . . . . .	264
7.7	Possible extensions . . . . .	267
7.7.1	Topology-sensitive partitives in other languages . . . . .	267
7.7.2	Italian partitives with irregular plurals . . . . .	268
7.8	Summary . . . . .	270
<b>8</b>	<b>Conclusion</b>	<b>273</b>
8.1	Overall summary . . . . .	274
8.2	Open questions and future research . . . . .	281
	<b>References</b>	<b>285</b>
	<b>Index</b>	<b>311</b>
	Name index . . . . .	311

# Acknowledgments

This monograph is based on my Ph.D. thesis defended at the Department of Linguistics and Baltic Languages at the Masaryk University in Brno under the supervision of Mojmír Dočekal in 2019 (committee members: Pavel Caha, Jakub Dotlačil, Scott Grimm, Jiří Raclavský, Viola Schmitt, Ondřej Šefčík, and Ludmila Veselovská). It received the E. W. Beth Dissertation Prize awarded by the Association for Logic, Language and Information, as well as the Dean's Award for the Best Ph.D. Thesis at the Masaryk University in Brno. It is also one of the outcomes of the research project *Formal Approaches to Number in Slavic* (GA17-16111S; <https://sites.google.com/view/number-in-slavic/home>), funded by the Czech Science Foundation (GAČR) and carried out at the Department of Linguistics and Baltic Languages at the Masaryk University in Brno, in cooperation with researchers from the Center for Language and Cognition at the University of Groningen, the Department of German Studies at the University of Vienna, and the Center for Experimental Research on Natural Language at the University of Wrocław.

This book is a result of a collaborative effort and I would have never finished it without the inspiration, support, and advice of many people I met in the last several years. First of all, I would like to thank Mojmír Dočekal for introducing me to how fascinating linguistics can be and raising my initial interest in the subject of pluralities and quantification. I would have never become a semantacist if I had not met him. Second, I am deeply grateful to Viola Schmitt for so many things that it is hard to list them. She convinced me that my idea of accounting for subatomic quantification is actually interesting and constantly kept me motivated during the whole process of writing my thesis. Her constructive criticism and inspiring comments were of incalculable value and this book would have never come into existence if it weren't for her support and advice. Third, I would like to say "thank you" like one million times to Berit Gehrke who was the handling editor of this book. She did much more for it than I could have ever imagined. I wish everyone such a great editor. Next, I am very thankful to Nina Haslinger with whom I had many thought-provoking discussions concerning the data, theoretical implications, and formalism. Without those conversations this

## *Acknowledgments*

book most definitely would not be what it is. Furthermore, I am also very grateful to the reviewers of this book, Adam Przepiórkowski and Peter Sutton, whose detailed, inspiring, and often critical comments pushed me to improve the content of this monograph so that it is much better than it could have been. Their feedback was invaluable. I would also like to thank Scott Grimm who inspired me to radically change my way of thinking about nominal semantics. Finally, I would wish to acknowledge the technical support of the entire Language Science Press editorial team as well as the help of Radek Šimík.

The process of clarifying what this book should be about and how to achieve its aim was long. During that time I stayed at several academic locations, each of which had a considerable impact on my linguistic development. Therefore, I would like to thank the following people to whom I owe for what I know now (always in alphabetical order). Many thanks to my friends and colleagues at the Masaryk University in Brno, especially Pavel Caha, Hana Strachoňová, and Markéta Ziková for their support and making Brno a stimulating place to do linguistics. Next, I am very grateful to the people with whom I interacted during my stay at the Humboldt-Universität zu Berlin, namely Manfred Bierwisch, Aleksandra Gogłóza, Robert Hammel, Denisa Lenertová, Manfred Krifka, Roland Meyer, Uli Sauerland, Stephanie Solt, Luka Szucsich, Kazuko Yatsushiro, Karolina Zuchewicz, and especially Radek Šimík. Due to those discussions I have clarified many vague ideas and learned a great deal of semantics. During two stays at the University of Vienna I met a number of people with whom discussing linguistics was so much more than I had ever experienced. Specifically I would like to thank Muriel Assmann, Daniel Buring, Enrico Flor, Izabela Jordanoska, Chiara Masnovo, Martin Prinzhorn, Maximilian Prüller, Magdalena Roszkowski, Jakob Steixner, and Ede Zimmermann for helping me discover so many new things and realize what I want to say and how. Finally, for a long time parallel to my Ph.D. program I was working at the Palacký University in Olomouc. During that period, I have learned much due to interactions with Jakub Bortlík, Petra Charvátová, Joseph Emonds, Anna Kozánková, Jeffrey Parrott, and Lída Veselovská. I am also grateful for support to Ivana Dobrotová, Michał Hanczakowski, and Jan Jeništa with whom I worked at that time. I would also like to sincerely thank Jakub Dotlačil, Berit Gehrke, and Yasu Sudo whom I met several times at different occasions during my PhD program. Their comments and inspiring insights as well as interesting discussions were always of great help.

At different conferences, workshops, and other events I met people whose questions and comments were of extreme importance for developing my understanding of the phenomena described in this book as well as realizing problems I

have not even noticed before. Sometimes it was just a question or a remark, sometimes it was a longer discussion or even several conversations. In each case, however, it stimulated me to clarify what I actually want to say. Other people helped me a lot as informants providing examples from their native languages. Therefore, I would like to thank David Adger, Curt Anderson, Boban Arsenijević, Petr Biskup, Joanna Błaszczak, Jonathan Bobaljik, Natalie Boll-Avetisyan, Olga Borik, Ana Bosnić, Roslyn Burns, Lisa Bylinina, Bożena Cetnarowska, Lucas Champollion, Guglielmo Cinque, Miloje Despić, Dominika Dziubała-Szrejbrowska, Regine Eckardt, Kurt Erbach, Katalin É. Kiss, Hana Filip, Salvatore Florio, Katherine Fraser, Ljudmila Geist, Dariusz Głuch, Julie Goncharov, Justyna Grudzińska, Veronika Hegedűs, Gillen Martinez de la Hidalga, Daniel Hole, Krzysztof Hwaszcz, Tetiana Kamyshanova, Jiří Kašpar, Hanna Kędzierska, Dorota Klimek-Jankowska, Predrag Kovačević, Jakub Kozakoszczak, Ivona Kučerová, Fred Landman, Daniel Lassiter, Tomas Lentz, Chang Liu, Aitor Lizardi Ituarte, Sebastian Löbner, Marijana Marelj, Radvan Markus, Lanko Marušič, Ora Matushansky, Louise McNally, Erlinde Meertens, Katarzyna Miechowicz-Mathiasen, Petra Mišmaš, Maša Močnik, Marcin Morzycki, Olav Mueller-Reichau, Andrew Nevins, David Nicolas, Rick Nouwen, Itziar Orbegozo Arrizabalaga, Agnieszka Patejuk, Roumyana Pancheva, Asya Pereltsvaig, Lilla Pintér, Hagen Pitsch, Adam Przepiórkowski, Wiktor Pskit, Zorica Puškar, Agata Renans, Susan Rothstein, Marta Ruda, Paweł Rutkowski, Piotr Stalmaszczyk, Balázs Surányi, Branimir Stanković, Peter Sutton, Iveta Šafratová, Guy Tabachnick, Barbara Tomaszewicz, Jan Winkowski, Jacek Witkoś, Jan Wiślicki, Kata Wohlmuth, Henk Zeevat, Sarah Zobel, Yulia Zinova, and Eytan Zweig. All errors are of course my own.

Finally, many thanks to my family and friends for their support and not asking too often whether I'm already done. In particular, I am grateful to my Mum and Dad for teaching me how to think independently, to Piotr and Zosia, Herok, Bacha, Byrtek, and the Gwizdońs. Last, but not least, I am deeply thankful to Izabela for her love and unconditional support as well as tons of delicious plum cake that kept me going during hard times. In the last several years, we have achieved together so much more than this book.

Marcin Wągiel  
Brno, 13 July 2021



# Abbreviations

ACC	accusative	IMPRS	impersonal
ADJ	adjectival form	INS	instrumental
AGR	agreement marker	INT	interrogative marker
CLF	classifier	LNK	linker
COLL	Italian irregular plural	LOC	locative
COP	copula	M	masculine
DAT	dative	N	neuter
DISTR	distributivity marker	NOM	nominative
ELA	elative	PART	partitive case
F	feminine	PL	plural
GEN	genitive	POSS	possessive
GROUP	denumeral group noun	REFL	reflexive marker
IMP	imperative	SG	singular





# 1 Introduction

Since the early days of formal semantics (starting with Montague 1973) issues concerning quantification, pluralities, and countability have been of central importance for the study of meaning in natural language. A substantial body of research has been dedicated to these topics, which led to a number of influential theories (e.g., Barwise & Cooper 1981; Scha 1981; Link 1983; Hoeksema 1983; Gillon 1987; Krifka 1989; Schwarzschild 1996; Landman 2000; Winter 2001). Within this tradition since at least Scha (1981) to present, e.g., Champollion (2017), the prevailing view is that denotations of count nouns are atomic or, in other words, involve atoms, i.e., entities that have no proper parts in a mereological sense. Though at first blush this seems unintuitive since we know very well from our common experience that often things do have parts, there seemed to be good reasons to assume that compositional semantics ignores this fact and treats referents of count noun as indivisible units. The achievements of that strand of research are indisputable. At the same time, I believe that the attachment to the notion of atomicity originates from a limited scope of investigation and in the face of novel linguistic evidence to be presented needs to be revised. The motivation behind this book is to explore what could be gained for semantic theory if we adopted a different perspective.

## 1.1 What's this all about

This book is about parts of singular concrete things such as apples, walls, and crowns, and how we quantify over them. It is also about parts of pluralities of things such as collections of apples, walls, and crowns, and why we do not quantify over them unless very specific individuating criteria are satisfied. It is about various types of partitives, e.g., structures such as *half of the apple*, multiplier phrases, e.g., expressions like *double crown*, and other natural language expressions, e.g., adjective phrases such as *whole apple*. What all these constructions have in common is that they involve what I will call throughout this study SUB-ATOMIC QUANTIFICATION. Subatomic quantification is quantification over parts of things that constitute building blocks of denotations of nominal expressions

## 1 Introduction

such as *apple*, *wall*, and *crown*. Though the use of the word “subatomic” in the title of this book suggests that I will also adopt the concept of an atom, in fact I will argue against approaches to nominal semantics based on the notion of atomicity. I decided for the use of that term since I believe that it intuitively evokes what I intend to focus on. Ironically, however, I believe the evidence concerning subatomic quantification forces us to reconsider what building blocks of denotations of count nouns actually are. The great source of inspiration for this study has been the work of Grimm (2012a,b) who proposes a novel view on how to capture the semantic relevance of the mass/count distinction without reference to atoms.

The empirical aim of this book is to provide novel linguistic evidence showing that natural language semantics is sensitive to subatomic part-whole structures and to topological relations holding between elements within such structures. Furthermore, I intend to demonstrate the linguistic relevance of subatomic quantification as well as the fact that quantification over parts of a whole is subject to identical restrictions as quantification over wholes. The evidence to be examined indicates that some quantificational operations including counting presuppose particular topological relations.

From a theoretical point of view, this book is intended to provide a novel argument for adopting a theory of wholes called mereotopology, i.e., a system in which standard mereology based on parthood is extended with the primitive relation of connectedness as well as nuanced derived topological notions that allow for capturing various spatial configurations of parts. The origins of mereotopology trace back to Whitehead (1920; 1929) and the theory was further developed within formal ontology and artificial intelligence (e.g., Clarke 1981; Smith 1996; Roeper 1997; Casati & Varzi 1999; Varzi 2007). It was introduced to linguistics by Grimm (2012a,b).

Some of the key questions concerning natural language semantics I want to address in this book are the following.

- Q1: Are there different types of parts of entities similar to different types of wholes?
- Q2: How do we count parts of an object?
- Q3: Why can we not count parts of a plurality as one thing unless certain individuating criteria are satisfied?

At first blush, the answers at which I arrive might seem somewhat surprising.

A1: Yes, there are continuous and discontinuous parts. The former resemble referents of singular count nouns, whereas the latter are more like pluralities.

A2: We count parts of an object in the very same way to how we count whole objects. The mechanism is unified, thus identical restrictions apply.

A3: For the same reason we cannot count pluralities as one thing unless specific individuating criteria are met. Only objects with certain topological characteristics can be assigned a number in numerical quantification.

The most important result of this study is a proposal of an account for subatomic quantification. I will argue not only that it correctly predicts why only some parts are countable, but also that extending it to the level of wholes will enable us to provide more advantageous explanations for known problems. For instance, it could explain why a natural language expression such as *two apples* refers to a plurality of two apples rather than to two pluralities of apples. Or why object mass nouns such as *furniture* are not countable despite involving reference to discrete entities. There are also a number of other questions I will attempt to tackle, many of which will remain without a definite answer. However, I believe that both the evidence presented here and the proposed account provide a novel exciting perspective to think about partitivity and countability.

Note that though I will sometimes mention certain nominal categories in passing, this study is not about abstract terms (see, e.g., Asher 1993; Tovena 2001; Nicolas 2002; Moltmann 2013), event nominals (see, e.g., Grimshaw 1990; 2011; Bierwisch 1990; Borer 2005b), or collective nouns (see, e.g., Landman 1989a,b; Barker 1992; Schwarzschild 1996; Pearson 2011; de Vries 2015), nor about parts of their referents. Despite the fact that in principle I believe that the approach developed here can be extended to these expressions, for the most part I will not consider part-whole structures of abstract entities. Before I introduce the main claims of this book in a bit more detail and then delve into intricacies of linguistic evidence, let us first consider my view on what it intuitively means to be a whole and part.

### 1.1.1 Intuitive notions of a whole and part

The starting point of this journey concerns an ontological intuition dating back at least to the Pre-Socratics that entities are often made up of smaller entities which are related to each other in a particular manner (see Varzi 2016 for a historical overview). In other words, when thinking about what is, humans often

## 1 Introduction

assume that objects are generally configurations of parts. This ontological intuition seems to stem from a cognitive fact that human beings often conceive of entities as being made up of smaller entities related to each other in certain ways. In fact, psychological evidence demonstrates that at least from early childhood humans are able to perceive entities simultaneously in a twofold way (e.g., Elkind et al. 1964; Kimchi 1993; Boisvert et al. 1999). On the one hand, we can discriminate parts from a whole making them more salient than the entire object, whereas on the other hand we have the ability to integrate the parts in such a way that the perception of a complete whole emerges in our cognition. In other words, humans are able to see entities as collections of parts and as integrated wholes simultaneously.

At the same time, since the very early considerations on the part-whole relation in Plato's *Parmenides* and *Theaetetus* a topic of much concern has been unity. What interests Plato is how to differentiate between a true unity and an arbitrary sum of parts. The crucial property of the former is that it is provided by structure which distinguishes it from the latter. Without going into details of Plato's ontological views (but see, e.g., Priest 2014), it seems that the key intuition behind his deliberations is that the crucial component of what it means to be a whole is given by the manner of arrangement of parts. In other words, a whole is not simply reducible to the sum of its parts (see also Casati & Varzi 1999), e.g., a glass is not an arbitrary sum of shards, but rather a particular configuration of shards. It happens that I also share this intuition.

When considering how objects are conceptualized, I believe it is instructive to make use of categories such as unity, boundedness, and integrity. The first is about capturing an individual as a complete whole in itself, i.e., distinguishing between discrete objects as opposed to fragmentary portions of a continuum of a larger entity. The second category concerns boundaries. Objects are well-defined in space in contrast to scattered fragments of entities or a diffused continuum of matter. Finally, integrity characterizes a mutual bond between entities perceived as being parts of a certain whole. Though this bond can be conceptualized in many different ways, one significant mode of integrity is viewed in terms of topology. Specifically, objects involve elements that are connected to each other, i.e., stuck together, and thus move along the same trajectories as one unit. The vital question that inspired this study is to what extent these categories are relevant for the architecture of natural language semantics? In the following chapters, I will argue that there are good reasons to believe that it is indeed relevant. Specifically, I will provide linguistic evidence not only that the meaning of nominal expressions involves information concerning integrity but also that grammar is sensitive to such a notion.

Crucially, I argue that the same way of thinking should apply when talking about parts of wholes. When describing parthood with respect to entities extended in space or time, employing the topological notion of contiguity might allow us to capture some non-trivial facts about part-whole structures. In particular, some parts constitute individuated continuous strings of matter within a whole, whereas other parts are just arbitrary sums of portions of substances. To demonstrate the difference let us discuss the following example (see Acquaviva 2008: pp. 90–93). Consider two parts of a table, its leg and a splinter. Under ordinary circumstances, we would definitely agree that both these entities are parts of the table; however, each of them in a somewhat different sense. A splinter is just some arbitrary portion of matter making up the table, an element among numerous similar fragments of the whole. Before mentioning it, we probably had no or at least very little expectations with respect to its appearance. We might even question whether it exists as a splinter before being detached from the whole since normally tables are not perceived as collections of splinters. On the other hand, a leg is easily identifiable among a definite number of similar elements. We perceive it as having a clearly specified function and expect certain traits of its appearance. Furthermore, there is also a sense in which two separate disconnected splinters or two disjoint legs are part of the table since they constitute some fragment of its material make-up. Importantly, however, this type of parthood seems to resemble the relationship between a splinter and the whole rather than the relationship between a leg and the whole table. In other words, under ordinary circumstances a plurality of disjoint legs seems to be a material rather than a functional part of the table despite the fact that each of the legs constituting that plurality definitely is its functional part.

In the philosophical literature, this distinction has been attributed to different modes of partitioning an object. For instance, Krecz (1986) proposes different terms for specific subdivisions of a whole, i.e., parts, as opposed to arbitrary subdivisions, i.e., pieces. The former would correspond, e.g., to a leg of a table, whereas the latter would be used with respect to, e.g., a splinter. In a similar vein, Markosian (1998) draws an analogous distinction between what he calls *metaphysical parts*, i.e., parts that can be considered as objects in their own right, and *conceptual parts*, i.e., equivalents of arbitrary parts. Finally, Jennings (2010) proposes to differentiate between parts viewed as arbitrary bits of an object one could cut off, and *functional parts* defined as parts that are considered essential for an object since they fulfill a particular function. Crucially, the distinction is conceptually valid but it is also reflected in grammar. For instance, English distinguishes between the two different flavors of parthood discussed above syntactically as can be witnessed in (1) (see also Champollion & Krifka 2016). The use

## 1 Introduction

of the bare mass noun *part* in the sentence in (1a) indicates arbitrary partitioning of the table. On the other hand, the full DP *a part* in (1b) corresponds to a specific division in parts. Notice also that only the latter use is countable.

- (1) English (Acquaviva 2008: p. 90, adapted)
- a. A splinter is part of the table.
  - b. A leg is a part of the table.

It has been acknowledged that the distinction discussed above seems to have some further linguistic implications (Champollion & Krifka 2016). For instance, consider the minimal pairs in (2) and (3).<sup>1</sup> The contrast suggests that transitivity does not hold for specific parts.<sup>2</sup> In other words, the fact that the thumb is a part of a hand does not guarantee that it would be linguistically treated as a part of what that hand is part of, i.e., an arm.

- (2) English (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 513; adapted)
- a. the thumb of this hand
  - b. a hand without a thumb
- (3) English (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 513; adapted)
- a. #the thumb of this arm
  - b. #an arm without a thumb

Despite these facts the role of the distinction between arbitrary and specific parts in natural language semantics is usually either totally neglected or reduced to lexical relations such as meronymy, i.e., relations between meronyms and holonyms, e.g. *wing* and *bird*, and hyponymy, i.e., the relation between hyponyms and hyperonyms, e.g., *sparrow* and *bird*. Although it has been recognized that meronymy and hyponymy have some general properties that establish taxonomies and structure large parts of the lexicon in natural language (Cruse 1986), compositional approaches to meaning did not assume that such categories play any role in the proposed models. One of the aims of this book is to provide linguistic evidence for the relevance of the two aspects of what it means to be part of something and to propose how first steps towards accommodating a less naive view on parthood into semantic theory could look like.

---

<sup>1</sup>In the original examples in (2b) and (3b), Champollion & Krifka use the bare count NP *thumb* inside the PP, which some speakers find marked. However, using an indefinite does not seem to change the felicity judgments.

<sup>2</sup>Champollion & Krifka use the terms structured and unstructured parthood in order to refer specific and arbitrary subdivisions, respectively.

### 1.1.2 The claims in a nutshell

In this book, I will argue that a proper treatment of countability in natural language should take into account the interaction between partitivity, topology, and quantification. In other words, I believe that exploring subatomic quantification can reveal some non-trivial phenomena that were otherwise obscure, and thus contribute to our understanding of the interaction between nominal semantics and the meaning of numerical expressions in general. The central claims of this book are the following.

First, natural language is sensitive to the fact that entities denoted by nominal expressions have parts as well as topological relations holding between them. The relevance of part-whole structures is typically acknowledged with respect to pluralities. However, my claim is stronger. I postulate that natural language is also sensitive to subatomic part-whole structures. This is in discordance with the mainstream view that utilizes the notion of atomicity in order to capture semantic properties of count nouns. Such an approach postulates that atoms, i.e., building blocks of denotations of expressions like *apple* and *crown*, are entities that from a linguistic perspective are treated as having no proper parts. Consequently, countability can be accounted for in terms of quantification over atoms. Nevertheless, the linguistic evidence I will present in the following chapters will demonstrate that in fact there are a number of natural language expressions involving quantification over such subatomic parts. Crucially, based on the distribution of partitives I will argue for a unified parthood relation for both singularities and pluralities. Furthermore, I will postulate that the difference between the two is a result of different topological relations encoded in the corresponding part-whole structures. The claim is that prototypical referents of count singulars are conceptualized as integrated wholes, whereas regular plurals require entities in their denotations to comprise such cohesive objects as their parts but impose no topological constraints on a spatial configuration of those parts. As we will see from the data concerning topologically sensitive partitive expressions, the distinction between integrated wholes and scattered entities also applies at the subatomic level. Specifically, the novel evidence shows that the contrast between continuous and discontinuous parts is relevant for the interpretation of natural language expressions. Hence, the notion of topological integrity should be accommodated into semantic theory.

The second claim concerns counting. In particular, I will argue that countability is not some syntactic feature nor is it a meaning postulate on a certain lexical item, but rather it follows from what I refer to as the general counting principles. In particular, the principle of non-overlap ensures that entities one quantifies

## 1 Introduction

over are disjoint, i.e., they do not share a part. In other words, things can be counted once and once only. This rule excludes a possibility of counting entities involving multiple overlapping parts as denoted by mass nouns and pluralia tantum. Furthermore, the principle of maximality guarantees that when counted entities are associated with numbers in their entirety, i.e., no part is left out. This is especially relevant with respect to homogeneous entities referred to by nouns such as *twig* and *fence*. Given a particular counting situation, what counts as one always needs to be the maximal entity no matter how its part-whole structure is defined in that situation. Finally, the principle of integrity requires that what can be counted needs to be conceptualized as an entity that comes in one piece. This restriction rules out arbitrary sums of entities as well as discontinuous portions of substances. Consequently, counting pluralities as one thing is not allowed, unless there are certain topological conditions that apply.<sup>3</sup> In other words, being a plurality is neither necessary nor sufficient for counting as a single entity. All things considered, only predicates denoting entities that satisfy the general counting principles can be modified by cardinals.

The third and final claim extends the general mechanism behind counting to the subatomic level. More specifically, I will postulate that the general counting principles constitute a universal set of constraints regulating what is fit for being counted and what is not, irrespective of whether it is a whole or a part. In other words, I will argue that it follows from the principles of non-overlap, maximality, and integrity that certain parts are countable whereas others are not. The evidence from partitive constructions involving cardinal numerals demonstrates that it is not allowed to count discontinuous parts of entities. Moreover, the claim is further corroborated by the fact that natural language developed expressions dedicated to subatomic quantification.

Linguistic evidence for the three claims introduced above comes from a number of natural language expressions. Specifically, I will examine different types of partitives, whole-adjectives as well as multipliers such as English *double*. Some parts of this book will also investigate the data considering plurals and cardinal numerals. In order to provide a more general picture, the evidence will be examined from a cross-linguistic perspective. The languages which will be discussed mostly include Polish, German, Italian, and English, but throughout the text I will also address examples from (in alphabetical order) Basque, Bosnian/Croatian/Serbian (BCS), Brazilian Portuguese, Czech, Dutch, Finnish, French, Hebrew, Hungarian, Irish, Japanese, Lithuanian, Maltese, Mandarin, Mi'gmaq, Russian, and Yucuna.

---

<sup>3</sup>Notice that group nouns are more than pluralities. In fact, I assume that they denote abstract singular entities with whom pluralities of members can be associated.



## 1.2 General assumptions

There are several issues concerning conceptual grounds that require a short commentary. In this section, I will present my view on natural language semantics and discuss the ontology assumed for the purpose of developing an account for subatomic quantification.

### 1.2.1 Cognitive view of meaning

The view on theory of meaning I adopt here is on a par with the position expressed by Krifka (1998) and shared, e.g., by Partee (2018) and Grimm (2012b) (see also Chomsky 2000). Though model-theoretic semantics in the tradition of Montague has commonly been assumed to necessarily endorse some form of semantic externalism (see, e.g., Putnam 1975; Davidson 1987), i.e., a view on which expressions of natural language designate objects in the world, and as such is incompatible with approaches to meaning that seek to develop cognitive models of the world (assuming that meanings are in the head after all), such a sharp distinction does not seem plausible. In fact, as pointed out by Krifka, it is possible to combine the use of the methods and techniques developed within the model-theoretic tradition with an assumption that natural language expressions are interpreted by conceptual structures that in turn are associated with external entities by some pragmatic mechanism responsible for how we use language. Therefore, I assume that model-theoretic representations discussed in this study are compatible with a cognitive view of meaning and can be seen as tools one can use to try to grasp human mental reality.

In other words, in the system developed here I make no metaphysical claims, nor do I embrace any form of semantic externalism. Instead, I adopt a view that natural language ontology does not reveal what there is, but rather what people talk as if there is (see Bach 1986a; Pelletier 2011; Bach & Chao 2012; Moltmann 2017). Therefore, I would like to see the postulated notions and structures as attempts to capture the way we conceptualize certain aspects of external reality. That is to say, the theory of subatomic quantification to follow is assumed to characterize some properties of how human beings perceive things in the world, not to describe them how they are. This means that both primitive objects and more complex conceptual forms are assumed to “be in the head” (see Chomsky 2000). Of course, it is not unlikely that properties of such semantic objects may often correspond to the properties of mind/language-external entities. Consequently, the former could be used to talk about the latter assuming matching by some extra-linguistic mechanism. In any case, I do not presume that meanings

## 1 Introduction

are out there in the world. Rather, I will often emphasize the significance for natural language semantics of how entities are conceptualized. In the next section, I will describe the minimal assumptions concerning primitive objects grouped together in the domains of the model.

### 1.2.2 Ontology

In standard Montague semantics, the domain of discourse is simply a collection of disjoint non-empty sets of entities from which denotations of basic expressions as well as more complex constituents are built. It is usually assumed that the domain of entities is supplemented with the set of truth values as well as sets of events, possible worlds, degrees and others. Since the focus of this study is very specific, I will limit the number of distinct types of primitive objects almost to a minimum. In doing so, I will try to be faithful to the position famously formulated by Link (1983) that the guide in ontological considerations should be natural language itself.

I will use the term ENTITY to talk about anything that can be referred to by proper names, such as *Noam Chomsky* and *Nim Chimpsky*, and by definite descriptions, like *the author of "Syntactic Structures"* and *that chimpanzee*, as well as denoted by common nouns such as *apple* and *juice*. I assume that entities can be either well-defined discrete objects, pluralities thereof, or shapeless amorphous substances. Though there are significant differences between them, they all fall into one domain. In general, I will refer to a thing in the denotation of a count noun as INDIVIDUAL or OBJECT. Sometimes, I will use the term SCATTERED ENTITY to indicate referents of mass terms and ARBITRARY SUM to talk about denotations of plurals. The notions ENTITY and THING are assumed to be general terms covering both individuals/objects, portions of matter as well as pluralities.

I do not assume that all nouns designate entities. Some classes of nominals such as nominalizations, measure words as well as role nouns arguably make reference to eventualities, degrees, and roles, respectively. For instance, *murder* denotes a set of murdering events (e.g., Grimshaw 1990; 2011), *liter* refers to an interval or a set of degrees on a scale of volume (e.g., von Stechow 1984; Heim 1985), whereas *president* designates a social role, i.e., a function or capacity independent of the individuals that bear it (Sowa 1984; Steimann 2000). Such social constructs can be associated with individuals by a special shifting mechanism (Zobel 2017). Though in this study I will restrict my focus to entities, or specifically concrete entities, I believe that at least some of the ideas introduced here can serve as an inspiration for developing a new way of thinking of partialness with respect to somewhat more abstract things such as eventualities, degrees, and roles.

Since kinds, or more generally concepts (see Krifka 1995; Mueller-Reichau 2006), do not play any role in this study, I will refrain from the discussion concerning their ontological status as well as their role in nominal semantics. Nevertheless, in principle the approach developed here is compatible with accounts modeling kinds in the spirit of Carlson (1977; 1980) and Krifka (1995), where they are treated as entities in their own right that unlike object-level things are not spatio-temporally bounded.

A considerable amount of attention in this study will be dedicated to numerical expressions including cardinal numerals, fractions, and multipliers. I assume that all those lexical items involve some sort of reference to mathematical entities. I will use the term `NUMBER` to refer to abstract entities that definite descriptions such as *the number two* designate. I adopt here an intuitionist perspective on the epistemology of mathematics (see, e.g., Kitcher 1984). According to this view, mathematical objects are constructions of the human mind and do not exist in the external world. Notice, however, that numbers in this sense do not necessarily coincide with objects defined by Peano's axioms. For instance, I do not assume that "artificial" integers (in the sense of Dehaene 1997: pp. 238–242), i.e., non-standard and counterintuitive arithmetical objects that nevertheless satisfy Peano's axioms, are part of the ontology described here. Rather, numbers are what we refer to when we use our everyday language and what might coincide with human number sense.

## 1.3 Conventions

Both glossing and notational conventions used in this book are more or less standard in academic linguistics. Nonetheless, for the sake of clarity I provide a complete list of what to expect in examples and formulae.

### 1.3.1 Examples

Since in many parts of this book I discuss phrases and sentences from various languages some of which are not very well-known, in order to avoid confusion I will always indicate the language of an example, even if that language is English. Furthermore, I will provide information on the bibliographical source or a name of a native speaker or native speakers with whom I have consulted a particular example. In the case of evidence from Polish, almost all examples and judgments are my own though I have often confirmed them with other native speakers who confirmed my intuitions. Most of the data come from introspection with some exceptions found in corpora. I use the symbol # to indicate both semantic infelicity,

## 1 Introduction

i.e., awkwardness in terms of meaning, and constructions that lack a particular interpretation that is crucial from the perspective of a discussed phenomenon. For the sake of clarity, in the latter case I will always provide relevant readings and mark the one that is non-existent with the symbol #. In other words, when # appears on object language, then it means semantic infelicity; when # appears on an interpretation line, then it means that that reading is not available. Unless explicitly stated otherwise, I will always consider uncoerced meanings of nominal expressions, i.e., I will ignore the mass-count as well as count-mass shifts. Occasionally, I will use the symbol \* in the examples to indicate ungrammaticality.

Concerning glossing, I will introduce the complete grammatical information only when relevant morpho-syntactic issues are discussed or its lack might cause confusion. Otherwise, for the sake of simplicity I limit it to the minimum. The list of abbreviations used in the examples can be found at the beginning of this book.

### 1.3.2 Notation

In the following text, I will use a relatively standard notation. For completeness, I specify the following. The symbols  $x$ ,  $y$ ,  $z$ , and  $w$  are used to represent entity variables, whereas  $n$  and  $P$  are dedicated for number and predicate variables, respectively. The small letters  $a$ ,  $b$ ,  $c$ , and  $d$  stand for entity constants, whereas Arabic numbers, e.g., 1, 2, and 3, stand for integers. On the other hand, metalinguistic constants designating particular properties are transcribed with small capitals, e.g., APPLE stands for the property of being an apple, whereas logical constants designating various operations are typeset using the sans-serif font, e.g., MAX for the maximization operation. The primitive semantic types of entities, numbers, and truth values are represented by the symbols  $e$ ,  $n$ , and  $t$ , respectively. Only complex types are given in angle brackets, e.g.,  $\langle e, t \rangle$  as opposed to  $e$ . Furthermore, the scope of both the  $\lambda$  operator and quantifiers  $\exists$  and  $\forall$  is indicated by square brackets, e.g.,  $\lambda x[\text{APPLE}(x)]$  and  $\exists x[\text{APPLE}(x)]$ . For convenience, in complex formulae I use small and big brackets in order to designate scope of particular operators. Finally, presuppositions are introduced always following a colon immediately after the relevant  $\lambda$  operator, e.g., in the term  $\lambda x : \text{FRUIT}(x) \lambda P[*P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = 3]$  the sequence  $\text{FRUIT}(x)$  is a presupposition.

## 1.4 The things to come

A substantial body of linguistic research has been dedicated to quantification in natural language. This monograph is intended to contribute to that enterprise by presenting novel data concerning subatomic quantification and proposing novel arguments in favor of a mereotopological approach to nominal semantics. The book is structured as follows. The next three chapters will provide linguistic evidence on the relevance of subatomic quantification mainly from a cross-linguistic perspective. I will examine a broad range of constructions involving different types of partitives, whole-adjectives, and multipliers such as English *double*.

In Chapter 2, I will discuss certain patterns observed in partitive constructions cross-linguistically that suggest a unified meaning of partitive words such as *part* and *half* as well as the importance of the topological notion of integrity in subatomic quantification. The main focus will be dedicated to the interaction between numerals, partitive words, and nominals involving count singulars, regular plurals as well as Italian irregular plurals.

Chapter 3 will provide further evidence for the significance of integrity in quantification over parts. In particular, I will present novel data concerning topology-sensitive partitive words that require the whole to be an integrated object or yield only integrated parts of the whole. Though the evidence will come mainly from Polish, parallels with other languages will also be drawn including English, German, and Mandarin.

In Chapter 4, I will explore the meaning of multipliers, i.e., a neglected class of numerical expressions that is specialized to count parts of entities denoted by the modified noun. The discussed data will come from Slavic where morphological evidence supports semantic complexity of those expressions.

The main purpose of Chapter 5 is to provide the three claims that constitute the conceptual background for the analysis. For that purpose, I will relate the previously introduced linguistic evidence to psychological findings concerning the role integrity and part-whole structures play in human cognition and especially in counting.

In Chapter 6, I will introduce mereotopology, i.e., a theory of wholes extending the mereological framework based on the notion of parthood with the topological concept of connectedness. Mereotopology allows us to capture the difference between distinct types of things, such as integrated wholes, arbitrary sums of individuals, and scattered entities corresponding to substances, and will prove advantageous in modeling quantification over parts.

Chapter 7 will be dedicated to spelling out a formal analysis of selected issues in subatomic quantification. The account will be based on the mereotopological

## *1 Introduction*

framework with the intuitive notion of integrity playing the main role in the semantic representation of countable parts.

Finally, Chapter 8 will conclude the book and suggest how further research could extend the approach in order to tackle some open questions. For convenience, the most relevant contribution of a given part is summarized at the end of each chapter.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

In this chapter, I will examine cross-linguistic evidence for the relevance of sub-atomic quantification in natural language. In particular, I will focus on the distribution and semantic properties of distinct types of partitives some of which have not received much attention in the linguistic literature oriented towards the study of meaning. Specifically, I will investigate constructions involving proportional expressions such as *part* and *half* in order to reveal some non-trivial facts about partitivity. I will provide novel data indicating that singulars and plurals share one unified parthood relation. Furthermore, I will show that distinct part-whole structures result from the fact that certain entities are conceptualized as cohesive individuals whereas others are not. Crucially, the distinction turns out to be relevant from the perspective of countability. In particular, partitive constructions indicate that cardinal numerals select only for predicates denoting entities conceptualized as integrated wholes.<sup>1</sup>

### 2.1 Partitives

As already mentioned in the introduction, the part-whole relation is an important notion in human cognition and natural language. For instance, large parts of the lexicon are structured by means of meronymy, i.e., the relation that holds between expressions denoting entities conceptualized as whole objects (holonyms) and expressions denoting parts of such wholes (meronyms), e.g., the relationship between *cat* and *tail*. However, the relevance of partitivity in natural language is not restricted to lexical associations but it is also reflected in grammar. As noticed by Hoeksema (1996), its importance for the syntax-semantics interface is

---

<sup>1</sup>I would like to sincerely thank my informants with whom I have consulted the structures and meanings of particular constructions. Specifically, many thanks to Muriel Assmann, Katie Fraser, Berit Gehrke, Nina Haslinger, Aitor Lizardi Ituarte, Tetiana Kamyshanova, Radvan Markus, Erlinde Meertens, Lilla Pintér, Martin Prinzhorn, Adam Przepiórkowski, Viola Schmitt, Hana Strachoňová, Yasutada Sudo, Balázs Surányi, Peter Sutton, and Guy Tabachnick. Finally, I am deeply grateful to Enrico Flor and Chiara Masnovo for their judgments and the discussion of the Italian data. Their introspective reports and insightful comments were of invaluable help for the relevant parts of this chapter.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

corroborated by the fact that the link between a whole and its parts can support definite descriptions, as witnessed in (1).

- (1) English (Hoeksema 1996: p. 1)  
I still have a jar of gooseberry jam, but I cannot get the lid off.

There are many ways in which the part-whole relation can be expressed syntactically and languages differ in what means they employ in order to indicate it. Sometimes even though a particular construction lacks a formal exponent expressing partitivity, the relation between the elements is well understood. For example, English compounds lack morphological means to express partitivity, but often the part-whole relation between the referents of the first stem and the referents of the second stem is semantically transparent and can be readily retrieved, as in (2) (Hoeksema 1996).

- (2) English (Hoeksema 1996: p. 1)
- a. chicken-feet
  - b. church-door
  - c. mountain-top

In this book, however, I will restrict my focus to the structure that expresses the part-whole relation formally, i.e. the so-called partitive construction. The partitive is an expression of natural language that indicates partialness. In English, nominal partitives commonly take the form as in (3).<sup>2</sup>

- (3) Partitive structure (Martí i Girbau 2010)
- a. [<sub>DP</sub> Det [<sub>PP</sub> of [<sub>DP</sub> Det NP]]]
  - b. [three [of [my friends]]]

The upstairs determiner is a quantifier, whereas the preposition *of* links it with the larger whole denoted by its complement, i.e., the embedded definite or specific DP, from which it is partitioned. A similar frame is found in many other Germanic languages as well as in Romance, as demonstrated in (4) and (5).

---

<sup>2</sup>The structure in (3) is just one possible analysis. In fact, there are several different proposals concerning the syntax of partitives. For instance Ionin et al. (2006) argue for different structures for distinct types of partitives, see (i). However, for the most part I will ignore all the syntactic intricacies here.

- (i) English (Ionin et al. 2006)
- a. [<sub>NP</sub> half [<sub>PP</sub> of [<sub>DP</sub> these [<sub>NP</sub> eight apples]]]]
  - b. [<sub>NP</sub> two [<sub>NP</sub> ~~apple~~ [<sub>PP</sub> of [<sub>DP</sub> these [<sub>NP</sub> eight apples]]]]]



- (4) Dutch  
drie van mijn vrienden  
three of my friends
- (5) French  
trois de mes amis  
three of my friends

On the other hand, in languages such as Estonian and Finnish, a special partitive case can be used instead of the prepositional element, see (6) (de Hoop 2003), whereas, e.g., German and many Slavic languages can express the partitive with the genitive (the so-called partitive genitive), see (7) (see, e.g., Hoening 1997 for German and Valkova 1999; Rutkowski 2007 for Slavic).<sup>3</sup>

- (6) Finnish (de Hoop 2003)  
Anne joi maitoa.  
Anne drank milk.PART  
'Anne drank (some) milk.'
- (7) Russian  
Oleg vypil polovinu moloka.  
Oleg drank half milk.GEN  
'Oleg drank half the milk.'

In terms of meaning, the partitive picks out a part from a whole. The part is associated with the upstairs quantifier, whereas the whole is denoted by the embedded DP and can be either a singular entity or a plurality (e.g., Jackendoff 1977; Selkirk 1977; Ladusaw 1982). Thus, partitives can denote parts of individuals, see (8a), as well as subsets of larger sets of individuals, see (8b), and portions of substances, see (8c).

- (8) English
- a. most of the apple
  - b. most of the apples
  - c. most of the juice

---

<sup>3</sup>Notice, however, that Finnish also has another construction in which the embedded noun appears in the elative case, as in (i). For more examples and discussion, see Anttila & Fong (2000).

(i) Finnish (Karlsson 1999: p. 111)  
viisi nais-i-sta  
five woman-PL-ELA  
'five of the women'

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

An important observation concerning partitive constructions is that not every kind of DP can be embedded within the structure. A restriction called the Partitive Constraint excludes certain expressions from this position (e.g., Jackendoff 1977; Selkirk 1977; Barwise & Cooper 1981; Ladusaw 1982). In particular, its early formulations posited that only definites can appear in the downstairs DP.<sup>4</sup> Later approaches redefined the restriction in semantic terms postulating that the embedded DP needs to denote an entity, i.e., it needs to be either definite or specific (de Hoop 1997).

Before I begin a detailed discussion of the relationship between partitivity and countability it will be useful to make several terminological remarks. First, I will use the terms *PART-WORDS* and *HALF-WORDS* to refer to expressions such as English *part* and *half*, respectively. Despite significant syntactic differences between those lexical items suggesting more fine-grained categorial distinctions, they both can appear in the upstairs Det position in partitives like (8a), on a par with quantifiers such as *most* and *all*. From a cross-linguistic perspective different types of half-words often fall into different syntactic categories. For instance, German *Hälfte* ‘half<sub>1</sub>’ appears to have nominal properties, whereas *halb* ‘half<sub>2</sub>’ is a standard adjective. As demonstrated in (9a)–(9c), while *Hälfte* has a gender value and either assigns the genitive case or combines with the prepositional *von*-phrase assigning the dative (Durrell 1996; see also Hoeing 1997; Asbury 2007 for the discussion of the structures), *halb* agrees with the modified nouns.

### (9) German

- a. eine Hälfte des Apfels  
a.NOM.SG.F half<sub>1</sub>.NOM.F the.GEN.SG.M apple.GEN.M  
‘a half of the apple’
- b. eine Hälfte vom Apfel  
a.NOM.SG.F half<sub>1</sub>.NOM.F of.the.DAT.SG.M apple.DAT.M  
‘a half of the apple’
- c. ein halber Apfel  
a.NOM.SG.M half<sub>2</sub>.NOM.M apple.NOM.M  
‘half an apple’

Since this book is primarily concerned with semantic aspects of partitivity, I take the terms *part-word* and *half-word* introduced above to refer to expressions explicitly designating a part of a whole. Therefore, despite the different syntactic

---

<sup>4</sup>See Abbott (1996) for a discussion and a proposal of an analysis not involving the Partitive Constraint.

structures expressions such as *Hälfte* and *halb* occur in, I will treat them as semantically related linguistic objects. The general term PARTITIVE WORDS will be used to cover part-words and half-words as well as different types of proportional quantifiers that can be found in partitives.<sup>5</sup>

Another issue concerns the grammatical number of the downstairs DP in the partitive construction. There is a tradition in the literature on partitivity to distinguish between partitive expressions referring to a portion of a singular entity and those referring to a subset of a set of individuals. The former are often called mass partitives and the latter group partitives (e.g., Hoeksema 1996; Abbott 1996). However, despite this tradition I will follow de Hoop (1997; 2003) and refer to phrases such as (8a) as ENTITY PARTITIVES and to phrases such as (8b) as SET PARTITIVES.<sup>6</sup> Typically, entity partitives involve a singular term in the embedded DP, whereas set partitives comprise a quantifier combining with a plural DP. I will restrict the use of the term MASS PARTITIVES to constructions such as (8c) where the upstairs determiner combines with the *of*-phrase taking a mass term as its complement. The main reason is that I found the terms mass and group partitives confusing in that they suggest a correspondence with the mass/count distinction, contrary to fact (see also Martí i Girbau 2010).

Furthermore, I will refer to constructions involving an overt part-word such as those in (10a) as EXPLICIT PARTITIVES. On the other hand, I will call phrases containing proportional quantifiers such as *most* or *half*, see (10b), PROPORTIONAL PARTITIVES, whereas those involving fractions, see (10c), will be referred to as FRACTION PARTITIVES.

- (10) English
- a. part of the apple
  - b. half of the apple
  - c. two thirds of the apple

Finally, I will use the terms COUNT EXPLICIT PARTITIVES and COUNT PROPORTIONAL PARTITIVES to refer to phrases such as (11a) and (11b), respectively, where the partitive word is modified by the cardinal numeral. These should not be confused with COUNT PARTITIVES, the term sometimes used for phrases such as (11c) (e.g., Ionin et al. 2006).<sup>7</sup>

<sup>5</sup>The term more or less corresponds to what Quirk et al. (1985: p. 249) call general partitive nouns excluding measure terms.

<sup>6</sup>Yet another term is used by Korat (2016) to refer to partitives involving regular count singular nouns as well as collective nouns, namely singular quantified terms. However, since I do not focus on group nouns in this book, I will ignore the potential distinction.

<sup>7</sup>Quirk et al. (1985: p. 249) call them plural partitives.

## 2 *Partitives and part-whole structures*

- (11) English
- a. two parts of the apple
  - b. two halves of the apple
  - c. two of the apples

The next sections of this chapter will be dedicated to the interaction between cardinal numerals and partitives involving different types of expressions both in the upstairs DP head as well as in the embedded DP.

### 2.2 The analogy

At least since Link (1983) it is often assumed that it is necessary to distinguish between two distinct yet corresponding part-whole structures employed in natural language, namely one corresponding to the material constitution of objects and one capturing collections of distinct objects. Hence, the material part relation provides ordering for structures representing the relationship between portions of matter and individuals made out of that matter, whereas the individual part relation concerns particular objects and sums thereof. The distinction is motivated by the fact that things and stuff they consist of are apparently differentiated in natural language. The famous example concerns two golden rings. If they were forged recently out of some old Egyptian gold, then it is definitely true to state that the rings are new although the gold is old.

However, there are some data that might be interpreted as suggesting that at least in some expressions natural language semantics does not distinguish between the two distinct part relations postulated by Link (1983) and instead employs a unified part-whole structure for different types of nominal expressions. Moltmann (1997; 1998) observes an analogy between partitives involving singular and plural terms. For instance, in German the same expression *Teil* ‘part’ can be used both in entity and set partitive constructions in order to quantify over parts of singular individuals and subsets of groups of individuals, see (12)–(13).<sup>8</sup>

---

<sup>8</sup>In fact, Moltmann (1997; 1998) provides English examples to argue for her point, see (i). However, since the reported felicity judgments for English contrast with Moltmann’s claim (see Schwarzschild 1996), I use the uncontroversial German examples in (12)–(13) instead.

- (i) English (Moltmann 1997: p. 11)
- a. {all of / some of / part of} the book
  - b. {all of / some of / part of} the wine
  - c. {all of / some of / part of} the books

- (12) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. ein Teil des Apfels  
a part the.GEN apple.GEN  
'(a) part of the apple'
  - b. ein Teil der Äpfel  
a part the.GEN apples.GEN  
'some of the apples'
- (13) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. ein Teil vom Apfel  
a part of.the.DAT apple.DAT  
'(a) part of the apple'
  - b. ein Teil von den Äpfeln  
a part of the.DAT apples.DAT  
'some of the apples'

In particular, when used in the entity partitive, *Teil* quantifies over material parts of singular objects, i.e., functional parts or portions of a substance making up the whole individual. For instance, (12a) and (13a) denote a set of parts of the relevant apple. It could be used to refer, e.g., to the stem end of the apple in question or its blossom end as well as its pulp or pips. On the other hand, when *Teil* takes the plural DP as its complement, it quantifies over whole individuals, e.g., (12b) and (13b) make reference to a part of a particular collection, i.e., a subset of the apples rather than to a set of arbitrary parts of singular apples. For instance, given a situation in which there are three relevant apples  $a_1$ ,  $a_2$ , and  $a_3$ , (12b) and (13b) could not be used to refer to a set involving the stem end of  $a_1$  and a pip of  $a_2$ . Instead, it would be true of a set of some of the apples in question, e.g., a set comprising  $a_1$  and  $a_2$ .

Notice that in German there is yet another interpretation an expression such as (12b) and (13b) can get. For instance, consider the two possible readings of (14).

- (14) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- Ein kleiner Teil von den zehn Äpfeln ist schimmelig.  
a small part of the.DAT ten apples.DAT is moldy  
'A minority of the ten apples are moldy.' or  
'A small part of each of the ten apples is moldy.'

The sentence in (14) would definitely be true in a situation where there are ten apples and two of them are completely moldy. Yet, there is also a different scenario where uttering (14) would be truthful, namely if there were ten apples and

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

each apple had a small patch of mold. At first blush, this behavior might appear to contradict what I claimed in the previous paragraph. However, there are good reasons to assume that this reading is independent from the two discussed above and results from a silent distributivity operator. Notice that the sentence would be judged false in a scenario where there were ten apples seven of which had a small patch of mold, whereas the others were not moldy. This shows that German explicit set partitives such as (13b) have another interpretation in addition to the subset reading discussed above. Crucially, this interpretation does not involve quantification over arbitrary material parts. Rather, the definite seems to have a distributive interpretation with wide scope over the indefinite. Though it was important to draw the distinction between the two possible interpretations, I will ignore this additional distributive reading in the remaining part of this chapter.<sup>9</sup>

Thus, it appears that the same expression can form either an entity partitive or a set partitive depending on the number value on its complement. This phenomenon seems intriguing and might imply a puzzle with respect to a proper treatment of German explicit partitives. But is it just a German idiosyncrasy? Or does the data in (12)–(13) actually reveal something deep about the way the human mind conceptualizes the difference between objects and collections of objects? And if so, to what extent is such a difference relevant for the semantic distinction between singularities and pluralities outside the domain of partitivity? I believe that, if approached in a systematic manner, an attempt to provide answers to these questions can shed new light on what it means to be an individuated entity and, as we will see, what it means to be countable.

Prima facie, it seems that there are two ways in which one could account for the phenomenon in question. A radical solution is to conclude that the data in (12)–(13) suggest a unified parthood structure for both singular and plural individuals across the board (Moltmann 1997; 1998). In other words, it is to posit that singularities and pluralities are in fact much less distinct than standardly assumed. On such an approach, the relationship between an object and its parts would be the same relationship as the one holding between a collection of objects and objects being part of that collection. Another way to explain the analogy would be to assume that partitive expressions such as *Teil* employ a derived notion of parthood which generalizes over two distinct yet corresponding part-structures (Barker 1998; Ionin et al. 2006).

---

<sup>9</sup>In fact, this interpretation might turn out to be a German idiosyncrasy since it seems to be unavailable in some other languages, e.g., in Polish. Though it is an interesting issue on its own, which would require a systematic cross-linguistic survey, this book is about something different.

In the next section, I will present novel evidence indicating the source of the analogy in question. I will argue that the data to be examined suggests non-trivial implications for the part-whole structures that singular and plural expressions employ.

### 2.2.1 Ambiguity or indeterminacy

The data we began with in (12)–(13) might be interpreted as suggesting that both singulars and plurals employ a unified part-whole structure. Another way of looking at the evidence involves preserving distinct mereologies and at the same time postulating that partitive words are either ambiguous between two different meanings or that they encode a generalized parthood relation which enables them to operate on both part-whole structures. A question I will attempt to tackle in this section concerns the one as to what extent there is an empirical basis broad enough to provide a solid argument in favor of one of the approaches. In particular, I will propose an independent test whose results provide evidence against the ambiguity account.

A standard diagnostic to detect ambiguity is the so-called zeugma test (Lasersohn 1995; see also Zwicky et al. 1975). The test works as follows. The examined lexical item is put in a syntactic configuration with a coordination structure. If the expression in question is in fact ambiguous, then it must take the same interpretation with respect to both conjuncts. Otherwise the zeugma effect arises, i.e., the sentence takes on the flavor of a joke. On the other hand, if the tested item is unspecific or indeterminate, it can take different interpretations with respect to different conjuncts without any hilarious effect.

To illustrate this, let us consider the two examples in (15).

- (15) English (Lasersohn 1995: p. 94; adapted)
- a. John rented a car and a house.
  - b. John described a car and a house.

The verb *rent* must have the same interpretation with respect to both DPs, *a car* and *a house*, i.e., it is either the case that John owned a car and a house and he rented them out to someone, or it is the case that John rented a car and a house from someone. But crucially it cannot be the case that John rented out a car and rented a house as a tenant or vice versa. Therefore, since *rent* must have the same interpretation with respect to the DPs *a car* and *a house*, it is ambiguous between the two described readings. On the other hand, the verb *describe* in (15b) is indeterminate with respect to whether describing is done in

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

speech or in writing. Since it is perfectly natural to understand the sentence in a way implying that John described a car in speech, whereas he described a house in writing, *describe* is not ambiguous but rather merely unspecific.

The zeugma test has been used commonly in the study of natural language semantics including the research on pluralities (see, e.g., Dowty 1987; Lasersohn 1995; Nouwen 2016).<sup>10</sup> Let us then examine whether part-words are ambiguous between two different readings giving rise to a part-of-a-singularity reading in entity partitives, on the one hand, and to a part-of-a-singularity reading in set partitives, on the other, or, alternatively, they are merely indeterminate in this respect. To this end, let us first consider the well-formed and felicitous German sentences in (16).

- (16) German (Viola Schmitt, Martin Prinzhorn, p.c.)
- a. Ein Teil des Apfels und der Birne sind verfault.  
a part the.GEN apple.GEN and the.GEN pear.GEN are rotten  
'Part of the apple and the pear got spoiled.'
  - b. Ein Teil der Birnen und der Äpfel sind verfault.  
a part the.GEN pears.GEN and the.GEN apples.GEN are rotten  
'Some of the pears and the apples got spoiled.'

In the explicit entity partitive in (16a) the partitive word *Teil* 'part' takes a structure involving coordination of two singular DPs as a complement. As witnessed by the translation, the meaning of the sentence involves material partitivity, i.e., quantification over parts of the relevant singular objects, namely the apple and the pear. In other words, (16a) would be true if part of the apple and part of the pear got spoiled. On the other hand, *Teil* in (16b) combines with a conjoined phrase involving two plural conjuncts. In this case, *Teil* quantifies over parts of pluralities, i.e., the whole sentence designates that a subset of the apples and a subset of the pears got spoiled.

Now let us consider the interaction between *Teil* and a coordinate structure conjoining a singular and a plural DP, as in (17).

- (17) German (Viola Schmitt, Martin Prinzhorn, p.c.)
- a. Ein Teil des Apfels und der Birnen sind verfault.  
a part the.GEN apple.GEN and the.GEN pears.GEN are rotten  
'Part of the apple and some of the pears got spoiled.'

---

<sup>10</sup>However, Lasersohn (1995: p. 95) points out that in fact the zeugma test does not detect ambiguity, but rather it reveals whether a particular item always makes the same contribution to the proposition. I will leave the issue as to whether Lasersohn's objection stands open though.



- b. Ein Teil der Birnen und des Apfels sind verfault.  
 a part the.GEN pears.GEN and the.GEN apple.GEN are rotten  
 ‘Some of the pears and part of the apple got spoiled.’

The assumption behind (17) is that if *Teil* were merely indeterminate with respect to a part-of-a-singularity and part-of-a-plurality reading, it should be able to take the former interpretation with respect to the first conjunct and the latter interpretation with respect to the second conjunct in (17a) and vice versa in (17b). On the other hand, if it were ambiguous between two different meanings such behavior should not be possible. Interestingly, *Teil* not only can combine felicitously with a construction involving coordination of a singular and plural DP, but also irrespective of the linear order of the conjuncts, see (17a) and (17b), it can take simultaneously two different readings.

The very same effect arises in (18), where one of the conjuncts is a singulare tantum noun, specifically the object mass noun *Geschirr* ‘tableware’ can refer either to one piece of tableware or to a collection thereof.

- (18) German (Viola Schmitt, Martin Prinzhorn, p.c.)
- a. Ein Teil des Geschirrs und des Spülbeckens sind  
 a part the.GEN tableware.GEN and the.GEN sink.GEN are  
 verrostet.  
 rusted  
 ‘Some of the tableware and part of the kitchen sink got rusted.’
- b. Ein Teil des Spülbeckens und des Geschirrs sind  
 a part the.GEN sink.GEN and the.GEN tableware.GEN are  
 verrostet.  
 rusted  
 ‘Part of the kitchen sink and some of the tableware got rusted.’

Both (18a) and (18b) are felicitous and they both can get the intended meaning, i.e., *Teil* can simultaneously quantify over material parts of the kitchen sink and over individual items making up the tableware. Hence, the mismatch between the values of grammatical number on conjunct nominals in (17) definitely does not play a role here and the effect seems to be purely semantic.

At this point, a conclusion can be drawn. Given the results of the zeugma test, I deduce that part-words in German are not ambiguous between two different interpretations. Rather, they are semantically underspecified in the sense that their meaning is general enough to cover configurations involving both material and individual parthood. As a result a part-of-a-singularity understanding is derived in entity partitives whereas a part-of-a-plurality understanding arises in set partitives.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

Having identified the source of the analogy between entity and set partitives, let us now examine to what extent it is valid from a wider cross-linguistic perspective.

### 2.2.2 Entity and set partitives across languages

For some reason, the analogy between explicit entity and set partitives does not hold in English. As observed by Schwarzschild (1996: pp. 165–166), there is a contrast between (19a) and (19c), on the one hand, and (19b), on the other.

- (19) English (Schwarzschild 1996)
- a. Part of the car was painted.
  - b. #Part of the boys were in Texas.
  - c. Part of the group was in Texas.

The reason why (19b) is infelicitous is that English allows only for explicit entity partitives of the form in (20a) whereas explicit set partitives such as (20b) are not well-formed expressions in the language. In order to refer to a subset of the relevant entities, one needs to use a partitive construction such as (20c) where the existential quantifier *some* is employed as the upstairs determiner.<sup>11</sup>

- (20) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)
- a. part of the apple
  - b. #part of the apples
  - c. some of the apples

If English were like German, it would be possible to use the sentence in (19b) to describe a situation where some of the boys were in Texas. But the sentence is odd. Schwarzschild concludes that since English *part of* cannot co-occur with count plurals, it selects for singularity-denoting complements exclusively.

Schwarzschild examines explicit entity and set partitives for a particular reason. On the basis of the contrast between (19b) and (19c) and other facts concerning predicate non-sharing, he argues against analyses positing that group nouns denote impure atoms, i.e., entities that have complex internal structure but at the same time differ from mere sums of individuals in that they behave as if they were units in their own right.<sup>12</sup> However, what is interesting from the perspective of this study are some possible consequences of the data in (19) and (20) for the ontology encoded in that part of natural language semantics that

---

<sup>11</sup>Similar contrasts were also reported by Chierchia (2010).

<sup>12</sup>See also de Vries (2015) for a different approach building on the same conclusion.

deals with parthood. Specifically, what is implied by the argument put forward by Schwarzschild is that singularities and pluralities involve two distinct part-whole structures, or, in other words, there is a fundamental difference between how we conceptualize the relationship between material parts of an object and that object, on the one hand, and members of a set of objects and that set, on the other. In fact, that is the received view in theories of parthood (e.g., Link 1983; Simons 1987). On the discussed approach, English *part of* is modeled as an existential ‘pieces’ quantifier. Simplifying a bit, *part of* only takes arguments denoting singularities and ensures that the intersection of the sets of parts of a singularity with the set corresponding to the verbal predicate is non-empty.

Whatever the reason English does not allow for explicit set partitives, i.e., partitives headed by *part* with embedded plural DPs, it is not an ordinary behavior from a typological point of view. On the contrary, the analogy introduced in (12)–(13) holds in multiple languages displaying the singular/plural distinction including at least representatives of such diverse language families as Germanic, Slavic, Romance, Celtic, Finno-Ugric, Semitic, and Basque, see (21)–(28). In all the languages listed below, explicit partitives allow for both singular and plural DPs. For instance, (21a) is an example of the Dutch explicit entity partitive on a par with the English construction in (20a). As in German, see (12b), in order to quantify over parts of a plurality, i.e., particular apples, the same partitive word *deel* ‘part’ can be used with the plural DP, as witnessed by the felicity of (21b).

(21) Dutch (Erlinde Meertens, p.c.)

- a. deel van de appel  
part of the apple  
‘part of the apple’
- b. deel van de appels  
part of the apples  
‘some of the apples’

The same holds in other Indo-European languages such as Polish, see (22), Russian, see (23), Italian, see (24), Brazilian Portuguese, see (25), and Irish, see (26).

(22) Polish

- a. część jabłka  
part apple.GEN  
‘part of the apple’
- b. część jabłek  
part apples.GEN  
‘some of the apples’

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

- (23) Russian (Tetiana Kamyshanova, p.c.)
- a. čast' jabloka  
part apple.GEN  
'part of the apple'
  - b. čast' jablok  
part apples.GEN  
'some of the apples'
- (24) Italian (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 186; adapted)
- a. parte del muro  
part of.the wall  
'three parts of the wall'
  - b. parte dei muri  
part of.the walls  
'some of the walls'
- (25) Brazilian Portuguese (Muriel Assmann, p.c.)
- a. parte da maçã  
part the apple  
'part of the apple'
  - b. parte das maçãs  
part the apples  
'some of the apples'
- (26) Irish (Radvan Markus, p.c.)
- a. cuid den úll  
part from-the apple  
'part of the apple'
  - b. cuid de na húlla  
part from the apples  
'some of the apples'

Moreover, the same phenomenon can be observed outside the Indo-European language family. For instance, in an agglutinative language such as Hungarian both explicit entity partitives and explicit set partitives are possible, see (27).

- (27) Hungarian (Balázs Surányi, Lilla Pintér, p.c.)
- a. az alma egy része  
the apple a part.POSS  
'part of the apple'

- b. az almák egy része  
 the apples a part.POSS  
 ‘some of the apples’

Similarly, the Hebrew explicit entity partitive construction in (28a) refers to a set of parts of the relevant boy, i.e., his body parts, whereas the phrase with the same *xelek* ‘part’ expression in (28b) would be true of some of the boys.

(28) Hebrew (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 184; adapted)

- a. xelek me-ha-baxur  
 part from-the-boy  
 ‘part of the boy’  
 b. xelek me-ha-baxur-im  
 part from-the-boy-s  
 ‘some of the boys’

Finally, as attested in (29) the analogy holds in the isolate Basque language.<sup>13</sup>

(29) Basque (Aitor Lizardi Ituarte, p.c.)

- a. sagarraren zati bat  
 apple.GEN part a  
 ‘part of the apple’  
 b. sagarren zati bat  
 apples.GEN part a  
 ‘some of the apples’

A similar phenomenon can be observed in partitives involving proportional expressions including half-words and fractions. This time also English does show the discussed pattern. For instance, *half*, *most*, and *two thirds* in (30a), (31a), and (32a), respectively, quantify over parts of a singular entity, i.e., yield a portion of stuff constituting the whole, whereas in (30b), (31b), and (32b) they quantify over parts of a plural individual, i.e., indicate a subset of individuals making up the total plurality.

---

<sup>13</sup>That seems to be the case at least in the Biscayan dialect. The speakers of the Gipuzkoan dialect I questioned disagree. Many thanks to Aitor Lizardi Ituarte, Gillen Martinez de la Hidalga, and Itziar Orbegozo Arrizabalaga for their judgments, and to Katie Fraser for putting me in touch with them.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

- (30) English  
a. half of the apple  
b. half of the apples
- (31) English  
a. most of the apple  
b. most of the apples
- (32) English  
a. two thirds of the apple  
b. two thirds of the apples

Again, this kind of pattern is attested cross-linguistically, as witnessed in the examples from Polish in (33)–(35) and German in (36)–(38). In all the phrases provided below, the proportional quantifier can quantify either over material parts of the relevant object, i.e., apple, or over individual objects, i.e., apples, making up the whole plurality.

- (33) Polish  
a. połowa jabłka  
half apple.GEN  
'half of the apple'  
b. połowa jabłek  
half apples.GEN  
'half of the apples'
- (34) Polish  
a. większość jabłka  
most apple.GEN  
'most of the apple'  
b. większość jabłek  
most apples.GEN  
'most of the apples'
- (35) Polish  
a. dwie trzecie jabłka  
two thirds apple.GEN  
'two thirds of the apple'  
b. dwie trzecie jabłek  
two thirds apples.GEN  
'two thirds of the apples'

- (36) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. eine Hälfte des Apfels  
a half the.GEN apple.GEN  
'(a/one) half of the apple'
  - b. eine Hälfte der Äpfel  
a half the.GEN apples.GEN  
'half of the apples'
- (37) German (Viola Schmitt, p.c.)
- a. ein Großteil des Apfels  
a most the.GEN apple.GEN  
'most of the apple'
  - b. ein Großteil der Äpfel  
a most the.GEN apples.GEN  
'most of the apples'
- (38) German (Viola Schmitt, p.c.)
- a. zwei Drittel des Apfels  
two thirds the.GEN apple.GEN  
'two thirds of the apple'
  - b. zwei Drittel der Äpfel  
two thirds the.GEN apples.GEN  
'two thirds of the apples'

Furthermore, it is well known that in many languages displaying the singular/plural distinction, there are classes of number-neutral nominals referring to individuated discrete entities such as object mass nouns (known also as fake or neat mass nouns; see, e.g., Gillon 1992; Chierchia 1998a; 2010; Barner & Snedeker 2005; Bale & Barner 2009; Landman 2011) and pluralia tantum, i.e., plural nouns without singular counterparts (e.g., Wierzbicka 1988; Corbett 2000; Koptjevskaja-Tamm & Wälchli 2001; Wisniewski 2010; see also Wągiel 2015a; 2017). The examples of the first category in English are *jewelry*, *furniture*, and *mail*, whereas *scissors*, *eyeglasses*, and *pants* fall into the second class. Both types of expressions are systematically ambiguous between a singular and a plural reading, i.e., they can either refer to one individual or to a sum of individuals. For instance, *furniture* can denote either one or many pieces of furniture. Consequently, (39a) would be true if there were, say, one wardrobe in the room as well as if there were several chairs or a chair, a table, and a wardrobe in the room. Similarly, since *scissors* is number-neutral, (39b) would be true either if there were one or many utensils on the table.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

(39) English

- a. There is furniture in the room.
- b. There are scissors on the table.

Interestingly, in many languages partitives including number-neutral nominals such as object mass nouns and pluralia tantum are ambiguous between a part-of-a-singularity and part-of-a-plurality reading. For instance, the Czech phrase in (40a) would be true of a part of a singular shoe in question as well as of a subset of the relevant shoes. Likewise, (40b) can either refer to a part of one utensil or it can mean a subset of the total number of the relevant scissors.

(40) Czech (Hana Strachoňová, p.c.)

- a. část obuvi  
part footwear.GEN  
'part of the footwear' or  
'some of the footwear'
  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading
- b. část nůžek  
part scissors.GEN  
'part of the scissors' or  
'some of the scissors'
  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading

The same ambiguity appears in proportional partitives such as (41a) and (41b).

(41) Czech (Hana Strachoňová, p.c.)

- a. polovina obuvi  
half footwear.GEN  
'half of the footwear'
  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading
- b. polovina nůžek  
half scissors.GEN  
'half of the scissors'
  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading



A similar effect is reported to appear in some constructions in languages with general number such as Japanese, as originally observed for proportional partitives by Sauerland & Yatsushiro (2004). For instance, (42) would be true both in a scenario where John read a number of books which is greater than a half of the total number of books and in a scenario where John read more than a half of one book.

- (42) Japanese (based on Sauerland & Yatsushiro 2004; adapted)
- John-wa hotondo hon-o yomi-oeta.  
 John-TOP most book-ACC read-finished  
 ‘John finished reading most of the books.’ or  
 ‘John finished reading most parts of the book(s).’
- a. part-of-a-singularity reading
  - b. part-of-a-plurality reading

Likewise, Watanabe (2013; 2017) discusses pairs of constructions involving both explicit and proportional partitives such as those provided in (43)–(45). Different linearizations in the doublets correlate with different interpretations. Constructions in which partitive words follow nominals are ambiguous between a part-of-a-singularity and a part-of-a-plurality reading, whereas sentences with partitive words preceding the noun unambiguously refer to collections of objects. In particular, (43a) can either mean that a part of a single apple in question is rotten or that a subset of all the relevant apples is rotten.<sup>14</sup>

- (43) Japanese (Watanabe 2017; adapted)
- a. Ringo-no ichibu-ga kusatteiru.  
 apple-GEN part-NOM is.rotten  
 ‘Part of the apple is rotten.’ or  
 ‘Some of the apples are rotten.’  
 (i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading
  - b. Ichibu-no ringo-ga kusatteiru.  
 part-LNK apple-NOM is.rotten  
 ‘Some of the apples are rotten.’  
 (i) #part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading

---

<sup>14</sup>As explained in §1.3.1, the use of the symbol # in (43b-i) means that this reading is unavailable.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

Similarly, (44a) and (45a) mean that either more than half of one apple is rotten or that the number of rotten apples exceeds a half of the total number. On the other hand, the partitives with the reversed order in the sentences in (43b), (44b), and (45b) do not give rise to such an ambiguity and can only make reference to subsets of a larger set, i.e., some of the apples and most of the apples, respectively.

- (44) Japanese (Watanabe 2017; adapted)
- a. Ringo-no hotondo-ga kusatteiru.  
apple-GEN most-NOM is.rotten  
'Most of the apple is rotten.' or  
'Most of the apples are rotten.'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading
  - b. Hotondo-no ringo-ga kusatteiru.  
most-LNK apple-NOM is.rotten  
'Most of the apples are rotten.'
    - (i) #part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading
- (45) Japanese (Watanabe 2017; adapted)
- a. Ringo-no dai-bubun-ga kusatteiru.  
apple-GEN large-part-NOM is.rotten  
'Most of the apple is rotten.' or  
'Most of the apples are rotten.'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading
  - b. dai-bubun-no ringo-ga kusatteiru.  
large-part-LNK apple-NOM is.rotten  
'Most of the apples are rotten.'
    - (i) #part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading

The cross-linguistic generalization based on the data discussed above is that the pattern in which the same partitive word can appear in both entity and set partitives is very common. This fact in turn suggests that across languages singulars and plurals generally employ a unified part-whole structure. Importantly, the ability of singular and plural DPs to be coordinated within a single partitive construction examined in the previous section, recall (17)–(18), is not a German idiosyncrasy but is also attested in other languages. For instance, Polish allows for sentences such as (46), where the genitive singular form *arbuza* 'of the water-

melon' is conjoined with the genitive plural *borówek* 'of the blueberries' inside the partitive construction headed by *część* 'part'.<sup>15</sup>

- (46) Polish  
 Jaś zjadł część arbuza i borówek.  
 Jaś ate part.ACC watermelon.GEN and blueberries.GEN  
 'Jaś ate a part of the watermelon and some of the blueberries.'

As witnessed by the translation above, (46) would be true if Jaś ate a material part of a single watermelon and a subset of the relevant set of blueberries. Therefore, the part-word *część* can simultaneously access the singular and the plural part-whole structure.<sup>16</sup>

The intuition described above is further corroborated by a number of naturally occurring examples attested in the National Corpus of Polish (NCP) (Przepiórkowski et al. 2012) such as those provided in (47).<sup>17</sup>

- (47) Polish (NCP)
- a. Spłonęła część mebli i podłogi, sprzęt  
 burnt.down part furniture.GEN.PL and floor.GEN equipment  
 RTV i drzwi.  
 audio/video and door  
 'Some of the furniture and part of the floor burnt down as well as audio and video devices and the door.'
  - b. [...] odrestaurowano część pomieszczeń i elewacji [...]  
 renovate.IMPRS part.ACC rooms.GEN and facade.GEN  
 '[...] some of the rooms and a part of the facade were renovated [...]
  - c. Przywódca USA odwiedził [...] zagrożone tereny w  
 leader USA visited endangered.ACC regions.ACC in  
 odpowiedzi na zarzuty części mediów i  
 response.LOC on accusations.ACC part.GEN media.GEN and

<sup>15</sup>Notice, however, that it is not always possible. For instance, an exact translation of the sentences in (17) discussed in the previous section would be considered awkward. I hypothesize that the reason for the infelicity of such examples has to do with the fact that these are conjoined NPs rather than DPs. Assuming that the silent determiner sits above the coordinate structure would explain why such partitives are impossible since DP-internal coordination does not allow for mixing of singulars and plurals (Heycock & Zamparelli 2003).

<sup>16</sup>I would like to thank Adam Przepiórkowski for sharing his observations and the discussion of the Polish data.

<sup>17</sup>The National Corpus of Polish (<http://nkjp.pl/>) is a representative digital corpus of the contemporary Polish language consisting of over 1.5 billion words with a balanced subcorpus of 300-million tokens.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

opinii publicznej [...], że jego reakcja jest zbyt powolna.  
opinion.GEN public.GEN that his reaction is too slow  
'The leader of the USA visited [...] the endangered regions in reaction to the accusations by some of the media and part of the public opinion [...] that his reaction is too slow.'

In (47a), *mebli* 'of the furniture' is the genitive plural form, whereas *podłogi* 'of the floor' is singular.<sup>18</sup> The entire partitive construction occurs in subject position and is interpreted as referring to some of the relevant furniture items and a part of the floor. The same behavior can be observed in the so-called impersonal construction in (47b) (see, e.g., Lavine 2005; Ruda 2014 for a discussion of Polish impersonal constructions). Here, the part-word *część* is marked with the accusative case and designates simultaneously a part of the plurality of rooms and a part of the floor. Finally, (47c) gives an example of a partitive with a conjoined singular and plural DP within the genitive construction. Again, *część* targets the part-whole structures of both nominals, i.e., the accusations were made by a subset of the media and by a part of the public opinion.

The data discussed above suggest that in many languages part-words are able to simultaneously access elements making up pluralities of individuals as well as subatomic part-whole structures. Of course, there is no reason to believe that part-words are simply reducible to the mereological parthood relation, just as there is no reason to believe that the noun *member* is the natural language exponent of the set-theoretic membership relation (see Champollion 2010; 2017). However, it is possible that such expressions do employ a notion of parthood which might be modeled in terms of some primitive formal relation. For theories that sort domains, and thus distinguish strictly between individual and material parthood (e.g., Link 1983), the cross-linguistic behavior of partitive words might be seen as problematic to account for in a systematic manner. In contrast, postulating a unified ontology for singular objects and pluralities thereof seems to explain the discussed semantic behavior. However, as will be discussed in Chapter 7, such a treatment may also encounter some problems to account for.

I believe that at this point an empirical conclusion can be drawn. Though the sample of languages and constructions discussed in this section definitely does not exhaust the cross-linguistic diversity in the domain of explicit and proportional partitives (nor was it intended to), I conclude that the pattern involving analogous structures for explicit and proportional entity and set partitives is robust. In multiple typologically and genetically different languages the same partitive word can be used to designate both parts of a single individual and subsets of objects constituting a larger plurality. Given the facts concerning coordination discussed in the previous section, I conclude that the cross-linguistically

<sup>18</sup>Notice that the noun *mebel* '(item of) furniture' is a count noun in Polish.

widespread behavior of partitive words tells us something non-trivial about the way discrete objects and sums thereof are conceptualized. I believe that systematic patterns as described in this section should not be neglected but instead guide development of a proper approach.

The next section will provide a potentially problematic observation concerning different properties of part-words in explicit entity and set partitives.

### 2.2.3 Partitivity and countability

At first blush, the cross-linguistically attested distribution of part-words and other proportional expressions in entity and set partitives as well as their behavior with respect to embedded conjunctions discussed in §2.2.1 and §2.2.2 suggests at least a strong correspondence between subatomic and superatomic part-whole structures. The fact that the very same expression can be used to quantify over parts of a singular individual as well as over parts of a plurality in multiple typologically different and often unrelated languages indicates that an ambiguity approach postulating two different lexical entries for the relevant proportional expressions is quite implausible. To the contrary, it seems that something more essential is happening here, and a more detailed examination of the phenomenon might shed new light on the properties of that component of the language faculty that is dedicated to the interpretation of part-whole relations.

However, Schwarzschild (1996) presents data that might seem to be a counterargument against an approach postulating a semantics operating on a unified part-whole structure that would allow for both quantification over wholes as well as subatomic quantification (see Moltmann 1997; 1998). The crucial observation concerns the fact that part-words in explicit set partitives have different properties than part-words occurring in entity partitive constructions. Specifically, such expressions are countable only if they refer to material parts of a singular object. For instance, consider the contrast between the phrases in (48).

(48) Italian (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 186; adapted)

- a. *tre parti del muro*  
three parts of.the wall  
'three parts of the wall'
- b. *tre parti dei muri*  
three parts of.the walls  
'three parts of the walls'  
(i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
(ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

The count explicit entity partitive in (48a) comprises the Italian singular DP *del muro* ‘of the wall’ combined with the pluralized part-word *parti* ‘parts’ modified by the cardinal numeral *tre* ‘three’. What the phrase can only denote is a set of pluralities consisting of three parts of different individual walls, e.g., a set including a sum of a part of the wall  $w_1$ , a part of the wall  $w_2$ , and a part of the wall  $w_3$ . Crucially though, (48a) cannot refer to parts of a plurality, i.e., three individual walls or three pluralities of walls. To illustrate the distinction, let us assume that there are 8 relevant walls:  $w_1, \dots, w_8$ . In such a scenario, (48b) is not felicitous on the reading where one is counting parts of a plurality, e.g., it would not be true of the set of three walls  $\{w_1, w_2, w_3\}$  or the set of three subsets of the walls  $\{\{w_1, w_2\}, \{w_3, w_4, w_5\}, \{w_6, w_7\}\}$ .

This phenomenon is by no means an Italian idiosyncrasy. To the contrary, it is attested cross-linguistically, as will be demonstrated in the the following examples. For instance, the very same pattern can be found in Brazilian Portuguese. Similar to the interpretation of (48b), the sentence (49b) would be true if, say, a brick of the wall  $w_1$  were red, two bricks of the wall  $w_2$  were red, and three bricks of the wall  $w_3$  were red. However, given the scenario with the eight relevant walls  $w_1, \dots, w_8$  introduced above it would not be considered true if, e.g.,  $w_1, w_2$ , and  $w_3$  were all painted red, nor if three subsets of the walls, e.g.,  $\{w_1, w_2, w_3\}$ ,  $\{w_4, w_5\}$ , and  $\{w_6, w_7\}$ , were all painted red.

- (49) Brazilian Portuguese (Muriel Assmann, p.c.)
- a. Três partes do muro são vermelhas.  
three parts the wall are red  
‘Three parts of the wall are red.’
  - b. Três partes dos muros são vermelhas.  
three parts the walls are red  
‘Three parts of the walls are red.’
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

Such a pattern is also attested outside Romance. For instance, the German sentence in (50a) is true if there are three green spots on the relevant apple. However, (50b) cannot mean that three subsets of the apples are green. Rather, the only possible interpretation of the sentence is that three parts of different apples are green.

- (50) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. Drei Teile des Apfels sind grün.  
three parts the.GEN apple.GEN are green  
‘Three parts of the apple are green.’

- b. Drei Teile der Äpfel sind grün.  
 three parts the.GEN apples.GEN are green  
 ‘Three parts of the apples are green.’  
 (i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

A similar effect is found in Slavic, e.g., (51) illustrates the relevant contrast in Polish.<sup>19</sup> Again, the count explicit set partitive does not quantify over sub-pluralities of the apples in question, but rather over parts of individual apples. The sentence in (51b) does not get a part-of-a-plurality interpretation.<sup>20</sup>

(51) Polish

- a. Trzy części jabłka są zielone.  
 three parts apple.GEN are green  
 ‘Three parts of the apple are green.’  
 b. Trzy części jabłek są zielone.  
 three parts apples.GEN are green  
 ‘Three parts of the apples are green.’  
 (i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

Furthermore, there are two distinct constructions in Japanese that display the same pattern, see (52). Despite the fact that the noun *ringo* ‘apple’ is number-neutral and as such it can either refer to a single apple or to a collection of fruit, the count explicit partitive in (52a) where the part-word *bubun* is modified by a numeral forces a part-of-a-singularity reading.<sup>21</sup> The sentence simply cannot mean that three different subsets of whole apples are damaged. Similarly, the use of the classifier construction involving a numeral and the classifier *kasyo* in order to quantify over parts of referents of a number-neutral noun excludes a part-of-a-plurality reading. As witnessed in (52b), the only possible interpretation involves subatomic quantification, i.e., three parts of a singularity are damaged.

<sup>19</sup>As pointed out by a reviewer, for some speakers of Polish the part-word *część* ‘part’ is ambiguous between a noun and a numeral, which may affect the availability of certain readings discussed in this section. However, in this book I examine a variety of Polish in which there is no such ambiguity.

<sup>20</sup>Notice that there is yet another reading of modified set partitives with DPs denoting food terms in Polish. It involves the count-mass shift and indicates a fraction of volume, e.g., three-fourths of the total volume of the apples. I ignore this interpretation here, but I will return to it in §3.3.

<sup>21</sup>Again, for the sake of simplicity I ignore here the attested distributive reading on which there are multiple apples and three parts of each of them are damaged.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

- (52) Japanese (Yasutada Sudo, p.c.)
- a. Ringo-no mit-tsu-no bubun-ga itandairu.  
apple-GEN three-CLF-GEN part-NOM damaged  
'Three parts of the apple are damaged.'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading
  - b. Ringo-no san-kasyo-ga itandairu.  
apple-GEN three-CLF-NOM damaged  
'Three parts of the apple are damaged.'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

The effect is even stronger if we consider partitives with animate DPs. For instance, notice the contrast between (53a) and (53b) in Italian. The first is felicitous if a subset of the relevant boys were in Texas. However, the second sentence implies an organ trafficking context since the only possible interpretation one can get is that three body parts belonging to the boys were in Texas.

- (53) Italian (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 186; adapted)
- a. Parte dei ragazzi erano in Texas.  
part of.the boys were in Texas  
'Some of the boys were in Texas.'
  - b. #Tre parti dei ragazzi erano in Texas.  
three parts of.the boys were in Texas  
Intended: 'Three subsets of the boys were in Texas.'

A similar effect holds in Polish. While the sentence involving the explicit set partitive in (54a) is perfectly fine and simply means that some of the relevant boys sleep, its modified counterpart in (54b) is nonsensical since it asserts that three body parts sleep. Unless one considers a macabre and/or comical scenario in the spirit of the Addams Family with sentient animate disembodied hands, body parts cannot be experiencers of a sleeping state, and thus the awkwardness of the sentence.

- (54) Polish
- a. Część chłopców śpi.  
part boys.GEN sleeps  
'Some of the boys sleep.'
  - b. #Trzy części chłopców śpią.  
three parts boys.GEN sleep  
Intended: 'Three subsets of the boys sleep.'



Moreover, the phenomenon is not restricted to explicit partitives modified by cardinal numerals but holds also for constructions involving other types of quantifiers. For instance, let us consider the examples in (55) where the referents of proportional partitives are arguments of a predicate involving the total adjective *czysty* ‘clean’ (Yoon 1996; Rotstein & Winter 2004).

- (55) Polish
- a. Połowa zabawek jest czysta.  
half toys.GEN is clean  
‘Half of the toys are clean.’
  - b. Połowa części zabawek jest czysta.  
half parts.GEN toys.GEN is clean  
‘Half of the toy parts are clean.’
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading
  - c. Większość zabawek jest czysta.  
most toys.GEN is clean  
‘Most of the toys are clean.’
  - d. Większość części zabawek jest czysta.  
most parts.GEN toys.GEN is clean  
‘Most of the toy parts are clean.’
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

Analogously to adjectives such as *full*, *flat*, and *closed*, *clean* is an absolute gradable adjective that indicates the maximal degree of the property in question (Unger 1975; Kennedy & McNally 2005). In other words, *clean* is true of an entity that is completely clean or at least the degree of cleanliness falls near the maximal value on the scale. Let us now contemplate the contrast between (55a) and (55c), on the one hand, and (55b) and (55d), on the other. The first two sentences involve regular proportional partitives which quantify over whole individuals. Therefore, if there are six relevant toys  $t_1, \dots, t_6$  in total, (55a) and (55c) would be true if three of the six toys, e.g.,  $t_1, t_2$ , and  $t_3$ , or at least four of the six toys, e.g.,  $t_1, t_2, t_3$ , and  $t_4$ , were clean, respectively. However, when an explicit set partitive is modified by proportional quantifiers such as *połowa* ‘half’ and *większość* ‘most’ the whole phrase does not quantify over wholes anymore but rather over parts of singular individuals. Hence, (55b) and (55d) can be true even if it is not the case that half or most of the toys are clean, respectively. In fact, they might be true if none of the toys is actually clean. Imagine a scenario where there are six teddy

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

bears and one paw of each of them is dirty. It follows that none of the teddy bears is clean though most of their parts are clean.

The same distinction can also be detected in contexts regarding universal quantification. Though in such environments it is hard to distinguish between quantification over parts of singularities and quantification over parts of pluralities, the difference becomes evident if an adverbial modifier such as *almost* is used. Both (56a) and (56b) can be true even if none of the toys is completely clean. Since it is sufficient for an object to be considered dirty if only one of its parts is dirty, one can imagine a scenario where almost every part of the relevant six teddy bears is clean and yet the teddy bears are dirty. And again, modified explicit partitives do not quantify over wholes but rather over parts of wholes despite the fact that the downstairs DP is plural.

- (56) Polish
- a. Prawie każda część zabawek jest czysta.  
 almost every part toys.GEN is clean  
 ‘Almost every toy part is clean.’  
 (i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading
  - b. Prawie wszystkie części zabawek są czyste.  
 almost all parts toys.GEN are clean  
 ‘Almost all toy parts are clean.’  
 (i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

A brief investigation into the cross-linguistic behavior of partitive words suggests that the discussed pattern is robust. Table 2.1 summarizes the observed semantic behavior. The labels “bare” and “count” in the table stand for bare explicit partitives and count explicit partitives, respectively, each of which can include a singular or a plural DP.

Table 2.1: Properties of partitive words in explicit partitives

	SINGULARS		PLURALS	
	bare	count	bare	count
subatomic quantification	✓	✓	*	✓
quantification over wholes	*	*	✓	*

In entity partitives, i.e., constructions involving embedded singular count DPs, both unmodified and modified partitive words quantify over material parts of the relevant entity. On the other hand, the domain of quantification for partitive words in set partitives, i.e., constructions with plural DPs, shifts when they combine with quantifiers. Specifically, although explicit partitives with unmodified partitive words quantify over parts of a plurality, in the presence of a quantifier they are no longer able to count whole individuals and instead operate on the subatomic level. In fact, it appears that there are no count explicit set partitives since apparently no partitives quantify over subsets of the set denoted by the downstairs DP in the first place. Rather, constructions such as (48b) in Italian are a special type of entity partitive with the only difference that material parts do not belong to one object as in (48a) but are distributed onto a plurality of individuals. This is puzzling because it suggests that despite the apparent homophony part-words in explicit entity partitives and count explicit partitives as well as half-words in corresponding proportional partitives are in fact different semantic expressions.

Based on the discussed contrasts in Italian, Schwarzschild (1996) concludes that the uncountability of part-words in set partitives reveals that Italian and English do not disagree with respect to their ontologies. Since English *part of* selects for singularity-denoting complements and cannot co-occur with count plurals, it is modeled as an existential “pieces” quantifier in his system. Presumably Italian *parte* ‘part’ in entity partitives and count explicit partitives, see (24a) and (48a), respectively, is an expression of the same type, whereas *parte* in set partitives, see (24b) is a quantifier of a different sort.

As mentioned before, Schwarzschild’s (1996) argument concerns primarily extensions of group nouns. However, what his novel observation, further corroborated in this section, seems to imply is that in diverse languages singular individuals and pluralities are associated with distinct mereological structures. This can be seen as a valid counterargument against an approach attempting to unify part-whole relations corresponding to extensions of singulars and plurals such as the theory of Moltmann (1997; 1998) if the main empirical motivation concerns the morphological parallelisms in quantification in entity, set, and mass partitives.

However, there are three interrelated issues concerning an approach that posits multiple lexical entries for part-words to explain their non-trivial quantificational behavior. One problem has to do with cross-linguistic correspondences. Since the same part-word is often used both in entity and set partitives cross-linguistically as we saw in the previous section, a homophony would have to be postulated in multiple diverse languages. Though of course it is not a logical

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

impossibility, it seems very implausible that languages in general do not differentiate morphologically between the two expressions in question.

Moreover, the behavior of partitive words with conjoined singular and plural nominals in sentences like (17)–(18) in §2.2.1 provides compelling evidence that at least in some cases their treatment based on ambiguity is unattainable. Rather, one needs to propose an account based on semantic indeterminacy.

The final issue concerns intralinguistic systematicity. As witnessed by the well-formedness of English proportional and fraction partitives such as those in (30)–(32) in §2.2.2, partitive words such as *half* and *most* as well as fractions such as *two thirds* can be used both in entity and set partitives where they get a part-of-a-singularity and part-of-a-plurality reading, respectively. Again, as we saw, such distribution holds cross-linguistically. Interestingly, proportional quantifiers pattern with part-words when modified by numerals. For instance, consider the Polish sentences in (57a) and (57b).<sup>22</sup>

(57) Polish

- a. Dwie połowy muru są czerwone.  
two halves wall.GEN are red  
'Two halves of the wall are red.'
- b. Dwie połowy murów są czerwone.  
two halves walls.GEN are red  
'Two halves of the walls are red.'
  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

In (57a), the count explicit partitive quantifies over material parts of the relevant wall and the sentence is truth-conditionally equivalent with a statement that the whole wall is red. Nonetheless, the count explicit partitive in (57b) does not mean that all the walls are red but rather that among the walls there are two such that they are half red-painted. Despite the downstairs plural DP, the whole phrase is not interpreted as a set partitive and, similarly to (57a), it quantifies over parts of distinct wholes.

Moreover, the data in (58) further corroborate the contrast.

(58) Polish

- a. Obie połowy muru są czerwone.  
both halves wall.GEN are red  
'Both halves of the wall are red.'

---

<sup>22</sup>For some speakers, (57b) is apparently degraded.

- b. #Obie połowy murów są czerwone.  
 both halves walls.GEN are red  
 Intended: ‘Both halves of the walls are red.’

Since the quantifier *both* combines universal quantification with an inference that the cardinality of counted objects equals two (see Barwise & Cooper 1981; Schwarzschild 1996: pp. 139–145), in most cases it can be paraphrased by the definite numeral expression *the two*.<sup>23</sup> Hence, the example in (58a) simply states that the two halves of the wall are red, i.e., that all the halves are red and that there are only two halves. However, when one tries to process (58b) on a non-distributive reading, it gets confusing. Of course, if the modified partitive quantified over whole walls, we would get a straightforward interpretation that all the walls are red, but it is not what the phrase means. Instead, *obie* ‘both’ implies that the total number of halves is two, whereas at the same time the plural DP infers that there are at least two walls, thus at least four halves, which results in a contradictory statement.

Likewise, the contrast in (59) makes a similar point. Since it is only possible for an object to have two halves, the sentence in (59a) is strange because it asserts that the wall has more than two parts forming 50% of its material constitution each. On the other hand, there is nothing awkward about (59b). The sentence does not state that there are more walls than there are walls but rather that among all the walls in question there are three walls half-covered in red paint.

(59) Polish

- a. #Trzy połowy muru są czerwone.  
 three halves wall.GEN are red  
 Intended: ‘Three halves of the wall are red.’
- b. Trzy połowy murów są czerwone.  
 three halves walls.GEN are red  
 ‘Three halves of the walls are red.’

At this point, I conclude that if one pursues an approach explaining the discussed behavior in terms of ambiguity, one is forced to assume that the cross-linguistic as well as intra-linguistic patterns in question are just a remarkable coincidence. Nevertheless, my own view is that systematic parallelism is something that should be approached with serious consideration since it may reveal some deep aspects of the nature of natural language semantics. For instance, the

<sup>23</sup>But see Ladusaw (1982) for discussion of the asymmetry between the two quantifiers in question in partitives.

## 2 *Partitives and part-whole structures*

distinction between collective, distributive, and cumulative understandings of sentences involving semantically plural DPs does hold in multiple environments in multiple languages and the research on its roots has led to many prominent theories in the study of pluralities (e.g., Scha 1981; Link 1983; 1984; Hoeksema 1983; Gillon 1987; Landman 1989a,b; 2000; Schwarzschild 1991; 1996; Schein 1993; Lasersohn 1995; Beck & Sauerland 2000; Winter 2001; Champollion 2010; 2017; Dotlačil 2010; Schmitt 2013; Zweig 2008). I would like to suggest that the discussed behavior of part-words modified by cardinal numerals and other quantifiers can shed new light on the matter of countability. Therefore, I argue that the morphological, syntactic and semantic evidence indicates that the analogy between entity and set partitives is not coincidental but rather it reveals a unified notion of parthood in natural language.

Crucially, there is an intriguing twist concerning count explicit partitives suggesting that the phenomenon discussed in this section results from an independent factor, specifically from the type of entities plural expressions denote. In particular, the extensions of regular plurals comprise arbitrary sums of individuals, i.e., scattered entities which bear no topological commitments with respect to the configuration of the parts of a plurality and it seems that natural language does not consider such entities to be units one could quantify over. But what if there were a language with a plural that similarly to, say, the German plural denotes sums of individuals but in addition asserts a specific spatial relation holding between individuals making up a plurality that guarantees that such a sum has object-like properties? If the claim relating countability with being an integrated entity is on the right track, one would expect that when part-words heading partitives involving such untypical plural expressions are modified by numerals the quantificational behavior of the whole phrase should differ from what we observed so far. The next section will examine the interaction between cardinals and partitives involving so-called irregular plurals in Italian.

### 2.3 Italian irregular plurals

There is a relatively small set of irregular nouns in Italian that display both morpho-syntactic and semantic peculiarities with respect to the singular/plural distinction. These nouns form an inflectional class whose defining characteristic is that it exhibits an idiosyncratic agreement pattern involving a gender shift in the plural. For instance, let us consider a representative of the class, e.g., the masculine noun *dito* ‘finger’. As witnessed by the well-formed phrases in (60), the singular form *dito* is masculine, whereas the plural *dita* not only shows the

irregular inflectional marker *-a* (regular masculine nouns end in *-i* in the plural), but also triggers feminine agreement (Acquaviva 2008: p. 125), as opposed to the regular pattern in (61). In particular, while *zii* ‘uncles’ takes the regular plural marker *-i* and combines with the masculine plural definite article *i* and masculine plural possessive pronoun *tuoi*, *dita* can only be modified by their feminine equivalents, i.e., *le* and *tue* respectively.

(60) Italian (Acquaviva 2008: p. 125)

- a. il tuo dito  
the.SG.M your.SG.M finger.M  
‘your finger’
- b. le tue dita  
the.PL.F your.PL.F fingers.F  
‘your fingers’

(61) Italian (Acquaviva 2008: p. 125)

- a. il tuo zio  
the.SG.M your.SG.M uncle.M  
‘your uncle’
- b. i tuoi zii  
the.SG.M your.SG.M uncles.M  
‘your uncles’

Forms such as *dita* are sometimes referred to in the literature as Italian irregular plurals in *-a* (see Acquaviva 2008 and references therein) or collective plurals, as opposed to regular distributive plurals (see Corbett 2000 and references therein).<sup>24</sup> The morpho-syntax and semantics of such forms have been a subject of intense investigations both within traditional Italo-Romance linguistics (Hall 1956; Brunet 1978: pp. 30–90) as well as formally oriented approaches (Ojeda 1995; Acquaviva 2008; Kučerová 2015). Historically, the class arose as a result of the disappearance of Latin neuters in Italo-Romance (see Löfstedt 1956: pp. 46–51; Lausberg 1963; Rohlf 1968), and thus all the nouns that belong to it are inanimates usually referring to body parts, series of events, measurement units, and mass concepts.<sup>25</sup> In contemporary Italian it is restricted to approximately twenty nouns, but the pattern used to involve many more lexemes in the past

<sup>24</sup>Kučerová (2015) uses the terms relational pattern and atomic pattern.

<sup>25</sup>I will not discuss irregular measure nouns and mass terms here. Though I acknowledge that they might constitute a challenge for a unified semantic interpretation of the class (cf. Ojeda 1995; Acquaviva 2008), this fact does not affect the core observation to be presented in this section.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

(Santangelo 1981). Interestingly, nowhere else in the language is the marker *-a* the exponent of the plural and in at least some cases it seems to be responsible for an additional semantic effect to be discussed below.

The class of Italian irregular nouns can be divided into two groups. The first group consists of nouns that take irregular plural forms exclusively, i.e., do not pluralize in *-i* altogether. Table 2.2 lists some of the examples. Although plural forms such as *uova* ‘eggs’ and *centinaia* ‘hundreds’ are morphologically irregular, they do not seem to display any semantic idiosyncrasy. They simply do what regular plurals do, i.e., refer to pluralities of entities satisfying the property introduced by the nominal stem. In this respect, there seems to be no difference between irregular plurals and regular forms such as *pomodoro* ‘tomato’ ~ *pomodori* ‘tomatoes’ and *miliardo* ‘billion’ ~ *miliardi* ‘billions’. In both cases, the pluralized noun merely denotes a collection of eggs or fruits and a number of hundreds or billions, respectively.

Table 2.2: Italian nouns with irregular plurals exclusively (based on Acquaviva 2008: pp. 126–127)

SINGULAR	REGULAR PLURAL	IRREGULAR PLURAL
uovo ‘egg’	*uovi	uova ‘eggs’
riso ‘laughter’	*risi	risa ‘pearls of laughter’
paio ‘pair’	*piai	paia ‘pairs’
centinaio ‘hundred’	*centinai	centinaia ‘hundreds’
miglio ‘mile’	*migli	miglia ‘miles’

More interestingly, however, there are also a number of nouns with both regular and irregular plural counterparts such as those listed in Table 2.3.<sup>26</sup> Though at least to some extent the effect seems to depend on a particular idiolect and register, in the cases of doublets concurrent irregular feminine *-a* plurals tend to differ from run-of-the-mill masculine *-i* forms in meaning. As witnessed by the translations of irregular forms given in Table 2.3, there is often a sense of collectivity or cohesion in addition to the ordinary plural interpretation. For instance,

<sup>26</sup>Acquaviva (2008: pp. 124–129) introduces a more subtle classification by distinguishing also a class which does have the regular *-i* alternant but it is dialectally restricted, and thus not available for all speakers of Italian, e.g., *lenzuolo* ‘sheet’ ~ %*lenzuoli* ‘sheets’ ~ *lenzuola* ‘sheets (bed linen)’. Moreover, he lists irregular pluralia tantum, i.e., feminine plural *-a* forms with no singular nor regular plural counterparts, e.g., *vestigia* ‘relics’, as well as fossilized irregular plural forms found only in idiomatic expressions. For the sake of clarity of the main argument, I will not discuss all the nuanced morphological, semantic, and sociolinguistic intricacies here, and I refer the reader to Acquaviva’s study for more details.



the irregular form *ossa* ‘bones’ evokes an interpretation that the bones belong together as in a skeleton, whereas regular *ossi* ‘bones’ simply refers to a plurality of unrelated bones, see (62b) (Corbett 2000: p. 153). Likewise, the only way to interpret *mura* ‘walls’ is by picturing a walled complex, e.g., a perimeter of city walls, see (62a) (Acquaviva 2008: p. 150). In both cases, there is a strong intuition that the referents of the irregular plural forms are naturally related and due to this kind of semantic flavor Italian *-a* plurals have been analyzed as collectivizers of a particular sort (Ojeda 1995) or expressions inherently encoding the cohesion of referents (Acquaviva 2008).

Table 2.3: Italian nouns with both regular and irregular plural counterparts

SINGULAR	REGULAR PLURAL	IRREGULAR PLURAL
muro ‘wall’	muri ‘walls’	mura ‘walls (in a complex)’
osso ‘bone’	ossi ‘bones’	ossa ‘bones (in a skeleton)’
filo ‘thread’	fili ‘threads’	fila ‘threads (in a fabric)’
fondamento ‘basis’	fondamenti ‘bases’	fondamenta ‘foundations’
urlo ‘shout’	urli ‘shouts’	urla ‘shouts (in a series)’

Aware of all the subtleties within the class, I will focus my attention only on expressions following the second pattern in Table 2.4 (Acquaviva 2008). Specifically, plural forms of nouns that do not pluralize in *-i* at all get a regular semantic interpretation, i.e., merely refer to pluralities of individuals. On the other hand, the meaning of *-a* plural forms of nouns having doublets differ from the meaning of those in *-i*. In such cases, regular plurals are semantically regular, whereas irregular plurals denote pluralities of objects conceptualized as constituents of a larger cohesive entity.<sup>27</sup>

Table 2.4: Semantic interpretation of Italian plurals

SINGULAR	PLURAL	
	regular	cohesive
-o	-a	*
-o	-i	-a

<sup>27</sup> Acquaviva (2008: pp. 151–152) argues against separating the two classes due to the fact that there exist irregular plurals without an *-i* counterpart that, unlike singulars, get a mass interpretation, e.g., *midolla* ‘marrow’. For the sake of clarity, I will ignore such intricacies here.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

In the first formal semantic treatment of Italian irregular plurals, Ojeda (1995) proposes an account on which expressions such as *braccia* ‘arms’ and *ginocchia* ‘knees’ do not denote mere sets of body parts but instead make reference to naturally occurring sets of arms or knees, i.e., pairs of arms or knees of one body.<sup>28</sup> The core idea of the approach is that nouns denote with a certain indeterminacy of individuation and that the plural is the unmarked number (Ojeda 1993). Hence, plural markers are mere identity functions which do not affect the reference of the stem. On the other hand, the singular restricts the denotation of the stem to the domain of atomic individuals. Within this approach, nominal stems in regular/irregular doublets are in fact homophonous expressions having distinct denotations and the distribution of the plural markers *-i* and *-a* is constrained in that each of them can only combine with a semantic object of a particular type. In other words, *-a* does not have a different semantic value than *-i* but they differ in their input requirements. Specifically, the regular marker *-i* selects for stems denoting sets of all sets of singular referents including singletons, e.g., the set of all sets of individual arms. On the other hand, the irregular ending *-a* combines with stems that attribute a collective meaning associated with the plurality the whole noun refers to. In particular, *-a* selects for a homophonous stem denoting the set of natural aggregates of objects within the universe of discourse, e.g., the set of pairs of knees of each individual and pluralities formed by such pairs rather than arbitrary sums of knees.

However, Acquaviva (2008) rejects the view that the collectivizing effect is the characteristic for the whole class. Instead, he proposes that the common denominator of irregular plurals is that they denote entities conceptualized as weakly individual undifferentiated objects and argues for a lexicalist approach. In fact, Ojeda (1995) himself admits that the proper analysis of irregular plurals referring to mass concepts such as *cervello* ‘brain’ ~ *cervelli* ‘brains’ ~ *cervella* ‘brains (mass)’ is challenging for his account. Furthermore, as pointed out by Acquaviva a straightforward compositional analysis of the relationship between *-a* and the stem is problematic. One reason is that irregular plurals that lack regular *-i* alternants do not show any semantic peculiarity and a mechanism explaining a different selectional requirement would have to be postulated.

In order to avoid controversy I will focus on examples that indisputably invoke the sense of collectivity, specifically I will test the behavior of the irregular forms *mura* ‘walls (in a complex)’ and *ossa* ‘bones (in a skeleton)’, as demonstrated in the series of alternations in (62).<sup>29</sup>

<sup>28</sup>In a sense, irregular plurals somewhat resemble duals in that they both tend to denote natural aggregates (see also Acquaviva 2008: p. 152 for discussion).

<sup>29</sup>In (62), I use morpho-syntactic glosses. However, in the following part of the text I will gloss irregular plurals following the pattern as COLL.

- (62) Italian
- a. muro     ~ muri     ~ mura  
     wall.SG.M wall.PL.M wall.PL.F  
     ‘wall ~ walls ~ walls (in a complex)’
- b. osso       ~ ossi       ~ ossa  
     bone.SG.M bone.PL.M bone.PL.F  
     ‘bone ~ bones ~ bones (in a skeleton)’

In this book, I refrain from taking a stand regarding the issue of the internal syntactic and semantic structure of Italian irregular plurals and I remain agnostic with respect to the exact compositional contribution of the irregular marker *-a*, if any. However, I would like to suggest another perspective on reflecting the meaning of irregular forms falling into the pattern when they compete with regular *-i* plurals. In the next section, I will discuss data suggesting that at least a subset of irregular plurals is conceptualized as aggregates of entities related to each other by means of spatial connectedness.

### 2.3.1 Aggregate meaning

Given the discussed semantic evidence and previous accounts by Ojeda (1995) and Acquaviva (2008), it is plausible to posit that when an Italian plural in *-a* alternates with a regular *-i* form, its extension does not simply comprise arbitrary sums of individuals but rather a more complex type of entities. Specifically, I propose that the topological notion of connectedness or stable proximity of parts making up a plurality denoted by the irregular plural is involved in the way in which the referents of such an expression are conceptualized. As already indicated in the previous section, at least in some cases there is a good reason to assume that the reported collective flavor is due to the fact that Italian irregular plurals encode integrated plural individuals, i.e., pluralities that unlike referents of regular plurals involve particular spatial relations holding between individual parts, and thus have the potential to form cohesive aggregates and even individuated wholes.

For instance, Kučerová (2015) gives an example of the alternation between *dito* ‘finger’ ~ *diti* ‘fingers’ ~ *dita* ‘fingers (of a hand)’.<sup>30</sup> If one refers to a plurality of fingers attached to a hand, then the irregular form *dita* would be used. On the other hand, when talking about detached fingers, e.g., in an anatomy class setting, the regular plural *diti* is the appropriate form to use. It seems that in

<sup>30</sup>In some varieties of Italian, the regular plural *diti* ‘fingers’ is either unavailable or available only marginally as a stigmatized form (Acquaviva 2008: p. 126).

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

patterns such as *dito ~ diti ~ dita* the irregular form indicates a particular type of relation holding between individual singular objects referred to by the noun, namely a topological relation giving rise to a cluster consisting of fingers.

To illustrate that, let us imagine a military context where a siege is led by the famous general Garibaldi who attempts to destroy the defensive fortification of the attacked city. Now, consider the sentences in (63).

- (63) Italian (Enrico Flor, p.c.)
- a. Garibaldi ha smantellato il muro.  
Garibaldi has dismantled the wall  
'Garibaldi has dismantled the wall.'
  - b. Garibaldi ha smantellato i muri.  
Garibaldi has dismantled the walls  
'Garibaldi has dismantled the walls.'
  - c. Garibaldi ha smantellato le mura.  
Garibaldi has dismantled the walls.COLL  
'Garibaldi has dismantled the walled complex.'

If (63a) is true, then there is no wall any more, just a pile of stones. Similarly, uttering (63b) implies that there are no walls any more, just a number of piles of stones. However, (63c) can also mean something else, namely that the walls are not completely dismantled and though they probably received some damage during the siege, they are still recognizable as such, but importantly they are no longer connected. In other words, there is no complex of walls anymore and what is left is only a discontinuous collection of dissociated objects, i.e., independent walls.

The predicate *smantellare* 'dismantle' is what I call a verb of separation, i.e., a transitive expression sensitive to the part-whole structure of its first argument. When applied to a DP, it implies that the spatial connection between the parts of its referents has been undone or, in other words, the denoted individual has been disintegrated. Since referents of count singular nouns are arguably conceptualized as clusters, i.e., pluralities of interrelated objects, if the complement of *smantellare* in a true sentence is a singular count DP, it follows that the entity denoted by that noun has ceased to exist as an integrated whole. To put it another way, the connections holding between its parts have been unbound and what is left is merely an arbitrary collection of pieces which do not form an individuated object anymore. On the other hand, regular plural nouns refer to arbitrary sums of objects, i.e., there is no sense in which parts of a plurality are related to each other other than by being members of a certain set. Denotations of reg-

ular plurals are constituted by scattered collections of singular individuals, and in that sense plural individuals constitute a very different type of entity than referents of count singulars. Therefore, a verb of separation such as *smantellare* cannot disintegrate a plurality simply because there are no topological relations involved in the first place, and instead it operates on the part-whole structures of particular singular individuals making up a plurality. As a result, what is obtained is a number of dismantled singular objects. However, irregular plurals such as *mura* denote cohesive aggregates, and thus arguably involve the notion of spatial connection on top of the plurality meaning. In other words, entities denoted by such expressions are pluralities but at the same time they are similar to singular objects in that their parts, i.e., members of a collection such as individual walls, constitute a cohesive entity. Consequently, verbs of separation can dissolve the topological structure connecting parts of a plurality, and as a result another meaning arises, as witnessed by the possible interpretations of a sentence such as (63c).

Contrasts such as those in (63) show that the difference between *muri* and *mura* lies in that the former denotes a plurality of unrelated walls, whereas the latter makes reference to a cohesive aggregate of walls, i.e., walls making up a particular architectonic unit. In other words, the irregular plural encodes the cohesion of elements and often invokes the meaning of an integrated whole with a complex inner structure of associated parts connected to each other, while the regular *-i* form does not, and thus simply refers to an arbitrary sum of individuals of a particular kind.

This claim seems to be further strengthened by the fact that a significant number of nouns taking the irregular plural are words referring to body parts, i.e., entities naturally occurring in cohesive aggregates and typically situated in great proximity, involving simultaneous movement, whose collections are often conceptualized as functional units. Another conspicuous subset includes nouns denoting objects typically consisting of multiple elements spatially associated with each other, e.g., city walls, foundations, and fabrics of threads, as well as a genuine group noun *paio* ‘pair’. Yet another subclass involves nominals referring to series of events such as *grida* or *urla* ‘shouts (in a series)’. Such expressions denote pluralities of events associated with each other, and thus making up a single complex eventuality. For instance, *urla* would be true of a series of cries by a single agent or a plural individual, e.g., audience, which are perceptually contiguous in time and/or space (Acquaviva 2008: pp. 149–150). Though the meaning of this subclass seems to be intuitively closely related to the semantic effect of connectedness discussed here, I will refrain from speculating how exactly the proposed interpretation could be extended to eventualities and simply note the analogy.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

Before we move on to the discussion of the interaction between cardinals and partitives in Italian, let us conclude that a subset of irregular plurals refers to cohesive aggregates of objects associated with each other. The evidence concerning verbs of separation suggests that this association could be understood by means of a particular spatial configuration.

### 2.3.2 Interaction with cardinals in partitives

The core observation to be discussed in this section concerns the contrast between explicit partitives with regular plurals and explicit partitives with irregular plurals displaying the cohesive effect discussed above, e.g., *muri* ~ *mura* and *ossi* ~ *ossa*. As already discussed in §2.2.2, Italian is similar to many other languages in that it allows for both singulars and plurals in explicit partitives. Moreover, Italian displays the same pattern as, e.g., German with respect to the quantificational properties of partitive words in explicit and proportional partitives. Specifically, just like count explicit entity partitives, see (64a), partitives involving plural DPs embedded under pluralized *parte* modified by a numeral, as in (64b), always quantify over material parts of objects and not over sets of wholes although unmodified set partitives get a part-of-a-plurality reading. Intriguingly, everything changes in count explicit partitives involving *-a* forms following the discussed alternating pattern, as in (62). When an irregular doublet is swapped for a regular one, the range of possible interpretations significantly extends.

- (64) Italian (Enrico Flor, p.c.)
- a. Due parti del muro sono rosse.  
two parts of.the wall are red  
'Two parts of the wall are red.'
  - b. Due parti dei muri sono rosse.  
two parts of.the walls are red  
'Two parts of the walls are red.'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading
  - c. Due parti delle mura sono rosse.  
two parts of.the walls.COLL are red  
'Two parts of the walled complex are red.'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading

For instance, imagine a scenario of a walled city whose fortifications consist of six walls  $w_1, \dots, w_6$  connected to each other in such a way that they form a hexagon, as depicted in Figure 2.1.

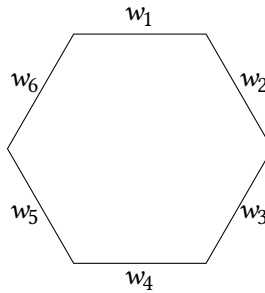


Figure 2.1: Sections of city walls

Given the scenario described above, as one could expect, the sentence in (64c) would be true if two parts of two distinct walls making up the complex were red, e.g., a part of  $w_1$  and a part of  $w_3$ . But surprisingly, unlike (64b), it would also be true if two distinct individual walls making up the complex were red, e.g., the wall  $w_1$  and the wall  $w_3$ , or if two continuous sections of the walls making up the complex were red, e.g., the subsets  $\{w_1, w_2\}$  and  $\{w_4, w_5\}$ . In other words, the meanings that are impossible in explicit set partitives with regular plurals, are easily available with irregular plurals. However, as already mentioned, there is a crucial constraint on possible interpretations of (64c). Namely, one can count parts of the plurality consisting of the walls in question as one as long as they form a contiguous section of the whole structure, i.e., (64c) would not be true of two arbitrary pluralities constituted by walls that are not in a tangential relationship with each other. In particular, it would be false if, say, the wall  $w_1$  as well as the walls  $\{w_3, w_5\}$  were red.<sup>31</sup>

Likewise, assume a slightly morbid scenario involving a decaying human bone or skeleton and consider the contrasts between the examples in (65).

- (65) Italian (Enrico Flor, p.c.)
- a. Tre parti del osso sono cariate.  
three parts of.the bone are decayed  
'Three parts of the bone are decayed.'
  - b. Tre parti degli ossi sono cariate.  
three parts of.the bones are decayed  
'Three parts of the bones are decayed.'
- (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

<sup>31</sup>I assume here the 'exact  $n$ ' interpretation of numerals (e.g., Horn 1992; Geurts 1998; Breheny 2005; see also Geurts 2006 for an overview). Notice that the judgments do not change if the numeral is modified by overt *exactly*.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

- c. Tre parti delle ossa sono cariate.  
 three parts of.the bones.COLL are decayed  
 ‘Three parts of the skeleton are decayed.’
- (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) part-of-a-plurality reading

Given that there is one relevant bone, the entity partitive in (65a) gets a part-of-a-singularity reading as usual, and thus the sentence would be true if there were three decayed spots on, e.g., a femur. This is not surprising and, similar to the interpretation of (65b), fits the discussed semantic shift regarding modified explicit set partitives. However, the partitive involving the irregular plural *ossa* in (65c) behaves differently. Seemingly, the most readily available interpretation of the example concerns three groups of connected bones making up the skeleton, e.g., it would be true of a decayed femur and knee, a decayed ulna and radius, and the decayed neck and skull. The sentence would be felicitous if three separate bones decayed though, e.g., a femur, ulna, and the skull. Furthermore, analogously to (65b) it would be judged true if there were decayed parts on three distinct bones, e.g., a part of the femur, a part of the ulna, and a part of the skull. But again, the reading that (65c) cannot get involves three collections of disconnected bones. For instance, it would be infelicitous in a scenario where, say, a femur and the skull, a radius and a knee, and a rib and an ankle bone are decayed. That is because these pairs of bones do not form cohesive wholes, i.e., topologically continuous entities of a particular sort, and consequently cannot be conceptualized as units one could quantify over.

Table 2.5 summarizes the patterns we have observed so far. Specifically, the quantificational behavior of the Italian part-word *parte* depends on certain denotational properties of expressions it combines with. The labels ‘bare’ and ‘count’ in the table stand for bare explicit partitives and count explicit partitives, respectively, each of which can include a singular, a regular plural, or an irregular plural DP.

Table 2.5: Properties of Italian *parte* ‘part’ in explicit partitives

	SINGULARS		REGULAR PL		IRREGULAR PL	
	bare	count	bare	count	bare	count
subatomic quantification	✓	✓	*	✓	✓	✓
quantification over wholes	*	*	✓	*	✓	✓



The investigation into the interaction between cardinal numerals and partitives involving Italian irregular plurals leads to a somewhat surprising conclusion. It turns out that the cross-linguistic observation concerning different properties of partitive words in entity and set partitives as discussed in §2.2.3 actually does not provide evidence for distinct part-whole structures for singulars and plurals, as suggested by Schwarzschild (1996). That is not to say that there is no difference in how constitution of objects as opposed to sums thereof is conceptualized. That is to say that the Italian data suggest that the difference does not regard the relation between parts and a whole, but rather that it regards the relation governing how parts are organized in space with respect to each other. In particular, regular plurals encode no topological relations between entities making up pluralities or, in other words, simply denote arbitrary sums of individuals. Consequently, parts of a plurality do not form an integrated entity that could be considered as a unit one could assign a number to, which seems to be a prerequisite for numerical quantification. On the other hand, despite the plurality inference, Italian irregular forms in *-a* differ significantly from regular plurals and somewhat resemble singulars in that they do encode how parts are organized with respect to each other. Specifically, their extensions consist of cohesive aggregates, i.e., pluralities arranged in a particular spatial configurations such that individual objects making up a plurality are either connected or at least stay in a relatively stable proximity. Given that the domain of quantification consists of entities conceptualized as such clusters, counting parts consisting of several singularities is possible as long as they form integrated fragments or continuous sections of the whole. Therefore, I posit that the explanation of the patterns summarized in Table 2.1 and 2.5 should be contingent on the manner how we conceptualize topological relations holding between parts of different types of entities as well as on the sensitivity of quantificational operations employed in natural language to such relations.

## 2.4 *Parts vs. subsets*

The Italian data provide intriguing evidence but let us hold on for a minute and reconsider the claim that being countable is a property of only those entities that are integrated wholes. One could wonder to what extent the fact that count explicit partitives involving regular plural DPs cannot quantify over sums and can only refer to parts of singular objects tells us anything about the nature of countability. After all, to the extent they are pragmatically admissible, sentences in which the cardinal modifies an expression such as *subset* instead of a part-word

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

are definitely compatible with an interpretation where the domain of quantification consists of collections of individuals, i.e., felicitous when counting subsets of a larger set. For instance, unlike (66b) the sentence in (66a) would be true in a situation where there are, say, ten relevant apples  $\{a_1, \dots, a_{10}\}$  and three arbitrary subsets of the apples got spoiled, e.g.,  $\{a_1, a_2\}$ ,  $\{a_3, a_4, a_5\}$  and  $\{a_6, a_7\}$ .<sup>32</sup> In other words, is it really the case that counting requires units that are integrated objects? Or maybe there is simply something weird about partitive words and we should not jump to a conclusion concerning countability based on the partitive data?

(66) Polish

- a. Trzy podzbiory jabłek zgniły.  
three subsets apples.GEN rotted  
'Three subsets of the apples got spoiled.'
- b. Trzy części jabłek zgniły.  
three parts apples.GEN rotted  
'Three parts of the apples got spoiled.'

  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

At first blush, this seems to be a justified objection and I think it should be taken seriously. However, there are a number of empirical facts suggesting that what happens in (66a) is very different from what happens in (66b). First of all, it is crucial to emphasize that natural language expressions such as *set* or *subset* are not merely linguistic reflections of set-theoretic concepts involving notions such as  $\{\dots\}$  or relations  $\subseteq$  and  $\subset$ . On the contrary, such expressions have a number of properties that classify them on a par with group nouns such as *committee*, *band*, or *pile*.<sup>33</sup> On the other hand, similarly to bare plurals set partitives refer to pluralities but part-words are not collectives, as attested by a number of tests involving predicate non-sharing.

It has been proposed in the literature that group nouns and plural NPs do not co-refer since one can find multiple contrasts concerning (in)compatibility with certain predicates (Barker 1992; Schwarzschild 1996). For instance, the sentence

---

<sup>32</sup>This reading is different from a type of reading discussed in §3.3 where reference to three-fourths of the total volume of the apples would be involved. What is crucial for the discussion of (66b) is that the quantified subsets of individuals cannot be arbitrary.

<sup>33</sup>In the following text, I will ignore the evidence for distinguishing between different classes of group nouns (see Pearson 2011; Henderson 2017; Dočekal & Wągiel 2018a) and assume that for our purposes there are no relevant differences between nouns such as *band* and *pile*.

with a collective DP as a subject is perfectly fine with the predicate *have five members*, see (67a), but its altered version involving a plural DP as in (67b) is not.

- (67) English (Lønning 1987: p. 153)
- a. The committee has five members.
  - b. #The men have five members.

Now, let us test the behavior of the Polish part-word *część* ‘part’ with respect to plurals, regular collective nouns, and the expression *podzbiór* ‘subset’.<sup>34</sup> The contrasts in (68) show that bare plurals and bare explicit set partitives differ from the typical group noun *stos* ‘pile’ as well as *podzbiór* in that they are not compatible with predicates of the type *have ten elements*, which are assumed to indicate bunches (Schwarzschild 1996).

- (68) Polish
- a. #Jabłka składają się z dziesięciu sztuk.  
apples consist REFL from ten.GEN items.GEN  
Intended: ‘The apples consist of ten items.’
  - b. #Część jabłek składa się z dziesięciu sztuk.  
part apples.GEN consist REFL from ten.GEN items.GEN  
Intended: ‘Some of the apples consist of ten items.’
  - c. Stos jabłek składa się z dziesięciu sztuk.  
pile apples.GEN consist REFL from ten.GEN elements.GEN  
‘The pile of apples consists of ten items.’
  - d. Podzbiór jabłek składa się z dziesięciu sztuk.  
subset apples.GEN consist REFL from ten.GEN elements.GEN  
‘The subset of apples consists of ten items.’

The same pattern can be observed when the examined expressions appear as first arguments of the two-place predicate *należy do* ‘belongs to’ which arguably designates assignment of objects to some abstract entity representing a collection. Though both (69c) and (69d) are felicitous, the sentences including plurals and explicit set partitives in (69a) and (69b), respectively, cannot saturate the predicate.

<sup>34</sup>It needs to be admitted that due to the restricted distribution of the noun *podzbiór* (often limited to mathematical and computational contexts) the following sentences involving this expression is not how people usually talk. Rather, these examples sound nerdy or somewhat like clumsily worded math exercises rather than something a regular person would say. Nevertheless, despite the slight lexical oddity the judgments concerning compatibility with different predicates, interactions in co-variational contexts and with overt distributive operators seem to be rather clear.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

(69) Polish

- a. #Ta papierówka należy do jabłek.  
this white.transparent belongs to apples.GEN  
Intended: 'This white transparent apple belongs to the apples.'
- b. #Ta papierówka należy do części jabłek.  
this white.transparent belongs to part.GEN apples.GEN  
Intended: 'This white transparent apple belongs to some of the apples.'
- c. Ta papierówka należy do stosu jabłek.  
this white.transparent belongs to pile.GEN apples.GEN  
'This white transparent apple belongs to the pile of apples.'
- d. Ta papierówka należy do podzbioru jabłek.  
this white.transparent belongs to subset.GEN apples.GEN  
'This white transparent apple belongs to the subset of apples.'

Another contrast between plurals and collective nouns concerns distribution with reciprocals, as demonstrated in (70).

(70) English (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 168)

- a. The rocks in that pile are touching each other.
- b. #That pile is touching each other.

Polish examples such as those in (71) show that there is a contrast between bare plurals and bare explicit set partitives, on the one hand, and typical collectives such as *stos* and *podzbiór*, on the other.

(71) Polish

- a. Jabłka dotykają się nawzajem.  
apples touch REFL each.other  
'The apples are touching each other.'
- b. Część jabłek dotyka się nawzajem.  
part apples.GEN touches REFL each.other  
'Some of the apples are touching each other.'
- c. #Stos jabłek dotyka się nawzajem.  
pile apples.GEN touches REFL each.other  
Intended: 'The pile of apples touches each other.'
- d. #Podzbiór jabłek dotyka się nawzajem.  
subset apples.GEN touches REFL each.other  
Intended: 'The subset of the apples touches each other.'

Plurals and explicit set partitives combine felicitously with reciprocal expressions, whereas collectives do not. In particular, (71a) and (71b) indicate either strong or intermediate reciprocity (Fiengo & Lasnik 1973; Dalrymple et al. 1998; Beck 2001), i.e., either each of the apples in question is touching all the other apples or any two of the apples are connected by a chain of apples that stand in the reciprocal relation. Nevertheless, it is impossible to define such truth conditions for (71c) and (71d).

A similar distribution is attested in contexts where the reciprocal is covert, see (72), including co-variational environments such as (73). Specifically, plurals do combine with predicates triggering covariation, whereas group nouns do not.

- (72) English (Dougherty 1970)  
#The trio collided.
- (73) English (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 168)  
a. The members of group A live in different cities.  
b. #Group A lives in different cities.

Let us then consider Polish examples involving plurals, explicit partitives, group nouns, and phrases headed by *podzbiór* in subject position, as provided in (74) and (75). In (74a), the sentence-internal *different* expression *w różnych miastach* ‘in different cities’ is bound within a clause to express covariation with a plural argument due to a built-in distributive operator (Carlson 1987; Beck 2000; Brasoveanu 2008; Dotlačil 2010). As a result, the sentence would be true if for each of the musicians it were the case that they lived in a city that is different from the cities other musicians live in. Due to this kind of meaning, sentence-internal *different* expressions are good indicators of distributivity.

- (74) Polish
- a. Muzycy mieszkają w różnych miastach.  
musicians live in different.LOC cities.LOC  
‘The musicians live in different cities.’
- b. Część muzyków mieszka w różnych miastach.  
part musicians.GEN lives in different.LOC cities.LOC  
‘Some of the musicians live in different cities.’
- c. #Zespół mieszka w różnych miastach.  
band live in different.LOC cities.LOC  
Intended: ‘The band lives in different cities.’
- d. #Podzbiór muzyków mieszka w różnych miastach.  
subset musicians.GEN lives in different.LOC cities.LOC  
Intended: ‘A subset of the musicians lives in different cities.’

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

The sentences in (75) include the distributive preposition *po* which is a marker for distant distributivity in Polish (e.g., Przepiórkowski 2008; 2010; 2014; Przepiórkowski & Patejuk 2013).<sup>35</sup> As such, similarly to binominal *each* (e.g., Safir & Stowell 1988; Zimmermann 2002; Dotlačil 2012; Champollion 2012a) and distributive numerals (e.g., Gil 2002; Oh 2005; Cable 2014; Hofherr & Etxeberria 2017) *po* marks the distributive share and distributes it over the distributive key denoted by a different phrase, here the subject DP. As a result, the possibility of a collective reading is ruled out and a sentence in which *po* occurs is obligatorily interpreted distributively, e.g., in (75a) each of the musicians played a song. This conflicts with the semantics of group nouns which in general do not allow for the access to individual members of a collection, hence (75c) is an awkward sentence. As witnessed by the contrast between (75b) and (75d), explicit set partitives pattern with plurals, whereas *podzbiór* behaves as typical collectives.

(75) Polish

- a. Muzycy zagrali po piosence.  
musicians played DISTR song.LOC  
'The musicians played a song each.'
- b. Część muzyków zagrała po piosence.  
part musicians.GEN played DISTR song.LOC  
'Some of the musicians played a song each.'
- c. #Zespół zagrał po piosence.  
band played DISTR song.LOC  
Intended: 'The band played a song each.'
- d. #Podzbiór muzyków zagrał po piosence.  
subset musicians.GEN played DISTR song.LOC  
Intended: 'A subset of the musicians played a song each.'

Yet another diagnostic involves the VP disjunction test proposed by de Vries (2015: pp. 30–31). When the test is applied, *część* does not exhibit the kind of behavior associated with group nouns. To illustrate this, let us consider the sentences in (76a).

(76) English (de Vries 2015: p. 31; adapted)

- a. The children are singing or dancing.
  - (i) collective reading
  - (ii) distributive reading

---

<sup>35</sup>For detailed studies on distant distributivity and distributive *po* in Slavic see also, e.g., Franks (1994; 1995), Harves (2003), and Knežević (2015).

- b. The team is singing or dancing.
  - (i) collective reading
  - (ii) #distributive reading

In (76a), the definite plural DP *the children* serves as a subject of the disjunctive sentence. There are two possible interpretations of (76a). On the collective interpretation, see (76a-i), the disjunction *singing or dancing* holds of the plurality as a whole. In other words, it is either the case that all the relevant children are singing or that all the relevant children are dancing. However, there is yet another reading of (76a), namely the distributive interpretation, see (76a-ii), according to which the disjoined VPs hold not of the plurality of children as a whole but rather of each individual child. Thus, some of the children might be singing while others might be dancing. Crucially, when the definite plural is replaced with a group noun such as *team* as in (76b), the distributive interpretation is no longer available. The only reading such a sentence can get is that the whole plurality was either involved in singing or in dancing.

Now, let us examine the behavior of Polish nouns *część* and *podzbiór* compared to plurals and group nominals in sentences involving VP disjunction such as those in (77).

- (77) Polish
- a. Dzieci tańczą lub śpiewają.  
children dance or sing  
'The children are dancing or singing.'  
    - (i) collective reading
    - (ii) distributive reading
  - b. Grupa dzieci tańczy lub śpiewa.  
group children.GEN dances or sings  
'The group of children is dancing or singing.'  
    - (i) collective reading
    - (ii) #distributive reading
  - c. Część dzieci tańczy lub śpiewa.  
part children.GEN dances or sings  
'Some children are dancing or singing.'  
    - (i) collective reading
    - (ii) distributive reading

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

- d. Pozbiór dzieci            tańczy lub śpiewa.  
subset children.GEN dances or sings  
'A subset of children is dancing or singing.'  
(i) collective reading  
(ii) #distributive reading

The example (77a) can have either a collective or a distributive reading, i.e., it would be true either when all the children are dancing or singing or when some are dancing whereas others are singing. On the other hand, a sentence with a group noun as a subject like (77b) can only be interpreted collectively. That is also the case in (77d), i.e., all the children in the relevant subset need to be either dancing or singing. However, (77c) is felicitous in both collective and distributive scenarios. Once again, the *part* word *część* patterns with plurals rather than collectives, which definitely proves that it differs from expressions such as *subset*.

Notice that whatever theory of the relationship between agreement and collectivity/distributivity one might have (e.g., de Vries 2015; see also Schwarzschild 1996 and Pearson 2011 for the discussion of group nouns in British English as well as Bosnić 2016 for experimental data concerning distributivity and agreement mismatches in BCS), it cannot explain the semantic difference between *part* expressions and group nouns. In Polish, *część* just like *zespół* (and any other group noun) triggers singular agreement on the verb. As witnessed by the glosses in the examples provided above, in sentences with both explicit partitives and group nouns, see (74b)–(74c) and (77b)–(77c), the verbs agree in number with the subjects. Furthermore, both in (75b) and (75c) the past participles agree with *część* and *zespół* in gender by taking the feminine and masculine form, respectively. Therefore, it is not the agreement pattern but rather lexical properties of *część* that are accountable for the semantic difference.

Finally, despite being distinct syntactic categories partitive words pattern with cardinal numerals in that in general they allow for modification by class A/B modifiers such as *more than* and *at least* (Nouwen 2010; 2016; Brasoveanu 2012), see (78).<sup>36</sup> This again suggests that their semantics includes a purely quantificational component.

- (78) Polish  
a. Co najmniej część murów    jest czerwona.  
at.least    part walls.GEN is red  
'At least some of the walls are red.'

<sup>36</sup>Since there are some restrictions in this respect which I believe result from the indefinite nature of some partitive words, I present here only parallel examples with class B modifiers.



- b. Co najwyżej część murów jest czerwona.  
at.most part walls.GEN is red  
'At most some of the walls are red.'
- c. Co najmniej połowa murów jest czerwona.  
at.least half walls.GEN is red  
'At least half of the walls are red.'
- d. Co najwyżej połowa murów jest czerwona.  
at.most half walls.GEN is red  
'At most half of the walls are red.'
- e. Co najmniej pięć murów jest czerwonych.  
at.least five walls.GEN is red  
'At least five of the walls are red.'
- f. Co najwyżej pięć murów jest czerwonych.  
at.most five walls.GEN is red  
'At most five of the walls are red.'

The results of a battery of tests applied to the Polish nouns *część* 'part' and *podzbiór* 'subset' unequivocally indicate that *podzbiór* is a group noun,<sup>37</sup> and thus triggers obligatory collective interpretations of sentences in which it occurs, whereas *część* patterns with plurals including being ambiguous between collective and distributive readings. This is a significant contrast between the expressions in question suggesting that their extensions differ in a significant way. In particular, it has been commonly advocated in the literature that group nouns do not refer to pluralities but rather to atomic individuals, i.e., somewhat abstract singularities that might be associated with their members (e.g., Barker 1992; Schwarzschild 1996; Winter 2001; Champollion 2017).<sup>38</sup> Whatever extraordinary properties such atoms have, it is plausible to assume that they are conceptualized as something distinct from mere sums of objects.

Therefore, I conclude that explicit partitives refer to genuine pluralities whereas group nouns including expressions such as *set* and *subset* denote abstract entities that are associated with pluralities of their members but are ontologically distinct from them. Having this in mind, there is nothing surprising about the fact that count explicit set partitives do not quantify over sums of individuals, and in fact, it turns out that part-words actually pattern with regular nominals, as will be shown below.

<sup>37</sup>Schwarzschild (1996: p. 168) actually lists *set* among group nouns.

<sup>38</sup>But see, e.g., Link (1984; 1998), Landman (1989a,b; 2000), and de Vries (2015) for an alternative view on which a group noun denotes a special type of plurality shifted to an impure atom or group-atom depending on a particular approach. Pearson (2011), on the other hand, proposes that group nouns are predicates of individual concepts.

## 2 Partitives and part-whole structures

It has been observed for a long time that the semantics of numeral phrases in languages such as English poses a compositional puzzle. On the one hand, cardinal numerals higher than *one* combine only with plural nominals, on the other, plural NPs modified by cardinals are interpreted as singular expressions. Specifically, although plurals denote sums of entities, the domain of quantification is always a set of atomic individuals (Kratzer 1989; Chierchia 1998b; Landman 2000; see also Kobuchi-Philip 2006). Contrary to what one would expect if numerals simply counted elements in a given set (e.g., Barwise & Cooper 1981) and combined with plural nouns in a straightforward manner, cardinals seem to be sensitive only to singular individuals in the sense that they do not assign numbers to sums of objects. Actually, this fact has already been realized in the system of Link (1983) where the extension of a phrase such as *three children* is supposed to contain only special types of elements, namely exactly three atoms. To illustrate why such a restriction is necessary, let us consider the sentence in (79a).

- (79) a. Three children slept.  
b.  $\llbracket \text{children} \rrbracket = \{a, b, c, d, ab, ac, ad, bc, bd, cd, abc, abd, acd, bcd, abcd\}$   
c.  $\llbracket \text{three children} \rrbracket \cap \llbracket \text{slept} \rrbracket = \{a, ab, abcd\}$   
d.  $\llbracket \text{three children} \rrbracket \cap \llbracket \text{slept} \rrbracket = \{a, b, ab\}$

Let us assume that there are four relevant children in the universe of discourse, say, Anne, Betty, Carl, and Danny, i.e., *a*, *b*, *c*, and *d* respectively. Then the meaning of the plural noun *children* is the set involving both atomic children and all the sums generated by joining the atoms, see (79b). If *three* simply counted the elements in the set denoted by the modified noun, among the possible verifications of the sentence in (79a) would be (79c) and (79d) since in both cases the set of children that slept consists of three elements.

The truth conditions in (79c) and (79d) predict (79a) to be true both in a scenario where there were four individual children sleeping and in a scenario where only two individual children slept. However, this not how the sentence is understood. It seems that what cardinals in a language such as English do is that they restrict possible verifications of sentences including numeral phrases in such a way that sums of individuals are excluded from the domain of quantification.<sup>39</sup>

With this in mind, let us return to count explicit partitives such as the Italian examples in (48), repeated here as (80). Similarly to regular plural DPs, unmodified explicit set partitives denote pluralities or, more precisely, sub-pluralities. However, when combined with a numeral they do not allow for quantification

<sup>39</sup> Alternatively, one might assume that there is a null classifier responsible for this restriction (e.g., Selkirk 1977; Kobuchi-Philip 2006).

over sub-pluralities but only over material parts of individuals making up pluralities.

(80) Italian (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 186; adapted)

- a. tre parti del muro  
three parts of.the wall  
'three parts of the wall'
- b. tre parti dei muri  
three parts of.the walls  
'three parts of the walls'

  - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
  - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading

At first blush, it seems surprising but actually in languages such as English the same effect can be found in numeral phrases. Specifically, the numeral combines with the plural noun which denotes a set of pluralities; however, the domain of quantification does not consist of pluralities but rather atomic individuals. Hence, as demonstrated in (81) the phrase *three walls* does not mean three pluralities of walls but rather a plurality of three walls. Likewise, the Italian partitive phrase in (80b) cannot be interpreted as three pluralities of sub-pluralities of walls. Instead, it would be felicitously paraphrased as a plurality of three parts of walls.

(81) Pluralities of wholes and parts

- a. three walls
  - (i) #three pluralities of walls
  - (ii) plurality of three walls
- b. tre parti dei muri
  - (i) #three pluralities of parts-of-a-plurality of walls
  - (ii) plurality of three parts of walls

In this section, I argued that set partitives differ from collectives and discussed a number of issues regarding the domain of quantification in count explicit partitives as well as group nouns and plurals modified by cardinal numerals. An important question that arises after examining the evidence explored in this chapter is why natural language does not allow for counting a sum of entities as one thing unless it satisfies certain topological (or other) criteria.

## 2.5 Summary

The data discussed in this chapter provide compelling evidence that cross-linguistically it is common for the same partitive word including proportional quantifiers such as half-words to appear both in entity and set partitives. This fact suggests that such expressions can operate both at the superatomic and subatomic level depending on what structure is provided by the embedded DP. Furthermore, on the basis of the zeugma test involving German partitives with conjoined singular and plural DPs I showed that it is empirically inadequate to account for the parallelism between explicit and proportional entity and set partitives in terms of semantic ambiguity.

However, at the same time explicit partitives modified by a cardinal numeral can only quantify over material parts of singular individuals irrespective of whether the complement DP is singular or plural. At first sight, this fact seems to be at variance with the claim that there is unified parthood utilized by partitive words in both entity and set partitives. Nonetheless, an important empirical finding concerning Italian irregular plurals showed that if a plural expression encodes a certain topological configuration, i.e., denotes entities conceptualized as cohesive pluralities, count explicit partitives can get a part-of-a-plurality reading in such a case. This fact demonstrates that the uncountability of explicit partitives with plurals does not indicate per se different part-whole structures for singularities and pluralities. Rather, countability results from the interplay between the meaning of a partitive word and the extension of a singular or plural DP it combines with, and topological constraints play a crucial role in this interaction.

Given the cross-linguistic and intra-linguistic evidence explored in this chapter, the two remaining possibilities are the following. It is either the case that singulars and plurals employ a unified part-whole structure or that their mereologies do differ but at the same time partitive words involve a derived indeterminate notion of parthood which allows them to quantify over elements of whatever part-whole structure they are applied to. I argue for the first option. However, by advocating this claim I do not advance a view that singulars and plurals employ the same structures. What I claim is that it is not the part-whole relation that differs but rather that there is another notion involved which is responsible for how parts are topologically arranged with respect to each other. Intuitively, this seems correct since we conceptually distinguish between integrated wholes and arbitrary sums of parts, and quantification in natural language is sensitive to the distinction. Specifically, only things conceptualized as integrated parts of integrated wholes can be assigned numbers when counting. On the other hand, scattered entities such as pluralities are prohibited from the domain of quantifica-

tion cardinal numerals establish unless certain individuation criteria are satisfied. In addition, Italian irregular plurals provide evidence that there are natural language expressions involving yet another type of structure. In particular, such nominals designate entities that are similar to plurals in that they consist of multiple integrated objects, but at the same time the sum thereof is arranged in a particular way, i.e., it constitutes a cluster.

So far, I have argued that explicit and proportional partitives provide evidence that countability is restricted to entities that form an integrated whole as typically denoted by concrete singular count nouns, while the arbitrary sums of parts regular plural nouns refer to cannot be counted. Furthermore, the data concerning subatomic quantification suggests that this constraint is also applicable at the level of material parts of individuals. If that is correct, one would expect that there are natural language expressions dedicated exclusively to quantification over integrated parts similar to cardinal numerals that count integrated wholes. In the next section, I will introduce novel data concerning distinct types of half-words in Polish as well as other partitive expressions.



## 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

In the previous chapter, I discussed data concerning quantification over parts in explicit entity and set partitives. Specifically, I presented evidence suggesting that only integrated parts of integrated wholes can be subject to counting. As I have already indicated in the introduction, in English the difference can be captured by the contrast between bare *part* and *a part*. I argued that expressions corresponding to the former refer to arbitrary parts of a whole including discontinuous portions of a substance making up a whole, and thus are uncountable. On the other hand, expressions corresponding to the latter refer to continuous integrated parts of a whole and as such can pluralize and combine with cardinals. In this chapter, I explore to what extent natural language is sensitive to this distinction. To this end, I will provide novel evidence from different types of Polish partitive words that encode the contrast formally. It will turn out that this phenomenon is not something idiosyncratic, but rather cross-linguistic evidence suggests that it is relatively widespread with different languages using different means to express it. Moreover, based on the data concerning whole-adjectives I will demonstrate the linguistic relevance of two aspects of being whole, namely maximality and integrity.<sup>1</sup>

### 3.1 Continuous and discontinuous parts

Given the meaning of the plural in languages such as English, it follows that expressions such as *a part* are incompatible with predicates denoting pluralities. Intuitively, the reason is that the extension of a phrase headed by *a part* comprises integrated portions, i.e., parts that come in one piece, whereas plurals denote arbitrary sums, i.e., scattered entities consisting of discontinuous elements.

---

<sup>1</sup>The scope of this chapter would be much narrower if it were not for my informants with whom I tested the interpretation of expressions in languages other than Polish. In particular, I am very grateful to Jonathan Bobaljik, Jeffrey Parrott, and Guy Tabachnick for their judgments and discussion concerning English, to Berit Gehrke, Nina Haslinger, and Maximilian Prüller for German, Erlinde Meertens and Izabela Jordanoska for Dutch, Muriel Assmann for Brazilian Portuguese, and Chang Liu for Mandarin. I would also like to thank Adam Przepiórkowski for sharing his observations regarding Polish with me.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

However, if the plural were augmented with an additional semantic feature guaranteeing that a plurality of integrated objects is itself an integrated object, as is arguably the case in at least some Italian irregular plurals, then an expression corresponding to English *a part* is able to combine with such a plural expression. In such a case, it would yield a part of a plurality whose constituents are in a particular topological relation, namely they are connected to each other.

But is there any additional reason to assume that natural language expressions are sensitive to topological relations operating alongside part-whole structures? And if so, to what extent do the discussed phenomena really tell us something important about countability? The claim advanced here is that what counts as one needs to be an integrated part (proper or improper) of an integrated whole. Though this might seem intuitively correct, a question arises where the property of ‘coming in one piece’ comes from. After all, countability is the ability of an expression to appear in morpho-syntactic environments related to counting, but counting is a semantic operation of assigning numbers to units of a particular type. Hence, one could wonder whether there is evidence that there is something in an expression’s meaning that corresponds to the notion of being an integrated entity, and thus being countable. One prominent view holds that countability is not a property of a particular class of nouns but rather of full DPs (e.g., Borer 2005a, see also Allan 1980 and Pelletier & Schubert 1989 and the following work by Pelletier), and thus arises within a complex nominal syntactic structure. On the other hand, other approaches posit that it is lexical meaning that determines countability patterns (e.g., Wierzbicka 1988; Wisniewski et al. 2003). However, the evidence discussed in the literature is mainly restricted to cases of quantification over wholes and almost totally ignores constructions in which what is counted are bits of objects rather than whole individuals.

In this section, I will provide additional evidence for the significance of the role of spatial integrity, i.e., compactness, of parts in subatomic quantification. The core data come from the distribution and semantic properties of distinct classes of Polish half-words.

#### 3.1.1 Polish half-words

Polish distinguishes lexically between three distinct half-words, as presented in (1). They are morphologically derived from one another with *pół* being morphologically the least marked form with no derivational affixes. As presented in (1a), *pół* consists only of a root and null inflectional marker. On the other hand, *połowa* and *połówka* are derived forms involving in addition the morpheme *-ow/-ów-* as well as the diminutive suffix *-k-* in the latter case, see (1b)–(1c).



- (1) Polish
- a. pół-∅  
root-inflectional.marker  
'half<sub>1</sub>'
  - b. poł-ow-a  
root-derivational.suffix-inflectional.marker  
'half<sub>2</sub>'
  - c. poł-ów-k-a  
root-deriv.suffix<sub>1</sub>-deriv.suffix<sub>2</sub>-infl.marker  
'half<sub>3</sub>'

In terms of  $\phi$ -features, *pół* shows neuter agreement whereas *połowa* and *połówka* are feminine, as demonstrated in (2). Furthermore, similarly to vague quantifiers such as *dużo* 'many/much', *pół* is defective in that it has only the nominative/accusative form (though it can also appear in some genitive positions).<sup>2</sup>

- (2) Polish
- a. To czerwone pół jabłka zgniło.  
this.NOM.N red.NOM.SG.N half<sub>1</sub>.NOM.N apple.GEN.N rotted.SG.N  
'This red half of the apple got spoiled.'
  - b. Ta czerwona połowa jabłka zgniła.  
this.NOM.F red.NOM.SG.F half<sub>2</sub>.NOM.F apple.GEN.N rotted.SG.F  
'This red half of the apple got spoiled.'
  - c. Ta czerwona połówka jabłka zgniła.  
this.NOM.F red.NOM.SG.F half<sub>3</sub>.NOM.F apple.GEN.N rotted.SG.F  
'This red half of the apple got spoiled.'

At first blush, the Polish half-words in (2) are mere synonyms making the same contribution to the interpretation of the discussed sentences. However, closer in-

<sup>2</sup>Based on examples from the National Corpus of Polish (NCP) like (i), Przepiórkowski (2006) argues that *pół* 'half' is inherently plural because it can be modified by the plural demonstrative *te* 'these'. Notice, however, that though there are definitely varieties of Polish in which (i) is well-formed, there are also many speakers (including myself) for whom it is ungrammatical. Furthermore, in modern Polish the neuter singular demonstrative *to* 'this' is being gradually replaced by the colloquial form *te* 'this' which is homophonous to the plural *te* 'these'. It is possible that the acceptability of (i) is correlated with this process.

- (i) Polish (NCP)
- %Zaczną się niebawem prace polowe, więc te pół kilometra jest konieczne.  
will.begin REFL soon works field.ADJ so these half kilometer.GEN is necessary  
'Field work will start soon, so it is necessary (to finish) this half kilometer (road).'

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

vestigation reveals intriguing differences in their distribution and meaning. Let us first consider the most frequent and semantically least marked *half* expression, i.e., *połowa*. As witnessed in (3), there are no constraints on its distribution and it can felicitously combine with all types of entity-denoting predicates including count singulars, collectives, plurals, and mass terms.<sup>3</sup>

- (3) Polish
- a. *połowa jabłka*  
half<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN  
'half of the apple'
  - b. *połowa stosu (jabłek)*  
half<sub>2</sub> pile.GEN (apples.GEN)  
'half of the pile (of apples)'
  - c. *połowa jabłek*  
half<sub>2</sub> apples.GEN  
'half of the apples'
  - d. *połowa soku*  
half<sub>2</sub> juice.GEN  
'half of the juice'

On the other hand, *pół* has a more restricted distribution since it is incompatible with cumulative predicates such as plurals and mass nouns, see (4). Thus, it can only combine with regular count singulars and collective nouns.

- (4) Polish
- a. *pół jabłka*  
half<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN  
'half of the apple'
  - b. *pół stosu (jabłek)*  
half<sub>1</sub> pile.GEN apples.GEN  
'half of the pile (of apples)'
  - c. *#pół jabłek*  
half<sub>1</sub> apples.GEN  
Intended: 'half of the apples'
  - d. *#pół soku*  
half<sub>1</sub> juice.GEN  
Intended: 'half of the juice'

---

<sup>3</sup>In this section, I provide the examples with collective nouns only for the sake of completeness, i.e., in order to show the distributional difference between *pół* and *połówka*. In the remaining part of this chapter (except of §3.2.1), I will not investigate the interaction between partitives and collectives.

Notice that the constraint on the distribution of *pól* is not morpho-syntactic. The phrases in (5) show that it can felicitously combine with pluralia tantum. However, in such a case the whole partitive phrase gets a part-of-a-singularity interpretation. Specifically, (5a) cannot refer to 50% of the relevant utensils but only to a half of one pair of scissors. In a similar vein, (5b) involves the noun *bakalie* ‘dried fruit’ which is a pluralia tantum expression in Polish and as such it can either denote one piece of dried fruit or a plurality thereof. The half-word *pól* can combine with *bakalie* as long as it quantifies over material parts of a single foodstuff. For instance, it would be true of a half of a raisin but not of, say, five out of ten raisins.

- (5) Polish
- a. *pól nożyczek*  
half<sub>1</sub> scissors.GEN  
‘half of the scissors’
  - b. *pól bakalii*  
half<sub>1</sub> dried.fruit.GEN.PL  
‘half of the dried fruit’

Furthermore, the claim that *pól* is incompatible with mass nouns is somewhat imprecise and requires elaboration. In fact, when it can combine with mass terms, it enforces a mass-count shift via the Universal Packager (see, e.g., Bach 1986b; Jackendoff 1991; Landman 1991).<sup>4</sup> In other words, the phrases in (6) are only felicitous on the portion reading, i.e., (6a) would only be true of half a glass of juice whereas (6b) refers to half a pint of beer or some other standardized or contextually salient measure of volume. This shows that *pól* is sensitive to the semantics of embedded DPs in partitive constructions. In particular, cumulative predicates are disallowed because they denote scattered entities such as arbitrary sums or amorphous substances.

- (6) Polish
- a. *pól soku*  
half<sub>1</sub> juice.GEN  
‘half of the juice’
    - (i) #substance reading
    - (ii) portion reading

---

<sup>4</sup>Actually, this interpretation is also possible for some pluralia tantum. For instance, (5b) can refer to a half of a package of dried fruit.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

- b. pół piwa  
half<sub>1</sub> beer.GEN  
'half of the beer'
  - (i) #substance reading
  - (ii) portion reading

Finally, the distribution of the third Polish half-word, i.e., *połówka*, is even further constrained since it is compatible only with regular concrete singular nouns, as witnessed by the contrasts in (7). Prototypically, it takes nominals denoting solid objects one could easily cut or divide into separate parts such as food terms or building materials like bricks. Similarly to *pół*, it is distinctively odd with plurals and mass terms. Moreover, it does not work with collective nouns.

- (7) Polish
- a. połówka jabłka  
half<sub>3</sub> apple.GEN  
'half of the apple'
  - b. #połówka stosu (jabłek)  
half<sub>3</sub> pile.GEN apples.GEN  
Intended: 'half of the pile (of apples)'
  - c. #połówka jabłek  
half<sub>3</sub> apples.GEN  
Intended: 'half of the apples'
  - d. #połówka soku  
half<sub>3</sub> juice.GEN  
Intended: 'half of the juice'

The distributional facts concerning particular Polish half-words are summarized in Table 3.1. While the distribution of *połowa* is unconstrained, i.e., it can appear in all types of proportional partitives including entity, set, and mass partitives, the distributional potential of *pół* and *połówka* is significantly restricted in that neither of them can modify cumulative predicates such as plurals and mass terms, and thus they can only occur in entity partitives. The different distribution of particular expressions with respect to different types of nominals suggests distinct semantic properties of those lexical items. Given that the only type of nominals that is compatible with all the Polish half-words is singular count nouns, let us discuss in detail intuitions about the meanings of entity partitive phrases such as those in (3a), (4a), and (7a).

In order to do so, consider two different subdivisions of an entity, as depicted in Figure 3.1 and 3.2. In both cases, the dashed lines mark an area designating a

Table 3.1: Distribution of Polish half-words

	SINGULARS	COLLECTIVES	PLURALS	MASS NOUNS
połowa	✓	✓	✓	✓
pół	✓	✓	*	*
połówka	✓	*	*	*

portion of the apple that constitutes approximately 50% of the whole. However, there is a crucial difference between the two depicted situations in terms of the topological configuration of the stuff making up the halves. The part represented in Figure 3.1 constitutes a continuous half of the apple and as such it can be conceived of as a solid object in its own right within the whole, whereas Figure 3.2 illustrates just an arbitrary portion that is not contiguous, i.e., the apple stuff does not form an integrated part of the apple. In other words, the marked quantity in Figure 3.1 is an integrated part, whereas the portion in Figure 3.2 is not.

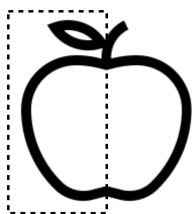


Figure 3.1: Continuous half

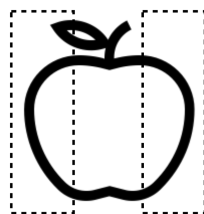


Figure 3.2: Discontinuous half

Let us now discuss possible extensions of proportional entity partitives involving *pół*, *połowa*, and *połówka*. The phrases in (3a) (with *połowa*) and (4a) (with *pół*) are true of both the object depicted in Figure 3.1 and the entity in Figure 3.2. Out of the blue, the continuous half reading is definitely the dominant one, however the discontinuous half interpretation can become salient in multiple contexts.<sup>5</sup> For instance, it gets extremely relevant in a cooking scenario where pragmatically halves might be considered in terms of volume rather than individuated parts. Crucially, the ambiguity is systematic in entity partitives involving both *połowa* and *pół* and the sentences in (8a) and (8b) are true both in a situation where the marked half in Figure 3.1 is red and when the designated portion in

<sup>5</sup>For most of the speakers I consulted the preferred reading of (3a) (with *połowa*) is as in Figure 3.1 though Figure 3.2 is also possible. This preference seems to be much weaker in the case of (4a) (with *pół*).

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

Figure 3.2 is red. Now, it is quite intriguing that the partitive construction in (7a) (with *połówka*) does not denote entities such as the one illustrated in Figure 3.2. Therefore, entity partitives with *połówka* refer only to continuous integrated halves of an object denoted by the downstairs DP. Consequently, the sentence in (8c) would be judged true if the part indicated in Figure 3.1 were red and false with respect to the portion in Figure 3.2.

- (8) Polish
- a. Pół jabłka jest czerwone.  
half<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN is red  
'Half the apple is red.'
  - b. Połowa jabłka jest czerwona.  
half<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN is red  
'Half the apple is red.'
  - c. Połówka jabłka jest czerwona.  
half<sub>3</sub> apple.GEN is red  
'A half of the apple is red.'

A similar phenomenon can be observed in object position. In the sentences in (9), the partitives appear as arguments of a verb of consumption and as such denote an incremental theme (see, e.g., Dowty 1991; Krifka 1998; Filip 1999; Rothstein 2003). Again, there is a contrast between (9a) and (9b), on the one hand, and (9c), on the other, in terms of truth conditions. The first two sentences denote weaker propositions since for them to be judged true it would be enough for Marysia to eat a quantity of the apple in question corresponding approximately to 50% of the apple's total volume. However, in many scenarios in which (9a) and (9b) would be true the sentence in (9c) would not. This is because the proportional partitive headed by *połówka* denotes a contiguous half, i.e., an integrated object within the whole as opposed to arbitrary portions of the apple mass. This stronger meaning results in that (9c) is true of a scenario such as the one illustrated in Figure 3.1 and false with respect to Figure 3.2.

- (9) Polish
- a. Marysia zjadła pół jabłka.  
Marysia ate half<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN  
'Marysia ate half the apple.'
  - b. Marysia zjadła połowę jabłka.  
Marysia ate half<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN  
'Marysia ate half the apple.'

- c. Marysia zjadła połówkę jabłka.  
 Marysia ate half<sub>3</sub> apple.GEN  
 ‘Marysia ate a half of the apple.’

Furthermore, analogously to *pół* proportional partitives involving *połówka* and pluralia tantum get a part-of-a-singularity reading. The phrases in (10a) and (10b) refer to halves of one object.<sup>6</sup> In addition, similarly to the previously discussed examples a part yielded as a result of subatomic quantification has to be integrated. Thus, (10a) and (10b) would be true of one scissor blade and, say, one continuous half of a raisin, respectively.

- (10) Polish
- a. %połówka nożyczek  
 half<sub>3</sub> scissors.GEN  
 ‘a scissors half’
- b. połówka bakalii  
 half<sub>3</sub> dried.fruit.GEN.PL  
 ‘a half of a dried fruit’

Given the non-trivial truth conditions of the sentence in (8c), let us consider several naturally occurring examples involving entity partitives headed by the half-word *połówka* from the National Corpus of Polish (NCP) (Przepiórkowski et al. 2012), as given in (11).

- (11) Polish (NCP)
- a. [...] zjadł [...] połówkę sztokfiszka.  
 he.ate half<sub>3</sub>.ACC dried.cod.GEN  
 ‘[...] he ate [...] a half of a dried cod.’
- b. [...] masz ochotę na [...] drink w połówce  
 you.have desire.ACC on cocktail.ACC in half<sub>3</sub>.LOC  
 kokosa?  
 coconut.GEN  
 ‘[...] would you like [...] a cocktail in a coconut half?’

<sup>6</sup>Some speakers report that (10a) is somewhat odd. I suspect that the reason is that scissors are not a kind of thing one normally divides into separate parts. My own intuition, however, is that though the phrase is certainly unusual, it is definitely interpretable and sounds absolutely natural in examples such as (i).

- (i) Polish  
 Ofiara została zaszytyetowana połówką nożyczek.  
 victim was stabbed half<sub>3</sub>.INS scissors.GEN  
 ‘The victim was stabbed with a half of scissors.’

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

- c. [...] jesteśmy jak te dwie połówki jajka.  
we.are like these two halves<sub>3</sub> egg.GEN  
‘[...] we’re like those two halves of an egg.’
- d. [...] połówki okna [...] trzasnęły o ścianę.  
halves<sub>3</sub> window.GEN banged about wall.ACC  
‘[...] the window halves [...] banged on a wall.’
- e. Otworzył portfel i wyjął [...] połówkę karty.  
he.opened wallet.ACC and he.took.out half<sub>3</sub>.ACC card.GEN  
‘He opened his wallet and took [...] a half of a card out of it.’

The first three examples in the sample, see (11a)–(11c), involve reference to food-stuffs. The sentence in (11a) would be true if the man in question consumed one half of a dried cod. Importantly, however, it would not be true in a situation where he ate, say, the tail and took some bites of the front left side and middle right side of the fish even if the total amount consumed equaled 50% of the whole issue. The man had to eat either the left side or the right side of the cod or alternatively the half starting from the head or the half starting from the tail. Likewise, the question in (11b) makes reference to a half of a coconut coming in one piece, i.e., one would feel deceived if after answering “yes” they got several pieces of a coconut shell filled with portions of a cocktail they ordered. On the other hand, the use of *połówka* in (11c) is somewhat metaphorical. The inference here is that the speaker asserts that they and the addressee are like two individuated halves of an egg that fit well together. Again, the halves need to be continuous parts one receives after a clear horizontal or vertical cut. Yet another example is provided in (11d). Here, however, the downstairs DP in the partitive does not refer to food but to a solid object of another type, i.e., a window consisting of two casements. The partitive phrase clearly implies that the halves in question are individuated and easily distinguishable parts, hence the casement window interpretation. Finally, the sentence in (11e) would be judged true only if the man in question took out a half of a card in one piece, i.e., it would necessarily be false if he took out several torn scraps of a card.

The discussion of (8c) as well as the attested examples from the National Corpus of Polish in (11) leave no doubt that *połówka* requires the referents of a partitive it occurs in to constitute an integrated part. Such a finding is quite remarkable and forces us to abandon the initial intuition that Polish half-words are semantically synonymous. The recapitulation of referential properties of explicit partitives involving the expressions in question is given in Table 3.2. The main contrast between less marked *połowa* and *pół*, on the one hand, and more marked *połówka*, on the other, lies in that the first two can designate discontinuous por-



### 3.1 Continuous and discontinuous parts

tions of stuff making up a whole, whereas the latter denotes only such divisions that constitute continuous, i.e., integrated, halves of an object.<sup>7</sup>

Table 3.2: Denotations of Polish half-words

	CONTINUOUS PART	DISCONTINUOUS PART
<i>połowa</i>	✓	✓
<i>pół</i>	✓	✓
<i>połówka</i>	✓	*

The novelty of the data introduced here is twofold. First of all, Polish half-words provide strong evidence that natural language is sensitive to the topological arrangement of parts of an entity. Second, the data imply that individuation is also possible at the subatomic level, i.e., quantification over parts in natural language reflects the fact that some parts might be assigned the status of an individual in its own right. In general, the distinction between different half-words in Polish can be described as follows. The least semantically marked expression *połowa* is topologically neutral, i.e., the spatial make-up of an entity denoted by the downstairs DP in a partitive is irrelevant as long as it constitutes approximately 50% of a whole. That is why *połowa* does not discriminate between count singulars, plurals, and mass terms, and can felicitously appear in entity, set, and mass partitives. It simply separates out a half of whatever entity it is applied to. Furthermore, in this case subatomic quantification does not encode any constraints on what kind of entity is yielded. Hence, the result might be either a scattered entity such as a plurality or a discontinuous portion of matter. On the other hand, *pół* and *połówka* are topologically sensitive. They both require a DP they combine with to denote an integrated object, i.e., a cohesive whole. That explains why they cannot co-occur with expressions referring to scattered entities such as arbitrary sums of individuals or portions of a substance as typically denoted by plurals and mass nouns. The difference between the two is that *pół* is similar to *połowa* in that it does not impose any topological constraints on the resulting entity, whereas *połówka* does. In other words, while *pół* selects for an

<sup>7</sup>According to many speakers, the semantics of *połówka* is even stronger and indicates a half that is both integrated and symmetrical (or maybe at least comparable with the other half in terms of shape), i.e., the result of splitting is an object roughly along a line (or plane) of symmetry. However, since intuitions seem to be very subtle and not all speakers I consulted agree with the strong symmetrical requirement, I leave this issue for careful psycholinguistic experimentation to be pursued in the future.

integrated object and returns either its continuous or discontinuous half, *połówka* yields an integrated half of an integrated whole.

### 3.1.2 Inherent vagueness

Similarly to other proportional quantifiers, expressions such as English *half* appear to be inherently vague. Though disregarded by prescriptive grammars as an oxymoron, the concept of a bigger and smaller half is present in lexicons of many languages, as attested in the English, German, and Polish examples in (12)–(14). Interestingly, such phrases cannot be explained as bleached expressions meaning simply something like *part*. For instance, for Polish speakers who would use or at least accept the NP in (14a), i.e., speakers who have not internalized the linguistic prescription in question, it would be definitely true of a part constituting 55% of a whole. However, it is unlikely that it would be judged true of 75% of a whole and intuitively it seems definitely false of 90% of a whole.

(12) English

- a. %bigger half
- b. %smaller half

(13) German

- a. %größere Hälfte  
bigger half  
'bigger half'
- b. %kleinere Hälfte  
smaller half  
'smaller half'

(14) Polish

- a. %większa połowa  
bigger half<sub>2</sub>  
'bigger half'
- b. %mniejsza połowa  
smaller half<sub>2</sub>  
'smaller half'

Given the possible interpretations discussed above, it seems plausible to assume that in natural language proportional quantifiers such as English *half* denote a relation of constituting approximately 50% share of a whole. In other words, their meaning is fuzzy in the sense that it allows for unequal parts as long as the disproportion falls within a particular range defined contextually.

## 3.2 More topology-sensitive partitive words

The observations made in §3.1 provide interesting evidence for certain semantic properties of natural language expressions that have not been recognized so far in the formal study of meaning. Nevertheless, a question might arise whether topological sensitivity is a marginal issue or whether it constitutes a broader phenomenon associated with a number of expressions in a language. Interestingly, it appears that half-words are not the sole category in Polish that displays the distinction between topological neutrality and topological sensitivity. In this section, I will examine more data from Polish partitive words indicating that the pattern is robust.

### 3.2.1 Quarter-words

Let us first consider the contrasts between two other proportional partitives involving what I will refer to as quarter-words *ćwierć* and *ćwiartka* ‘quarter’, as provided in (15). Analogously to *połówka*, see (1c), *ćwiartka* is a morphologically complex expression derived from *ćwierć* by the suffix *-k-*.

- (15) Polish
- a. *ćwierć-∅*  
root-inflectional.marker  
‘quarter<sub>1</sub>’
  - b. *ćwiart-k-a*  
root-derivational.suffix<sub>1</sub>-infl.marker  
‘quarter<sub>2</sub>’

In terms of agreement, similarly to the distinction between *pól* and *połówka*, see (2), *ćwierć* is neuter, whereas *ćwiartka* triggers feminine agreement on adjectives and pronouns, as demonstrated in (16).<sup>8</sup>

- (16) Polish
- a. To            czerwone    ćwierć            jabłka        zgniło.  
this.NOM.N red.NOM.SG.N quarter<sub>1</sub>.NOM.N apple.GEN.N rotted.SG.N  
‘This red quarter of the apple got spoiled.’
  - b. Ta            czerwona    ćwiartka        jabłka        zgniła.  
this.NOM.F red.NOM.SG.F quarter<sub>2</sub>.NOM.F apple.GEN.N rotted.SG.F  
‘This red quarter of the apple got spoiled.’

<sup>8</sup>Similarly to *pól*, some Polish speakers allow *ćwierć* to combine with the demonstrative *te* ‘these/this’ (see fn. 2 and Przepiórkowski 2006).

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

The distribution of *ćwierć* and *ćwiartka* mimics the pattern observed in the *pól* and *połówka* alternation, i.e., both quarter-words appear to be sensitive to the type of nominal they combine with, see (17) and (18), respectively. In particular, as witnessed by the infelicity of the phrases in (17c)–(17d) as well as (18c)–(18d) neither of them occurs in set and mass partitives and only *ćwierć* combines with collective nouns. Like *połówka*, *ćwiartka* typically combines with food terms or nominals denoting objects people usually cut into comparable pieces.

#### (17) Polish

- a. *ćwierć jabłka*  
quarter<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN  
'quarter of the apple'
- b. *ćwierć stosu (jabłek)*  
quarter<sub>1</sub> pile.GEN apples.GEN  
'quarter of the pile of apples'
- c. #*ćwierć jabłek*  
quarter<sub>1</sub> apples.GEN  
Intended: 'quarter of apples'
- d. #*ćwierć soku*  
quarter<sub>1</sub> juice.GEN  
Intended: 'quarter of juice'

#### (18) Polish

- a. *ćwiartka jabłka*  
quarter<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN  
'quarter of the apple'
- b. #*ćwiartka stosu (jabłek)*  
quarter<sub>2</sub> pile.GEN apples.GEN  
Intended: 'quarter of the pile (of apples)'
- c. #*ćwiartka jabłek*  
quarter<sub>2</sub> apples.GEN  
Intended: 'quarter of the apples'
- d. #*ćwiartka soku*  
quarter<sub>2</sub> juice.GEN  
Intended: 'quarter of the juice'

This kind of behavior can be contrasted with a regular fraction expression such as *jedna czwarta* 'one-fourth', see (19). Unlike quarter-words or the half-words *pól* and *połówka*, fractions show no distributional constraints and can freely combine both with quantized predicates involving count singulars and with collectives and cumulative predicates such as plural nouns and mass terms.

- (19) Polish
- a. jedna czwarta jabłka  
one-fourth apple.GEN  
'one-fourth of the apple'
  - b. jedna czwarta stosu (jabłek)  
one-fourth pile.GEN apples.GEN  
'one-fourth of the pile (of apples)'
  - c. jedna czwarta jabłek  
one-fourth apples.GEN  
'one-fourth of the apples'
  - d. jedna czwarta soku  
one-fourth juice.GEN  
'one-fourth of the juice'

Based on the distributional evidence, I posit that similarly to *pół* and *połówka* the quarter-words *ćwierć* and *ćwiartka* are topology-sensitive. Specifically, they quantify only over parts of integrated wholes. To put it differently, expressions having scattered entities such as arbitrary portions of matter or sums of individuals are disallowed as their input. On the other hand, fractions do not show such requirements and can yield a proportion of an entity of any kind. Table 3.3 summarizes the observations, namely the possibility of fraction entity, set, and mass partitives as opposed to the non-existence of proportional set and mass partitives headed by the quarter-words in Polish.

Table 3.3: Distribution of Polish quarter-words

	SINGULARS	COLLECTIVES	PLURALS	MASS NOUNS
jedna czwarta	✓	✓	✓	✓
ćwierć	✓	✓	*	*
ćwiartka	✓	*	*	*

Moreover, the pattern is further corroborated by the differences in truth conditions of sentences involving fraction partitives and proportional partitives headed by *ćwierć*, on the one hand, and proportional partitives headed by *ćwiartka*, on the other. Analogously to the distinction discussed with respect to half-words, see (8) and (9), there is a contrast in terms of possible verifications of (20a) and (20b), on the one hand, and (20c), on the other. The first two sentences are true if any proportion of the apple constituting approximately 25% of the

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

whole apple is red regardless of whether it forms a discontinuous or continuous part. On the other hand, (20c) would only be true if an integrated quarter of the surface of the apple were red, i.e., similarly to sentences involving *połówka* the partitive headed by *ćwiartka* would not be true of a discontinuous part.

(20) Polish

- a. Jedna czwarta jabłka jest czerwona.  
one-fourth apple.GEN is red  
'One-fourth of the apple is red.'
- b. Ćwierć jabłka jest czerwone.  
quarter<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN is red  
'A quarter of the apple is red.'
- c. Ćwiartka jabłka jest czerwona.  
quarter<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN is red  
'A quarter of the apple is red.'

Again, the same effect appears in object position. The incremental themes expressed by fraction partitives and proportional partitives with *ćwierć* can refer either to continuous or discontinuous entities. Hence, the sentences (21a) and (21b) would be true in a scenario where Marysia ate one piece of the apple as well as in a scenario where she took several unconnected bites constituting approximately 25% of the total volume. In contrast, (21c) requires the theme of the verb of consumption to be an integrated object, i.e., it would be judged false in the second scenario.

(21) Polish

- a. Marysia zjadła jedną czwartą jabłka.  
Marysia ate one-fourth apple.GEN  
'Marysia ate one-fourth of the apple.'
- b. Marysia zjadła ćwierć jabłka.  
Marysia ate quarter<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN  
'Marysia ate a quarter of the apple.'
- c. Marysia zjadła ćwiartkę jabłka.  
Marysia ate quarter<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN  
'Marysia ate a quarter of the apple.'

Furthermore, examples naturally occurring in the NCP seem to corroborate the intuitions described above. The sentences in (22a) and (22b) involve reference to foodstuffs. The first does not report that the best meal in the place in question consisted of, say, fried chicken strips, but rather that the portion of meat was

processed in one piece. In a similar vein, (22b) means that there was a continuous part of a baguette in a bag and not, e.g., several slices. Finally, (22c) would be judged as false if what slid out were some scraps of a paper sheet.

(22) Polish (NCP)

- a. Najlepsza tu kolacja: ćwiartka kurczaka [...]
  - best here dinner quarter<sub>2</sub> chicken
  - ‘The best dinner here was a quarter of a chicken [...].’
- b. Biorę [...] torebkę, w której leży ćwiartka [...] bagietki [...]
  - I.take bag.ACC in which.LOC lies quarter<sub>2</sub> baguette.GEN
  - ‘I’m taking a bag in which there is a quarter of a baguette [...].’
- c. Ze środka wysunęła się ćwiartka papieru.
  - from interior.GEN slided.out REFL quarter<sub>2</sub> paper.GEN
  - ‘A quarter of a paper sheet slided out from inside.’

The comparison of extensional properties of partitives involving fractions, *ćwierć*, and *ćwiartka* with regard to topological relations is given in Table 3.4. The results show the very same pattern as discussed with regard to Polish half-words, see Table 3.2.

Table 3.4: Denotations of Polish quarter-words

	CONTINUOUS PART	DISCONTINUOUS PART
jedna czwarta	✓	✓
ćwierć	✓	✓
ćwiartka	✓	*

The comparison of Polish quarter-words with fractions mirrors the pattern observed for the distinction between topology-neutral and topology-sensitive half-words summarized in Table 3.2. In the next section, I will discuss further evidence from partitive words.

### 3.2.2 Piece-words

Another class of expressions displaying topological sensitivity consists of piece-words. Polish distinguishes between two such expressions, namely *cząstka* and *kawałek* ‘piece’. The first is derived from the partitive word *część* ‘part’ by the suf-

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

fix *-k-*, compare (23a) and (23b), whereas the second appears to be a basic form.<sup>9</sup> Similarly to English *piece*, in many contexts *kawałek* and *częśćka* can be used interchangeably with the part-word *część* though the former is a more frequent expression than the latter.<sup>10</sup> Nonetheless, like in other Polish partitive words also in this case there are some interesting topological properties worth discussing.

- (23) Polish
- a. część-∅  
root-inflectional.marker  
'part'
  - b. część-k-a  
root-derivational.suffix-infl.marker  
'piece<sub>1</sub>'
  - c. kawałek-∅  
root-inflectional.marker  
'piece<sub>2</sub>'

The distribution of the two expressions in question shows that they both resist combining with plural DPs, see (24b) and (25b). Furthermore, the infelicity of phrases such as (24c) and (25c) suggests that both *kawałek* and *częśćka* impose the same topological restrictions on DPs they combine with as the partitive words *pół*, *połówka*, *ćwierć*, and *ćwiartka*, i.e., they disallow cumulative predicates denoting scattered entities.

- (24) Polish
- a. częśćka jabłka  
piece<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN  
'piece of an apple'
  - b. #częśćka jabłek  
piece<sub>1</sub> apples.GEN  
Intended: 'piece of apples'
  - c. #częśćka soku  
piece<sub>1</sub> juice.GEN  
Intended: 'piece of juice'

---

<sup>9</sup>In fact, *kawałek* is also morphologically complex and from a diachronic point of view it has been formed from *kawał* 'large share'. However, from the perspective of contemporary Polish, the relationship between the two is rather obscure and since the latter is semantically marked, it appears as if it were actually derived by means of the deletion of *-ek-* from the first. This seems to be further corroborated by the fact that it is only possible to derive verbs from *kawałek* and not from *kawał*, e.g., *kawałkować* 'to portion' ~ \**kawałować*.

<sup>10</sup>Another meaning of the noun *częśćka* is 'physical particle, corpuscule'. This meaning, however, will not be discussed here.



- (25) Polish
- a. *kawałek jabłka*  
piece<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN  
'piece of an apple'
  - b. #*kawałek jabłek*  
piece<sub>2</sub> apples.GEN  
Intended: 'piece of apples'
  - c. #*kawałek soku*  
piece<sub>2</sub> juice.GEN  
Intended: 'piece of juice'

Nevertheless, under closer inspection it turns out that in fact the piece-word *kawałek* is not incompatible with all mass nouns but rather only with one particular class of such expressions. As witnessed in (26), mass partitives headed by *kawałek* are possible as long as the downstairs DP does not involve a liquid term, see (26a).<sup>11</sup> In particular, *kawałek* can felicitously combine with mass expressions denoting solid substances as well as granular and artifactual aggregates.<sup>12</sup>

- (26) Polish
- a. #*kawałek wody*  
piece<sub>2</sub> water.GEN  
Intended: 'piece of water'
  - b. *kawałek złota*  
piece<sub>2</sub> gold.GEN  
'piece of gold'
  - c. *kawałek żwiru*  
piece<sub>2</sub> gravel.GEN  
'piece of gravel'
  - d. *kawałek obuwia*  
piece<sub>2</sub> footwear.GEN  
'piece of an item of footwear'

Interestingly, the partitive in (26b) does not simply refer to any portion of gold but rather to an integrated (though most probably amorphous) lump, i.e., to a nugget. Likewise, the phrases in (26c) and (26d) have contiguous entities in their

<sup>11</sup>Gas terms are also infelicitous.

<sup>12</sup>Although examples such as (26c) and (26d) are not frequent and seem quite unusual, they are definitely interpretable and the intuitions regarding their meaning are clear. Notice also that a similar pattern is observed with respect to German *Stück* 'piece' as well as the diminutive forms such as *Stückchen* and *Stückerl* (Nina Haslinger, p.c.).

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

extension. Granular mass terms denote aggregates of objects such as grains of rice or granules of gravel that seem too small or not significant enough to be perceived as individuals in their own right (Grimm 2012b; Sutton & Filip 2016b). Instead, they are conceptualized as clusters of elements. As is well-known, those elements cannot be accessed by regular quantificational expressions such as distributive quantifiers or cardinal numerals, hence the possibility for granular concepts to be lexicalized as mass. However, the piece-word *kawałek* in (26c) can access the part-whole structure of the granular and designate a single granule, i.e., a piece of gravel.

Similarly, object mass nouns refer to stable discrete entities such as pieces of furniture or items of tableware (Gillon 1992; Chierchia 1998a; 2010; Barner & Snedeker 2005; Bale & Barner 2009; Rothstein 2010; Landman 2011). Despite their denotations, object mass nouns are uncountable, i.e., do not allow for quantification over individual objects they refer to. However, *kawałek* yet again can reach the part-whole structure of an aggregate. Even more interestingly, it can quantify over parts of such discrete objects and trigger subatomic quantification, i.e., quantification over parts of a single item. As a result, (26d) can be interpreted as referring to a piece of a shoe. Admittedly, this effect appears to be marginal. However, it can be observed, e.g., in the attested fragment of discourse in (27), where the phrase *kawałek obuwia* ‘piece of an item of footwear’ refers back to the noun *obcas* ‘heel’ showing clearly that the part-of-a-singularity interpretation is intended.<sup>13</sup>

- (27) Polish (Internet)  
Ale najpierw, oddaj [obcas]<sub>i</sub>. – Wyciągnął po niego  
but first give.back.IMP heel.ACC he.pulled.out for it.ACC  
rękę. Blondynka przełknęła cicho ślinę i wyciągnęła  
hand.ACC blonde.woman swallowed silently saliva.ACC and pulled.out  
[kawałek obuwia]<sub>i</sub> z rękawa [...]  
piece.ACC footwear.GEN from sleeve.GEN  
“‘But first, give me back the heel.’ He reached out for it. The blonde gulped  
silently and pulled out the piece of an item of footwear from her sleeve  
[...].”

The findings concerning the distribution of Polish piece-words in comparison to the part-word *część* are summarized in Table 3.5. Both *część* and *kawałek* have a selectional restriction prohibiting them from combining with expressions

<sup>13</sup>Source (accessed on 10th November 2020): <https://www.wattpad.com/525823126-troubles-up-your-sleeve-bellamy-blake-2-rozdzia%C5%82-2>.

### 3.2 More topology-sensitive partitive words

denoting arbitrary sums of individuals, i.e., plurals. However, the main difference concerns the distribution with uncountable nouns. Unlike *cząstka* which is generally incompatible with mass terms, *kawałek* is sensitive to the properties of referents of a particular uncountable noun. In particular, it seems to require a certain stability of form so that parts singled out from a whole can sustain a fixed constant shape. In other words, *kawałek* accepts entities displaying any kind of topological arrangement as long as it guarantees that the spatial form of pieces is relatively stable. This way it rejects liquid terms but can combine with expressions denoting solid substances, granular aggregates as well as artifacts, i.e., discrete entities related in terms of similar origin and functionality.

Table 3.5: Distribution of Polish piece-words

	SINGULARS	PLURALS	MASS NOUNS	
			liquids	others
<i>część</i>	✓	✓	✓	✓
<i>cząstka</i>	✓	*	*	*
<i>kawałek</i>	✓	*	*	✓

Another issue concerns the internal structure of objects denoted by partitives headed by piece-words. As provided in Table 3.6, analogously to the partitive words *połówka* and *ćwiartka*, both *cząstka* and *kawałek* yield parts that can be recognized as contiguous integrated entities within a whole. This contrasts with the standard part-word *część* which just like, e.g., the half-word *połowa*, can deliver both continuous and scattered parts. What is especially interesting about *kawałek* is that unlike *połówka* and *ćwiartka* it does not require the whole to be an integrated object. As long as it is not an arbitrary sum of individuals or a constantly deforming substance, *kawałek* yields a portion of the whole that is one piece.

Table 3.6: Denotations of Polish piece-words

	CONTINUOUS PART	DISCONTINUOUS PART
<i>część</i>	✓	✓
<i>cząstka</i>	✓	*
<i>kawałek</i>	✓	*

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

The properties of the piece-word *kawalek* seem to relate to the scale of individuation proposed by Grimm (2012b). However, there seems to be an interesting discrepancy. In Grimm's original proposal, see (28), liquids and solid substances are grouped together with no ordering relation between them, i.e., *water* falls into the same category as *gold*.

- (28) Fragment of the scale of individuation (Grimm 2012b: p. 80; adapted)  
liquid/solid substance < granular aggregate < artifactual aggregate...

Yet the data concerning the distribution of the Polish piece-word *kawalek* seem to suggest that an even more fine-grained distinction might be necessary to account for some grammatical phenomena in natural language. Since partitive phrases headed by *kawalek* can only denote stable objects that come in one piece and are able to sustain their shape, they cannot combine with liquid terms such as *water* simply because fluids continually deform, i.e., lack a given shape. Thus, it is possible that distinguishing between liquids and solid substances in terms of ordering on the scale of individuation, as proposed in (29), might appear to be required.<sup>14</sup>

- (29) Modified fragment of the scale of individuation  
liquid < solid substance < granular aggregate < artifactual aggregate...

Before we move on to discussing how the interplay of quantification and topology looks like from a cross-linguistic perspective and whether other languages can shed new light on the issues related to this phenomenon, let us briefly discuss the somewhat surprising fact that mass partitives are countable. In the next section, I will consider the relationship between substances and portions thereof.

### 3.3 Mass, parts, quantities, and pieces

One of the very few attempts to link the issue of countability with partitivity and pseudo-partitivity (see, e.g., Selkirk 1977; Koptjevskaja-Tamm 2001) has been pursued in Chierchia (2010), who raises an interesting question concerning how it can be that one cannot count mass, whereas portions of mass are countable.<sup>15</sup>

---

<sup>14</sup>It would be an interesting enterprise to explore whether there are more natural language expressions sensitive to the distinction between liquid and solid substance terms and if so whether that fact provides any interesting insights into the semantics of mass nouns. However, such a research project lies far beyond the scope of this study (for a discussion of related psychological evidence that infants can discriminate between solid objects and amorphous substances, see §5.1.1).

<sup>15</sup>See also Khrizman et al. (2015) and Landman (2016) for related considerations.

Specifically, how come expressions such as (30a) and (30b) can have a different status with respect to the mass/count distinction and yet refer to the very same entity.

- (30) English (Chierchia 2010; adapted)
- a. That water is contaminated.
  - b. Those three quantities of water are contaminated.

Chierchia examines English relational expressions such as *quantity*, *part*, and *piece* in partitive and pseudo-partitive constructions such as those in (31)–(33) and observes a number of differences in their distribution.<sup>16</sup>

- (31) English (Chierchia 2010; adapted)

- a. (?)a quantity of that person
- b. a quantity of apples
- c. two quantities of gold

- (32) English (Chierchia 2010; adapted)

- a. a part of that person
- b. #a part of apples
- c. #a part of gold

- (33) English (Chierchia 2010; adapted)

- a. a piece of that pizza
- b. #a piece of apples
- c. a piece of gold

Though *quantity* is slightly degraded with singular count nouns in entity partitives such as (31a), it combines felicitously with bare plurals and mass terms, see (31b) and (31c), respectively. On the other hand, as we have already seen in §2.2.2, the English expression *a part of* is incompatible with bare plurals, illustrated here by (32b). Moreover, it fails to take bare mass nouns as its complements, see (32c). Finally, *piece* seems to fall somewhere in between the two categories since it can head partitives involving singular definite DPs like (33a) and bare mass nouns, as in (33c), but cannot combine with bare plurals, see (33b).

Chierchia analyzes *quantity*, *part*, and *piece* in terms of partitions imposing relative atomicity and non-overlap of members and attributes their selectional

---

<sup>16</sup>A pseudo-partitive (sometimes called a quantitative), e.g., *a piece of cake*, differs from a partitive, e.g., *a piece of that cake*, in that it does not indicate a part or a subset of an entity or a set, but rather it simply denotes either an amount of something or the number of members in a set.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

restrictions to the input requirements of the functions denoted by these expressions. Specifically, while *quantity* is defined over properties of sums of entities, *part* is defined over singular individuals and *piece* displays a hybrid behavior.<sup>17</sup> Although this approach is definitely thought-provoking, it seems that it misses an important point regarding the contrast between the expressions in question for at least two reasons. First, it neglects the role of topological sensitivity, as discussed above. But it also seems to ignore the distinction between counting and measuring (see, e.g., Rothstein 2009; 2010; 2011; 2017; Partee & Borschev 2012; Khrizman et al. 2015; Landman 2016). Intuitively, the difference between the two operations is that while counting is about specifying how many discrete objects of a certain kind there are, measuring determines some quantity in relevant units. To foreshadow, I will argue that counting is sensitive to topological characteristics such as being conceptualized as an integrated object, whereas measuring is not.<sup>18</sup>

For a start, let us consider the count partitives in (34a) and (34b).<sup>19</sup>

- (34) English (Chierchia 2010; adapted)
- a. two quantities of that pizza
  - b. two parts of that rice

It seems that what happens in both cases is that at a certain level of the semantic derivation some sort of quantification in terms of volume is involved. The resulting measure is then subject to a shift that returns a count interpretation. In the literature, a number of operations that relate mass and count denotations have been proposed. For instance, one possibility is that the singular count noun *pizza* in (34a) is shifted to the mass interpretation via the Universal Grinder (Pelletier 1975) or a similar operation and then the partitive word designates some amount of the mass before the entire phrase is shifted to a count denotation. Alternatively, the portion interpretation is derived via the measure interpretation by a special operator applied to the meaning of the partitive word (Khrizman et al. 2015). Likewise, the part-word in (34b) could be paraphrased as *portion* or *proportion* and it essentially designates a particular volume of the rice in question.

Why is the distinction between counting and measuring of any significance here? Intuitively, quantities are about volume, pieces involve some form of individuation, i.e., are conceived of as independent objects, and parts can shift

---

<sup>17</sup>I will return to Chierchia's proposal in §7.1.

<sup>18</sup>I will discuss the distinction between the two operations in detail in §5.2.2.

<sup>19</sup>Notice that a reviewer finds (34b) a bit awkward to interpret. Here, I ignore possible inter-speaker variation and simply discuss the data, as reported by Chierchia.

between these two aspects of quantification. However, to address this question more properly, let us consider the difference between the Polish part-word *część* and piece-word *kawałek*. Similarly to multiple other languages, Polish does not allow mass terms to combine with cardinal numerals (modulo coercion), see (35).

- (35) Polish
- a. #dwa złota  
two golds  
Intended: ‘two golds’
  - b. #dwa ryże  
two rices  
Intended: ‘two rices’

Interestingly, though, as witnessed in (36), mass partitives headed by *część* are countable. In this case, the part-word gets a proportion interpretation, i.e., it measures the extension of the mass noun in terms of volume and indicates that the total volume is perceived as consisting of disjoint roughly equal sized quantities. For instance, the phrase in (36a) designates two out of some number of more or less equally large amounts the total quantity of gold was divided into, irrespective of the size and shape of individual pieces of gold. Analogously, (36b) indicates two comparable amounts out of the total amount of gravel.

- (36) Polish
- a. dwie części złota  
two parts gold.GEN  
‘two parts of the gold’
  - b. dwie części żwiru  
two parts gravel.GEN  
‘two parts of the gravel’

On the other hand, the minimal pair examples involving the piece-word *kawałek* in (37) lack the proportion reading, which suggests that the meaning of this expression does not merely concern quantification in terms of volume but rather it serves as a basis for counting individuated solid objects. Neither (37a) nor (37b) can get the volume interpretations available for (36a) and (36b), respectively. They can only denote pluralities of pieces, i.e., solid integrated parts, of gold and gravel, respectively.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

(37) Polish

- a. dwa kawałki złota  
two pieces<sub>2</sub> gold.GEN  
'two pieces of gold'  
(i) quantification in terms of objects  
(ii) #quantification in terms of volume
- b. dwa kawałki żwiru  
two pieces<sub>2</sub> gravel.GEN  
'two pieces of gravel'  
(i) quantification in terms of objects  
(ii) #quantification in terms of volume

To better illustrate the contrast, let us consider several natural sentences. Proportion uses of part-words are especially frequent in recipes and other cooking-related contexts. For instance, consider the examples in (38), which are constructed based on typical recipes. Both in (38a) and (38b), the count explicit partitives make reference to a particular volume of water and rice, respectively.

(38) Polish

- a. Dolej do garnka dwie części wody, a w  
you.pour.IMP to pot.GEN two.ACC parts.ACC water.GEN and in  
trzeciej namocz fasolę.  
third.LOC you.soak.IMP bean.ACC  
'Add two thirds of the water to the pot and soak the beans in the third part.'
- b. Wymieszaj kaszę w proporcji 2:1, to znaczy  
you.mix.IMP porridge.ACC in proportion.LOC 2:1 this means  
dwie części ryżu na jedną część prosa.  
two.ACC parts.ACC rice.GEN on one.ACC part.ACC millet.GEN  
'Mix the porridge in the 2:1 ratio, which means two parts of rice for one part of millet.'

A similar effect can be observed in count partitives with plural nouns. For instance, consider the contrast in (39).

(39) Polish

- a. Dwie części jabłek rozłóż równomiernie na  
two.ACC parts.ACC apples.GEN you.put.IMP evenly on  
blasze do pieczenia, a pozostałą część rozmiksuj.  
tray.LOC to baking.GEN and remaining.ACC part.ACC you.blend.IMP  
'Put two thirds of the apples evenly on the baking tray and blend the remaining part.'



- b. Dwa kawalki jabłek rozłóż równomiernie na  
two.ACC pieces.ACC apples.GEN you.put.IMP evenly on  
blasze do pieczenia, a pozostały kawałek  
tray.LOC to baking.GEN and remaining.ACC piece.ACC  
rozmiksuj.  
you.blend.IMP  
'Put two apple pieces evenly on the baking tray and blend the re-  
maining piece.'
- (i) quantification in terms of objects  
(ii) #quantification in terms of volume

The count plural *jabłka* 'apples' in (39a) is shifted to the mass denotation and the part-word *część* quantifies over proportions of the apple mass making up the relevant apples and not over the apples as separate individuated objects. Whether the ingredients in question are stored as wholes or are cut into pieces plays no role for the truth conditions of the sentences in question. Consequently, if in response to (39a) one apple was put on the baking tray and one half of an apple was blended or, alternatively, four apples were put on the baking tray and two apples were blended, the instruction would be followed correctly. Crucially, however, if we swap the part-word *część* in (39a) for the piece-word *kawałek*, we get a significant contrast. Specifically, the sentence in (39b) cannot get a proportion reading, i.e., it cannot be understood as instructing one to put four apples on the baking tray and to blend the remaining two. Instead, it says you should put two integrated parts of different apples on the baking tray as well as blend one such part. Therefore, while the proportion interpretation of explicit partitives such as (36) involves quantification in terms of volume along with the similarity in size restriction, piece-words do not trigger such a constraint.

In fact, English also allows for a proportion use of *part* in numeral noun constructions when describing ratios, as in (40).<sup>20</sup> This use is most natural with mass nouns, see (40a), but it seems to work with plural count nouns too, as attested in (40b).

- (40) English (Peter Sutton, p.c.)
- a. The ideal G&T is four parts tonic to one part gin.  
b. Potatoes constituted the core of the recipe, which required two parts of potatoes for every one of barley with dried peas.

<sup>20</sup>The example in (40b) comes from a book by Rebecca Earle *Feeding the people: The politics of the potato* (p. 93) accessed via Google. Source (accessed on 10th November 2020): <https://books.google.cz/books?id=WxzhDwAAQBAJ>.

At this point, a preliminary conclusion can be drawn. The structure of parts can be such that it is merely a scattered entity, an unconnected configuration of bits related merely by virtue of belonging to the same whole. However, some parts are arranged in such a manner that they form a spatially contiguous entity that can be conceptualized as an individual in its own right. It appears that natural language is sensitive to this contrast and the Polish data show that this semantic distinction can be encoded formally in the lexicon. Although not every partitive word imposes topological restrictions regarding the spatial form of a portion of an entity the whole partitive construction denotes, there are some that do. Furthermore, it appears that counting and measuring differ with respect to topological properties of quantified entities. While the former operation requires integrated objects, the latter does not.

The facts discussed above suggest that accounts that neglect the distinction in question most probably miss something crucial about how we humans conceptualize part-whole structures and how it relates to the phenomenon of countability in grammar. In the next section, I will inspect cross-linguistic evidence that further corroborates this claim.

## 3.4 Cross-linguistic parallels

Polish gives important insight into the role of topological notions in quantification over wholes and parts. However, one could wonder to what extent the semantic behavior of proportional partitives discussed above is a Polish idiosyncrasy. In this section, I will discuss cross-linguistic evidence suggesting that topology-sensitive expressions are a relatively widespread phenomenon in partitive constructions though not necessarily expressed by distinct lexical items. For instance, my informants report that the English sentences in (41a) and (41b) have different truth conditions. While the former is simply true in a scenario where 50% of an apple was eaten by Mary, the meaning of the latter is stronger since it is true only if Mary ate a continuous half of an apple such as the one depicted in Figure 3.1.

- (41) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)
- a. Mary ate half an apple.
  - b. Mary ate a half of an apple.

However, the semantic difference between (41a) and (41b) is very slight and in multiple contexts it might be extremely hard to detect. Therefore, before we discuss data from English, German, Dutch, Brazilian Portuguese, and Mandarin, let

us briefly elaborate on the method developed to tell an integrated-part and a scattered-part reading apart. For the sake of clarity, I will limit the discussion of subatomic topological sensitivity to proportional partitives involving half-words.

Since topological aspects of partitivity can be very subtle and intuitions in this respect tend to be somewhat obscure, in order to develop a proper diagnostic to detect topology-sensitive partitive expressions it seems necessary to come up with plain test objects readily divisible into comparable continuous and discontinuous parts differentiated by easily distinguishable properties. For instance, consider the flag test, as represented in Figure 3.3 and 3.4. The Maltese-like flag in Figure 3.3 consists of two continuous areas each constituting 50% of the flag's surface. It is easy to distinguish between the halves since the left one is red whereas the right one is white. Therefore, the spatial arrangement of the parts fit what I will call an AB pattern. On the other hand, the red area in the Canadian-like flag illustrated in Figure 3.4 is discontinuous, i.e., it does not constitute an integrated half. I will call such an arrangement an ABA pattern.

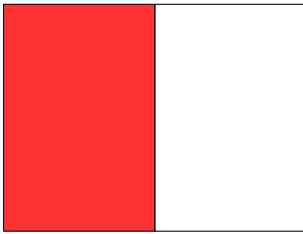


Figure 3.3: Flag AB

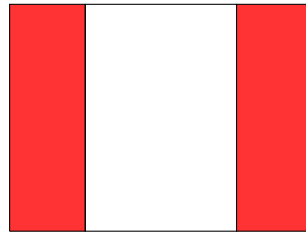


Figure 3.4: Flag ABA

As we saw in the previous sections, Polish encodes topological sensitivity lexically by differentiating between distinct partitive words. As in Polish, Brazilian Portuguese distinguishes between distinct half-words, namely *metade* and *meio* 'half'. The former has nominal features and takes the partitive *da*-phrase, whereas the latter is an adjectival expression agreeing with a modified noun in number and gender. Interestingly, similarly to Polish half-words *metade* and *meio* differ with respect to both their distributional and referential properties.

Let us first consider the difference in the distribution of the two Brazilian Portuguese partitive expressions. While *metade* patterns with *połowa* in not being picky about the type of predicate within the *da*-phrase it can combine with, see (42), *meio* appears to correspond to *pól* and *połówka*.

(42) Brazilian Portuguese (Muriel Assmann, p.c.)

- a. *metade da maçã*  
 half<sub>1</sub> the.SG.F apple.F  
 'half of the apple'

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

- b. metade das maçãs  
half<sub>1</sub> the.PL.F apples.F  
'half of the apples'
- c. metade do suco  
half<sub>1</sub> the.SG.M juice.M  
'half of the juice'

As demonstrated in (43c), *meio* cannot form a partitive with a mass term. Moreover, when combined with a plural noun it lacks a half-of-a-plurality reading, i.e., it cannot be interpreted as a quantifier over individuals making up the denoted plurality. Instead it can only operate on the subatomic level of particular members of the plurality denoted by a modified noun, i.e., it gets a half-of-a-singularity interpretation exclusively. In other words, *meio* can only occur in an entity partitive and not in a set partitive. For instance, (43b) cannot refer to a half of the total number of apples. The only interpretation available regards a plurality of apple halves.

- (43) Brazilian Portuguese (Muriel Assmann, p.c.)
- a. meia maçã  
half<sub>2</sub>.SG.F apple.F  
'half of the apple'
  - b. meias maçãs  
half<sub>2</sub>.PL.F apples.F  
'apple halves'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading
  - c. #meio suco  
half<sub>2</sub>.SG.M juice.M  
Intended: 'half of the juice'

It seems plausible to posit that the contrasts between the phrases in (42) and (43) follow from topological restrictions imposed by *meio* and *metade* on what they select, analogously to the distinction between Polish *pól* and *połowka*, on the one hand, and *połowa*, on the other. In other words, the nominal half-word *metade* is topology-neutral, and thus can combine with DPs that denote integrated objects as well as those that have scattered entities in their extensions. On the other hand, adjectival *meio* appears to be sensitive to the type of topological relations holding between parts of the referents of NPs it modifies. In particular, it requires integrated wholes. From a syntactic perspective, *meio* as a nominal modifier sits lower in the structure than *metade* which takes the whole DP as its complement. In other words, *meio* is an adjective that is merged with the NP. Assuming that

the NumP is higher than the AP (e.g., Ritter 1991; 1992), this might explain scopal properties of *meio* when it comes to subatomic quantification with respect to regular plurals, i.e., why (43b) denotes a plurality of halves rather than half of a plurality. However, *meio* can also combine with lexical plurals such as pluralia tantum, see (44), and it has been argued that the plural in lexical plurals is significantly lower, i.e., inside the *nP* (see, e.g., Acquaviva 2008; Alexiadou 2011; Smith 2015; 2017).

- (44) Brazilian Portuguese (Muriel Assmann, p.c.)  
*meio óculos*  
 half<sub>2.M</sub> eye-glasses.M  
 ‘half of a pair of eye-glasses’ or  
 ‘halves of eye-glasses’
- a. part-of-a-singularity reading
  - b. #part-of-a-plurality reading

Notice that (44) gets a similar interpretation as the phrase in (43b), i.e., denotes a plurality of halves or rather, due to the number-neutrality of *óculos* ‘eye-glasses’, either a plurality of halves or one half of an object. I argue that this fact alongside the infelicity of phrases where *meio* modifies mass terms, see (43c), supports the semantic explanation of the observed behavior in terms of topological sensitivity.

Even more interestingly, the results of the flag test show that *meio* in fact patterns with Polish *połowka*. As reported by my informant, the sentence with the proportional partitive with *metade* in (45a) is true both in the flag AB scenario, see Figure 3.3, and in the flag ABA scenario, see Figure 3.4. However, the sentence involving (45b) is judged true only in the former case and false in the latter. This means that *metade* does not impose any topological restrictions on the portion of an entity denoted by the downstairs DP, whereas *meio* yields only integrated parts.

- (45) Brazilian Portuguese (Muriel Assmann, p.c.)
- a. *Metade da bandeira é vermelha.*  
 half<sub>1</sub> the flag is red  
 ‘Half the flag is red.’
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) ABA
  - b. *Meia bandeira é vermelha.*  
 half<sub>2</sub> flag is red  
 ‘A half of the flag is red.’
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) #ABA

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

A similar pattern is attested in Dutch where the distinction between the nominal expression *helft* ‘half’, on the one hand, see (46a), and adjectival *half* ‘half’, on the other, see (46b), is used in order to indicate the discussed contrast.

- (46) Dutch (Erlinde Meertens, Izabela Jordanoska, p.c.)
- a. De *helft* van de vlag is rood.  
the half<sub>1</sub> of the flag is red  
‘Half the flag is red.’
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) ABA
  - b. De *halve* vlag is rood.  
the half<sub>2</sub> flag is red  
‘A half of the flag is red.’
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) #ABA

The half-word *helft* forms a standard proportional entity partitive by combining with the prepositional *van*-phrase which takes a singular DP as its complement (de Hoop 1997; 2003; see also Cleven 2013: pp. 16–18). On the other hand, Dutch *half* resembles *meio* in that it shows agreement with the modified NP. The suffix *-e* on *half* shows up when the noun is either definite or common gender, or both, as in the case of (46b), where it is spelled as *halve*. As in the Brazilian Portuguese example, the flag test shows that *helft* licenses both a continuous-half and a discontinuous-half interpretation, whereas adjectival *half/halve* disallows the latter reading. In other words, while the sentence in (46a) is reported to be true of both Figure 3.3 and 3.4, (46b) is judged false in the ABA flag scenario. This fact strongly suggests that Dutch lexicalized the distinction between topologically neutral and topologically sensitive partitive words. While *helft* is similar to Polish *połowa* or Brazilian Portuguese *metade* in that it simply returns an entity constituting 50% of a whole, truth conditions imposed by *half/halve* are stronger, i.e., the partitive yields a half that needs to be integrated.

It turns out that, as in Polish, Brazilian Portuguese and Dutch distinguish between topology-neutral and topology-sensitive half-words lexically. However, it is not the only way the distinction can be encoded in natural language. Thus, let us now consider a few strategies languages use to differentiate between the two partitive meanings in question that I identified in this chapter. Interestingly, different structures give rise to similar semantic effects concerning topological relations in subatomic quantification. The sample discussed here is relatively small, but the discussed data suggest that the observed semantic phenomenon is systematic and cross-linguistically valid.

Let us start with the syntactic distinction occurring in English, as already mentioned in (41). From a morphological point of view there is no contrast between the partitive word *half* in (47a) and (47b). Nevertheless, the syntactic structures in which it appears in each of the two sentences significantly differ (see Vannestål 2004 for discussion).

- (47) English (Jonathan Bobaljik, Jeffrey Parrott, p.c.)
- a. Half the flag is red.
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) ABA
  - b. A half of the flag is red.
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) #ABA

In (47a), *half* is a predeterminer since it can occur before regular determiners such as articles and demonstratives (Quirk et al. 1985: pp. 257–258). On the other hand, in (47b) *half* forms a standard proportional entity partitive by taking the *of*-phrase with a singular DP as its complement. In this environment it seems to have nominal properties since it can be preceded by a determiner and it allows for numeral and adjectival modification (Huddleston & Pullum 2002: p. 434). The syntactic distinction translates into a semantic difference. Specifically, the sentence in (47a) is considered appropriate with respect to both the AB and ABA flag in Figure 3.3 and 3.4, respectively, whereas (47b) would be judged true only in the first scenario.<sup>21</sup> The contrast shows the relevance of topology in subatomic quantification even in the absence of distinct lexical items differentiating between a continuous-part and a discontinuous-part interpretation. In other words, it appears that natural language can employ purely syntactic means in order to indicate the notion of topological integrity of parts. Notice that the half-word in (47b) is preceded by the article. Superficially, the distinction between *half* and *a half of* resembles to some extent the contrast between the *part*-expressions *part of* and *a part of*. The appearance of the indefinite article suggests that the latter should be treated on a par with count nominals and countability seems to imply spatial integrity.

Another strategy is employed in German. At first blush, it might appear to pattern with Brazilian Portuguese and Dutch since it also distinguishes between the nominal half-word *Hälfte* ‘half’ and adjectival *halb* ‘half’. However, German half-words display non-trivial interactions with determiners. While *Hälfte* with

<sup>21</sup>A reviewer comments that they prefer *one half of the flag* over *a half of the flag* in this context. Though this raises an interesting question concerning interspeaker and/or dialectal variation, I ignore this issue here and simply report on my informants’ judgments.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

the definite article *die* shows similar behavior with respect to count singulars, plurals, and mass terms as Brazilian Portuguese *metade*, see (48), it is infelicitous with mass nouns when preceded by indefinite *eine*, see (49).

- (48) German (Berit Gehrke, p.c.)
- a. die Hälfte des Apfels  
the half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN apple.GEN  
'half of the apple'
  - b. die Hälfte der Äpfel  
the half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN apples.GEN  
'half of the apples'
  - c. die Hälfte des Saftes  
the half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN juice.GEN  
'half of the juice'

- (49) German (Berit Gehrke, p.c.)
- a. eine Hälfte des Apfels  
a half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN apple.GEN  
'a half of the apple'
  - b. eine Hälfte der Äpfel  
a half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN apples.GEN  
'half of the apples'
  - c. #eine Hälfte des Saftes  
a half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN juice.GEN  
Intended: 'half of the juice'

On the other hand, definite DPs with adjectival *halb* differ from Brazilian Portuguese phrases with *meio* in that they can combine felicitously with all the types of expressions in question including mass nouns, see (50). However, when preceded by the definite article, *halb* is odd with mass nouns, and thus patterns with *meio*, see (51).

- (50) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. der halbe Apfel  
the.SG.M half<sub>2</sub>.SG.M apple.M  
'the apple half'
  - b. die halben Äpfel  
the.PL half<sub>2</sub>.PL apples  
'the apple halves'
    - (i) part-of-a-singularity reading
    - (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading



- c. der halbe Saft  
 the.SG.M half<sub>2</sub>.SG.M juice.M  
 ‘half of the juice’
- (51) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. ein halber Apfel  
 a.SG.M half<sub>2</sub>.SG.M apple.M  
 ‘apple half’
- b. halbe Äpfel  
 half<sub>2</sub>.PL apples  
 ‘apple halves’  
 (i) part-of-a-singularity reading  
 (ii) #part-of-a-plurality reading
- c. #halber Saft  
 half<sub>2</sub>.SG.M juice.M  
 Intended: ‘half of the juice’

In addition, the examples with the definite article in (50) seem to also have an additional expressive intensifier reading of the sort ‘all those apples’. For instance, it would be appropriate when half of the apples were splattered across the street and the speaker were expressive about this situation (somewhat like *totally*).<sup>22</sup>

The facts discussed above suggest that whether *Hälfte* and *halb* are sensitive to the spatial constitution of referents of the NP they attach to depends on the determiner. In particular, their selectional restrictions suggest that German definite DPs with half-words are topology-neutral, whereas their indefinite counterparts are topology-sensitive. The results of the flag test seem to support that idea. As witnessed in (52a) and (52b), sentences with definite DPs involving *Hälfte* and *halb* are judged true in both the AB and the ABA flag scenario. Unlike in the case of Brazilian Portuguese *meio*, there is no contrast between *Hälfte* and the expressive reading of *halb* with respect to the the spatial make up of the partial entity they yield here.<sup>23</sup>

- (52) German (Berit Gehrke, Nina Haslinger, Maximilian Prüller, p.c.)
- a. Die Hälfte der Fahne ist rot.  
 the half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN flag is red  
 ‘Half the flag is red.’  
 (i) AB  
 (ii) ABA

<sup>22</sup>I would like to thank Berit Gehrke for sharing this observation with me.

<sup>23</sup>Note, however, that (52b) has also a strongly individuating reading that there is one piece of cloth, which is half a flag (the other half is ripped off), and that half-flag is red.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

- b. Die halbe Fahne ist rot.  
the half<sub>2</sub> flag is red  
'Half the flag is red.'
  - (i) AB
  - (ii) ABA

Now, consider the indefinite counterparts of (52) in (53). Both (53a) and (53b) display the kind of semantic behavior observed in typologically sensitive expressions such as Polish *połówka*, Brazilian Portuguese *meio*, and Dutch *half*, i.e., they would be true only if a continuous part of the flag were red.<sup>24</sup> This shows that the source of topological sensitivity is the interaction between the half-word and the determiner rather than that it is encoded lexically.

- (53) German (Berit Gehrke, p.c.)
- a. Eine Hälfte der Fahne ist rot.  
a half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN flag is red  
'A/One half of the flag is red.'
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) #ABA
  - b. Eine halbe Fahne ist rot.  
a half<sub>2</sub> flag is red  
'One piece, which is half a flag, is red.'
    - (i) AB
    - (ii) #ABA

Furthermore, there is yet another topology-sensitive construction in German. In particular, consider the subject of the sentence in (54a) involving the half-word *Hälfte* preceded by both what at first blush appears to be an indefinite article and the definite article *die*. Notice, however, that *eine* in this environment is not an indefinite article, but rather the numeral 'one'. The mere fact that it can combine with the definite article *die* suggests that it is an expression of a different type. Furthermore, unlike regular indefinite articles, it is always stressed. As shown by the ungrammaticality of (54b), in this construction one cannot put stress on the half-word.

- (54) German (Berit Gehrke, Maximilian Prüller, p.c.)
- a. Die EINE Hälfte der Fahne ist rot.  
the one half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN flag is red.  
'The half of the flag is red.'

---

<sup>24</sup>Again, the non-expressive reading of (53b) is that there is a half of the flag that is cut off or separated from the rest.

- b. \*Die eine HÄLFTE der Fahne ist rot.  
 the a half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN flag is red.  
 Intended: ‘The half of the flag is red.’

The truth conditions of sentences with the *die eine Hälfte* partitive expression contrast with the truth conditions of the sentences involving definite proportional partitives examined so far. For instance, consider (55).

- (55) German (Berit Gehrke, Nina Haslinger, Maximilian Prüller, p.c.)
- a. Die Hälfte der Fahne ist rot.  
 the half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN flag is red  
 ‘Half the flag is red.’  
 (i) AB  
 (ii) ABA
- b. Die eine Hälfte der Fahne ist rot.  
 the a/one half<sub>1</sub> the.GEN flag is red  
 ‘One half of the flag is red.’  
 (i) AB  
 (ii) #ABA

As we have already discussed, (55a) is true of both relevant scenarios, i.e., Figure 3.3 and 3.4. However, (55b) is consistently judged false in the flag ABA situation. This shows that German developed a rather complex system in which the semantic distinction between different proportional partitive expressions, i.e., topologically neutral partitives, on the one hand, and topology-sensitive expressions, on the other, results from the interaction between the half-word, definiteness, and the numeral. The expressions are distinguished from each other both lexically and structurally with the most marked form being at the same time semantically most complex.

Finally, the examined contrast involving yet another two types of constructions is found in Mandarin. The two structures are provided in (56).

- (56) Mandarin (Chang Liu, p.c.)
- a. guó qí de yí-bàn shì hóng de.  
 national flag LNK one-half COP red LNK  
 ‘Half the national flag is red.’  
 (i) AB  
 (ii) ABA

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

- b. bàn-miàn guó qí shì hóng de.  
half-CLF national flag COP red LNK  
'A half of the national flag is red.'  
(i) AB  
(ii) #ABA

In (56a), the partitive meaning is conveyed by the phrase involving the proportional expression *yí-bàn* 'half' related by the associative marker *de* to the nominal *guó qí* 'national flag' (Jing-Schmidt 2005: p. 294; Jin 2018). In this construction, the half-word *bàn* does not follow a classifier and combines directly with the preceding cardinal numeral *yí* 'one' forming a constituent. It is possible that *yí* in *yí-bàn* is in fact a grammaticalized expression interpreted as an indefinite rather than a numeral (see Hsieh 2008: p. 127; Jin 2018).<sup>25</sup> In any case, this structure is topologically neutral and yields both integrated and discontinuous halves of entities since sentences such as (56a) are reported to be true of the flag in Figure 3.3 as well as the one in Figure 3.4. In (56b), however, the partitive morpheme *bàn* behaves more like a quantifier since it needs to combine with the classifier *miàn* dedicated to counting flat and smooth objects such as mirrors in order to quantify over parts of the national flag denoted by the nominal. Therefore, it appears that in this case the syntactic status of the half-word is on a par with cardinals. And again, a different structure corresponds to a different semantics. Unlike (56a), the sentence in (56b) can only mean that an integrated half of the national flag is red, i.e., it would be judged false in the scenario represented in Figure 3.2.

The Mandarin example discussed above concludes this brief exploration of cross-linguistic strategies of encoding sensitivity to topological notions in partitive expressions. Though the sample of languages examined here was relatively small and most probably more strategies await to be discovered within a future thorough cross-linguistic investigation, the presented evidence proves that natural language encodes subtle topological distinctions in the domain of partitivity. The contrasts examined here are often very slight but a careful examination suggests that the topology-related phenomena in question are not something idiosyncratic but rather occur systematically across languages.

In the next section, I will discuss yet another class of expressions that might shed new light on the issues related to the interplay of quantification and topology. In particular, I will consider some similarities and contrasts concerning two whole-adjectives in Polish, namely *cały* 'whole' and *kompletny* 'complete'. To

---

<sup>25</sup>See also Hsieh (2008: p. 46) and Zhang (2011) for the discussion of issues regarding constituency and other types of environments *bàn* appears in.

this end, I will explore two different respects of being entire as well as the interaction between whole-adjectives and different types of nominals from the perspective of subatomic quantification and topological sensitivity.

### 3.5 Whole-adjectives

Due to contrasts parallel to the one illustrated in (57), adjectives such as *whole* and *entire* have been analyzed as universal quantifiers over parts (Moltmann 1997) or maximizing modifiers, i.e., expressions restricting exception tolerance (Morzycki 2002).<sup>26</sup> There is a strong intuition that compared to (57a) the sentence in (57b) implies that no part of the entity in question is exempt from having to satisfy the main predicate. In particular, (57a) would be true if a sufficiently significant proportion of the ferret were under the water, i.e., if part of a paw or a tail were not submerged, under most circumstances the sentence would not be considered false. However, the proposition expressed by (57b) is stronger. It states that all the parts of the ferret are submerged.

- (57) English (Morzycki 2002; adapted)
- a. The ferret is submerged.
  - b. The {whole/entire} ferret is submerged.

In Polish, alongside the standard whole-adjective *cały* ‘whole’, there is yet another expression that shares some of its semantic properties yet differs in an interesting respect, namely the adjective *kompletny* ‘complete’. Though there is a partial overlap between the two expressions in question in terms of their distribution, they show quite different patterns.

Let us first consider the distributional potential of the whole-adjective *cały*. What is interesting about this expression is that it can be used for universal quantification over parts of stuff denoted both by singular count nouns and mass terms. Specifically, (58a) refers to all the material parts making up a particular apple, whereas (58b) is true of an entity comprising all the quantities of juice in a relevant context, i.e., the total amount of juice. Interestingly, when modifying a plural expression such as (58c), in some contexts *cały* can scope over the plural. In other words, (58c) is true of a plurality of whole apples but it can also be true of a whole plurality of not necessarily whole apples.

---

<sup>26</sup>Morzycki (2002) builds on Brisson’s (1998) analysis of *all* in terms of maximizing modification.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

- (58) Polish
- a. całe jabłko  
whole.SG.N apple.N  
'whole apple' or  
'all (of) the apple'
  - b. cały sok  
whole.SG.M juice.M  
'all (of) the juice'
  - c. całe jabłka  
whole.PL apples  
'whole apples' or  
'all (of) the apples'
    - (i) plural > whole
    - (ii) whole > plural

Admittedly, the cases in which *cały* can outscope the plural are restricted and in many environments such a reading is either unavailable or marked. However, there are contexts in which it is definitely possible. One such example is illustrated by the sentence in (59).

- (59) Polish (Adam Przepiórkowski, p.c.)  
Szczury zjadły całe jabłka, choć większość i tak była  
rats ate whole.ACC apples.ACC though most anyway was  
już wcześniej nadgryziona przez myszy.  
already earlier nibbled by mice.ACC  
'Rats ate all of the apples, although most of them were already nibbled off  
by mice.'

Compared to *cały*, the distribution of *kompletny* is significantly restricted. Intuitively, this is due to the fact that it seems to presuppose a certain complexity in terms of a part-whole structure. In particular, it can only modify nominals referring to objects consisting of multiple easily recognizable and distinguishable parts such as utensils and clothes.<sup>27</sup>

In addition to this restriction, the whole-adjective *kompletny* differs from *cały* in that it can never scope over the plural. For instance, due to the fact that computers consist of many detachable elements, (60a) is a meaningful phrase in Polish.

---

<sup>27</sup>There is yet another meaning of *kompletny* that could be glossed as 'total' which does not impose such a constraint. This use is especially frequent in colloquial Polish; however, it will not be considered here.

Similarly, when combined with an object mass term it implies that all discrete objects comprising the extension of the noun are in place. For example, (60b) would be true of a collection of equipment where there is no item missing. Moreover, *kompletny* frequently appears with collective nouns such as *zestaw* ‘set’ and *kolekcja* ‘collection’, which denote groups of artifacts. On the other hand, when modifying a plural expression, as in (60c), *kompletny* cannot assert the denoted property of a plurality as such, but rather of singular individuals. In other words, (60c) means that individual computers are complete and not the plurality thereof.

(60) Polish

- a. *kompletny komputer*  
complete.SG.M computer.M  
‘complete computer’
- b. *kompletny sprzęt*  
complete.SG.M equipment.M  
‘complete equipment’
- c. *kompletne komputery*  
complete.PL computers  
‘complete computers’
  - (i) plural > complete
  - (ii) #complete > plural

Notice also that both *cały* and *kompletny* can combine with pluralia tantum, see (61a)–(61b). The plurale tantum nominal *nożyczki laparoskopowe* ‘laparoscopic graspers’ denotes a specialized object consisting of multiple detachable and replaceable elements, which makes it a proper expression to be modified by *kompletny*. In both cases, the whole phrase is ambiguous between a singular and a plural reading, i.e., it either refers to one whole or complete object, respectively, or to a plurality of whole or complete objects.

(61) Polish

- a. *całe nożyczki laparoskopowe*  
whole.PL scissors laparoscopic.PL  
‘whole laparoscopic graspers’ or  
‘all of the laparoscopic graspers’
- b. *kompletne nożyczki laparoskopowe*  
complete.PL scissors laparoscopic.PL  
‘complete laparoscopic graspers’

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

The reading on which the whole-adjective would impose a semantic restriction on a plurality can be available only for (61a), i.e., only this phrase can mean something like a whole plurality of laparoscopic graspers. This can be observed in a shopping context, where a sentence such as (62) means that the owners of the store ran out of laparoscopic graspers. Given the fact that the plural in *plurale tantum* nouns was argued to be inside the *nP* (see, e.g., Acquaviva 2008; Alexiadou 2011; Smith 2015; 2017), data like (62) suggest that *cały* can enter into a scopal relation with a plurality even when it is encoded very low in the structure.

- (62) Polish  
 Dziś było tyle zamówień ze szpitali, że sprzedaliśmy  
 today was so.many orders.GEN from hospitals.GEN that we.sold  
 całe nożyczki laparoskopowe.  
 whole.PL scissors laparoscopic.PL  
 ‘Today there were so many orders from hospitals that we sold out all  
 laparoscopic graspers.’

Table 3.7 gives an overview of the distribution of the Polish whole-adjectives *cały* and *kompletny* as discussed above. While both can co-occur with singular count nouns and mass terms, the latter requires the modified noun to refer to complex entities consisting of multiple easily individuated parts. On the other hand, when combined with regular plurals, only *cały* can scope over the plural. In other words, what is targeted by *kompletny* is always the part-whole structure of a particular singular individual, whereas *cały* in some cases can trigger universal quantification over singular objects making up a plural entity.

Table 3.7: Distribution of Polish *whole* adjectives

	SINGULARS	MASS NOUNS	PLURALS
<i>cały</i>	✓	✓	✓
<i>kompletny</i>	✓	✓	#

The evidence regarding the distribution of the Polish whole-adjectives in question suggests the distinction between integrated objects as prototypically denoted by singular count nouns and scattered entities designated by mass terms, on the one hand, and arbitrary sums of individuals referred to plural expressions, on the other. To some extent this contrast resembles what was observed with respect to the distribution of the piece-word *kawalek* in §3.2.2 and §3.3. Before I



move on to discussing some semantic differences between *cały* and *kompletny*, let us briefly examine a cross-linguistic context which might shed more light on the pattern observed in Polish. In the next section, I will consider data concerning a German whole-adjective modifying plural nouns.

### 3.5.1 German *ganz* and plurals

As in Polish, in German the whole-adjective *ganz* ‘whole’ can be used as a universal quantifier over parts of matter making up referents of both singular count nouns as well as mass terms, as demonstrated in (63a)–(63b) (see also Moltmann 1997: pp. 123–127).

- (63) German (Nina Haslinger, p.c.)
- a. der ganze Apfel  
the.SG.M whole.SG Apfel.M  
‘the whole apple’ or  
‘all (of) the apple’
  - b. der ganze Saft  
the.SG.M whole.SG juice.M  
‘all (of) the juice’

In addition, it has also been reported that at least in some German dialects the adjective *ganz* ‘whole’ gives rise to a universal quantification interpretation when modifying plural DPs (Moltmann 1997: pp. 123–127; see also Igel to appear). This is claimed to be possible with plurals referring to sums constituting natural wholes, i.e., sums whose members are considered as having less individuality, and thus do not appear to be prominent with respect to the whole (Moltmann 1997: p. 125). For instance, consider (64).

- (64) German (Moltmann 1997: p. 125; adapted)
- a. Die ganzen Kinder sind gekommen.  
the.PL whole.PL children are come  
‘All the children have come.’
  - b. Die ganzen Bienen haben Maria gestochen.  
the.PL whole.PL bees have Maria stung  
‘All the bees have stung Maria.’

In the sentence in (64a), children are part of a more or less anonymous group, whereas in (64b) bees are perceived as constituents of a swarm. In both cases, the modifier *ganz* seemingly quantifies over individuals making up the pluralities

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

and the whole DP yields the total number of children and bees involved in coming and stinging, respectively.

However, under more rigorous investigation it appears that at least in one Austrian dialect showing the discussed behavior there is an important distinction between *ganz* and the universal quantifier *alle* ‘all’. Whatever the exact semantic contribution of *ganz*, it seems that unlike *alle* it allows for exceptions. For instance, consider the contrast given in (65). While the sentence in (65a) can be supplemented with another clause stating that not all of the children have come, (65b) obviously excludes such a continuation.<sup>28</sup>

- (65) Viennese German (Maximilian Prüller, p.c.)  
*Scenario*: My neighbors have 10 children and I don’t like them but have to invite them.
- a. Dann sind die Nachbarn mit ihren ganzen Kindern  
then are the neighbors with their.DAT whole.DAT.PL children.DAT  
gekommen. Zwei waren krank zuhause, und es waren immer noch  
come two were ill at.home and it were still  
acht!  
eight  
‘Then the neighbors have come with their children. Two of them  
were ill and stayed home, but there were still eight!’
- b. #Dann sind die Nachbarn mit allen ihren Kindern  
then are the neighbors with all.DAT their.DAT children.DAT  
gekommen. Zwei waren krank zuhause, und es waren immer noch  
come two were ill at.home and it were still  
acht!  
eight  
Intended: ‘Then the neighbors have come with all their children.  
Two of them were ill and stayed home, but there were still eight!’

Although definitely more systematic research is required to establish what exactly the properties of *ganz* are, I take the data in (64) as evidence suggesting that German *ganz* patterns in the relevant respect with Polish *cały*. In the next section, I will return to the alternation between *cały* and *kompletny* and examine two different aspects of wholeness.

---

<sup>28</sup>In (65), I ignored dialectal phonological features and simply provided Standard German spelling.

## 3.5.2 Integrity vs. maximality

There is yet another difference between the Polish whole-adjectives *cały* and *kompletny*, which also intuitively appears to be the most significant one. The difference relates to the distinction between two aspects of wholeness, which I will call an integrity component and a maximality component. The former is topological in nature and indicates that the parts of a whole are connected in such a way that they form an intact integrated object.<sup>29</sup> The latter, on the other hand, simply employs universal quantification over parts or mereological exhaustivity, and thus indicates that no part of a whole is missing.<sup>30</sup>

Under ordinary circumstances these two aspects of wholeness are interrelated. Hence, the contrast between the two meanings might seem somewhat subtle and in many contexts it is probably difficult to detect. However, it is relatively easy to come up with examples where it becomes significant. For instance, consider the scenario described in (66).

(66) Polish

*Scenario:* Jan bought his daughter Marysia a model aircraft. After Marysia unwrapped the gift and opened the box, her brother Piotruś asks:

- a. Czy ten samolot jest cały?  
INT this model.aircraft is whole  
'Is this model aircraft whole?'
- b. Nie, brakuje śmigła.  
no it.lacks propeller.GEN  
'No, it lacks the propeller.'
- c. Nie, trzeba go złożyć.  
no, it.needs it.ACC assemble  
'No, it needs to be assembled.'

<sup>29</sup>See also (Moltmann 1997: p. 127) for a remark on the integrity reading of German *ganz* in predicate position as, e.g., in (i).

- (i) German (Moltmann 1997: p. 127; adapted)  
Das Glas ist noch ganz.  
the glass is still whole  
'The glass is still intact.'

<sup>30</sup>However, see Morzycki (2002) for arguments against treating whole-adjectives as universal quantifiers over parts based on the anaphoric and scope properties they give rise to. Instead, he proposes to treat them as maximizing modifiers. Since the main point here concerns the distinction between quantification over wholes and subatomic quantification, I only signal the problem here and leave it unaddressed.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

Notice that there are two kinds of model aircraft Jan might have bought for Marysia, namely either a pre-built model that has already been put together or a construction kit with a collection of separate parts that require gluing. Then, depending on whether Marysia got the former or the latter, her brother Piotruś's question in (66a) can be understood along the lines of topological integrity or mereological exhaustivity. In particular, (66b) provides an answer to a question implying a maximality reading, i.e., whether no part is missing, whereas (66c) is a reply in terms of an integrity interpretation, i.e., whether the parts are connected. This shows that though the two ways in which being a whole can be understood are frequently related, they are in fact separate semantic phenomena and in some contexts only one of them can become prominent if not the only relevant aspect.

Now, let us compare what was observed in (66) with what happens in the same context when the question in (67a) is slightly modified. Specifically, instead of *cały* what appears in predicate position is the whole-adjective *kompletny*.

(67) Polish

*Scenario:* Jan bought his daughter Marysia a model aircraft. After Marysia unwrapped the gift and opened the box, her brother Piotruś asks:

- a. Czy ten samolot            jest kompletny?  
INT this model.aircraft is    complete  
'Is this model aircraft complete?'
- b. Nie, brakuje śmigła.  
no it.lacks propeller.GEN  
'No, it lacks the propeller.'
- c. #Nie, trzeba go        złożyć.  
no, it.needs it.ACC assemble  
'No, it needs to be assembled.'

Here, the only meaningful answer is the one in (67b). The reply in (67c) is just remarkably odd. That is because *kompletny*, unlike *cały*, lacks the semantic component invoking integrity and implies exclusively the maximality aspect of wholeness. Therefore, the question in (67a) can only be interpreted as whether the box includes all the relevant parts of the model aircraft.

The contrast between the number of possible answers in (66) and (67) shows that *cały* has two meaning components which correspond to maximality, on the one hand, and integrity, on the other. In contrast, *kompletny* can be interpreted exclusively in terms of maximality. Importantly, however, it is not the case that *cały* is ambiguous between two different readings. Rather, both aspects of wholeness need to be present. The reason is that in the context of (68) neither of the

answers to the question in (68a) makes much sense. If *cały* were ambiguous, both (68b) and (68c) would be legitimate.

(68) Polish (Adam Przepiórkowski, p.c.)

*Scenario:* Jan bought his daughter Marysia a model aircraft. After Marysia unwrapped the gift and opened the box, her brother Piotruś asks:

- a. Czy ten samolot jest cały?  
INT this model.aircraft is whole  
'Is this model aircraft whole?'
- b. #Tak, jest cały, tylko trzeba go złożyć.  
yes is whole only needs it.ACC assemble  
'Yes, it is whole, but it needs to be assembled.'
- c. #Tak, jest cały, tylko brakuje mu śmigła.  
yes is whole only lacks it.DAT propeller.GEN  
'Yes, it is whole, it only lacks the propeller.'

Though the distinction discussed in this section is subtle, it is systematic and can be detected in multiple environments. Even out of the blue the intuitions regarding the contrast between the sentence in (69a) and (69b) are very clear. The former states that all the relevant parts of the toy are in place or that the parts are connected, or most probably both, whereas the latter implies only that no relevant part of the toy is missing.<sup>31</sup>

(69) Polish

- a. Ta zabawka jest cała.  
this toy is whole  
'This toy is whole.'  
(i) maximality meaning  
(ii) integrity meaning
- b. Ta zabawka jest kompletna.  
this toy is complete  
'This toy is complete.'  
(i) maximality meaning  
(ii) #integrity meaning

<sup>31</sup>It is possible that the semantics of *cały* is even stronger. As suggested by Adam Przepiórkowski (p.c.), in some contexts it seems to require that the object in question is not only maximal in the mereological sense and integrated in the topological sense, but also undamaged. Such a requirement seems to invoke a stronger topological notion, perhaps the notion of homeomorphism in the sense that, e.g., a broken sphere is not homeomorphic with an unbroken sphere. Though this is definitely a very interesting idea, I will leave careful investigation of its implications for future research.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

Table 3.8 recapitulates the findings. Distinguishing between the maximality and the integrity meaning component of wholeness allows us to conclude that while the Polish whole-adjective *kompletny* is topology-neutral, *cały* is not.

Table 3.8: Interpretations of Polish whole-adjectives

	MAXIMALITY	INTEGRITY
<i>cały</i>	✓	✓
<i>kompletny</i>	✓	*

The contrast concerning possible interpretations of the Polish whole-adjectives discussed in this section provides yet another piece of evidence that some natural language expressions are sensitive to topological relations holding between particular entities. Specifically, the whole-adjective *cały* can be used to imply that all the parts of an object remain in such a spatial configuration that the object in question constitutes an integrated whole. In the next section, I will focus on the maximality aspect of wholeness. In particular, assuming that the semantics of *cały* involves universal quantification over entities of some sort I will examine what exactly can constitute the domain of such quantification.

#### 3.5.3 Universal quantification over parts and wholes

Though the Polish whole-adjective *cały* can combine with a wide range of expressions including singular count nouns, prototypical mass terms, granulars, object mass nouns, and plurals, in each case the interpretation of the whole NP depends on the structure of the denotation of the modified noun. The difference becomes apparent when we distinguish between subatomic quantification, i.e., quantification over material parts making up building blocks of the denotation of a certain noun, and what, for the lack of a better term, I will call non-subatomic quantification, i.e., quantification above the subatomic level. Specifically, non-subatomic quantification covers both atomic quantification, i.e., quantification over singular individuals constituting pluralities of objects, as well as quantification over portions of substances as long as it does not target the internal structure of minimal building blocks of mass denotations, assuming there are any.<sup>32</sup>

<sup>32</sup>Though for a long time it was commonly assumed that there are no minimal building blocks in the denotations of mass nouns (e.g., ter Meulen 1980; Link 1983; Bunt 1985; Landman 1991), some theories postulate that the denotations of mass nouns do in fact consist of minimal building blocks but these building blocks are in some way inaccessible for counting (e.g., Chierchia 1998a; 2010). For an overview, see Landman (2011).

To illustrate the distinction, let us first consider the interpretative contrast between singular count nouns and liquid terms. For instance, the phrase in (70a) involves subatomic quantification, whereas (70b) does not.

- (70) Polish
- a. całe jabłko  
whole.SG.N apple.N  
'whole apple' or  
'all (of) the apple'  
(i) subatomic quantification  
(ii) #non-subatomic quantification
  - b. cała woda  
whole.SG.F water.F  
'all (of) the water'  
(i) #subatomic quantification  
(ii) non-subatomic quantification

The whole-adjective *cały* in (70a) quantifies universally over material parts of a single apple rather than, e.g., over individual apples making up a collection of apples. In other words, (70a) does not mean something like 'all apples' when the set of relevant apples consists of one object. On the other hand, in (70b) *cały* triggers universal quantification over entities in the extension of the modified mass noun, but it is impossible to interpret the phrase as meaning that some quantity of individual drops or molecules of water are whole. Rather, (70b) designates the entire amount of the water in question. In addition, unlike (70a), the phrase in (70b) does not imply the sense of integrity. The translations of the sentences in (71) illustrate the difference.

- (71) Polish
- a. Marysia zjadła całe jabłko.  
Marysia ate whole.ACC apple.ACC  
'Marysia ate the whole apple.' or  
'Marysia ate all the apple.'
  - b. Marysia wypła całą wodę.  
Marysia drank whole.ACC water.ACC  
'Marysia drank all the water.'

The distinction between subatomic and non-subatomic quantification becomes more evident in the case of plurals as well as granular and object mass nouns

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

since these expressions allow for both types of quantification in question. Let us start the discussion of these classes of expressions with the examples in (72). In particular, the NP in (72a) can either refer to the total amount of rice in question irrespective of the structure of individual grains constituting that amount or to an unspecified amount of rice involving whole grains, as opposed to milled rice. Similarly, (72b) is either true of an unspecified number of whole shoes or of the total number of shoes in a given context.

(72) Polish

- a. cały            ryż  
   whole.SG.M rice.M  
   ‘whole rice’ or  
   ‘all (of) the rice’  
   (i) subatomic quantification  
   (ii) non-subatomic quantification
- b. całe            obuwie  
   whole.SG.N footwear.N  
   ‘whole footwear’ or  
   ‘all (of) the footwear’  
   (i) subatomic quantification  
   (ii) non-subatomic quantification

The contrast can be clearly demonstrated by considering non-trivial truth-conditional differences between (73a) and (74a), on the one hand, and between (73b) and (74b), on the other. The most prominent interpretation of (73a) is that there is no rice left. On the other hand, the sentence in (73b) does not infer that Marysia bought all the rice, but rather that she bought whole grain rice, i.e., rice that has not been milled.

(73) Polish

- a. Marysia zjadła cały            ryż.  
   Marysia ate    whole.ACC rice.ACC  
   ‘Marysia ate all the rice.’
- b. Marysia kupiła cały            ryż,            natomiast Jan mączkę  
   Marysia bought whole.ACC rice.ACC whereas Jan flour.ACC  
   ryżową.  
   rice.ADJ.ACC  
   ‘Marysia bought whole rice, whereas Jan bought rice flour.’



Likewise, (74a) is true only if there were no shoe left in the shop last year, whereas the context rules out this interpretation in (74b). Instead, the available reading states, that the factory produces complete shoes.

(74) Polish

- a. W tym roku nasz sklep wyprzedał całe obuwie.  
 in this.LOC year.LOC our shop sold.out whole.ACC footwear.ACC  
 ‘This year, our shop sold out all the footwear.’
- b. Nasza fabryka produkuje całe obuwie, natomiast  
 our factory produces whole.ACC footwear.ACC whereas  
 konkurencja jedynie podeszwy.  
 competitors only soles.ACC  
 ‘Our factory produces whole footwear, whereas our competitors produce only soles.’

Moreover, as already discussed in §3.5, in some environments *cały* can scope over the plural, recall (59) and (62). Consequently, a phrase such as (75a) denotes a plurality of whole objects but in some contexts it can also designate a whole plurality of objects. This behavior is irrespective of whether the modified nominal is a regular plural or a plurale tantum noun, see (75b).

(75) Polish

- a. całe jabłka  
 whole.PL apples  
 ‘whole apples’ or  
 ‘all (of) the apples’  
 (i) subatomic quantification  
 (ii) non-subatomic quantification
- b. całe nożyczki  
 whole.PL scissors  
 ‘whole scissors’ or  
 ‘all (of) the scissors’  
 (i) subatomic quantification  
 (ii) non-subatomic quantification

The quantificational behavior of *cały* modifying plurals is well illustrated by the interpretative contrast between the two sentences in (76), where (76b) repeats the example already provided in (59).

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

(76) Polish

- a. Marysia zjadła całe jabłka, natomiast Jan zostawił  
 Marysia ate whole.ACC apples.ACC whereas Jan left  
 ogryzki.  
 apple.cores.ACC  
 ‘Marysia ate the whole apples, whereas Jan left the apple cores.’
- b. Szczury zjadły całe jabłka, choć większość i tak  
 rats ate whole.ACC apples.ACC though most anyway  
 była już wcześniej nadgryziona przez myszy.  
 was already earlier nibbled by mice.ACC  
 ‘Rats ate all of the apples, although most of them were already nib-  
 bled off by mice.’

While (76a) makes it clear that in this case the whole-adjective indicates that no part of each relevant apple is exempt from being consumed, (76b) is most naturally interpreted in terms of universal quantification over individual apples.

The quantificational properties of the Polish whole-adjective *cały* ‘whole’ are summarized in Table 3.9. The crucial observation is that the domain of quantification depends in a non-trivial manner on the extension of the modified nominal. Specifically, *cały* can quantify either over material parts or individual parts of an entity denoted by the nominal it combines with. Expressions that indicate objects conceptualized as integrated wholes allow for subatomic quantification, whereas substance mass nouns do not. On the other hand, *cały* can also trigger non-subatomic universal quantification over entities making up a plurality or a substance.

Table 3.9: Quantificational properties of Polish *cały* ‘whole’

	SINGULARS	PLURALS	MASS	
			object	mess
subatomic quantification	✓	✓	✓	*
non-subatomic quantification	*	✓	✓	✓

This concludes the investigations into the relevance of topological sensitivity with respect to part-whole structures in natural language.

### 3.6 Summary

In this chapter, I provided additional evidence for the relevance of the notion of spatial integrity for subatomic quantification. In particular, novel evidence shows that the distinction between topology-neutral and topology-sensitive partitive words is lexicalized in Polish. Specifically, Polish has three morphologically distinct half-words, i.e., *połowa*, *pół*, and *połówka*. What they share is that when applied to an entity they return a part constituting approximately 50% of a whole. They differ, however, regarding the type of entity they select for, as well as the type of part they yield. Given different distributional and referential properties the data could be explained as follows. The half-word *połowa* is topology-neutral, i.e., it measures halves of any type of entity, be it a solid individual, mass substance, aggregate, or an arbitrary plurality of individuals. The outcome of quantification is a portion of a whole which is topologically indeterminate. In other words, *połowa* can either designate an integrated entity within the part-whole structure of an individual or merely an arbitrary discontinuous sum of pieces making up the whole. Unlike *połowa*, *pół* is sensitive to the type of entity denoted by its complement. Specifically, it selects only for integrated individuals, i.e., individuated objects that come in one piece.<sup>33</sup> Nonetheless, analogously to *połowa* the resulting partitive phrase can refer either to a continuous or discontinuous half but in this case it has to be part of an integrated whole. Finally, the meaning of *połówka* is the most constrained. It shares selectional restrictions with *pół*, i.e., it excludes scattered entities such as substances and granular aggregates as denoted typically by mass terms as well as pluralities of individuals, but in addition it imposes topological constraints on the extension of the resulting partitive construction. To put it in a different way, *połówka* cuts out an integrated part constituting approximately 50% of the volume of a continuous individuated object.

In a similar vein, the alternation between fractions and the quarter-words *ćwierć* and *ćwiartka* ‘quarter’ corresponds to the pattern observed in half-words. In particular, fractions are topology-neutral, whereas *ćwierć* patterns with *pół* and *ćwiartka* mirrors the behavior of *połówka* in that it requires a portion of an object to form a contiguous entity. Polish further distinguishes between distinct piece-words, one of which, i.e., *kawałek*, yields an integrated object within a part-whole structure as long as the whole does not denote an arbitrary sum of individuals. Furthermore, the contrast between two types of Polish whole-adjectives, i.e., *cały* and *kompletny*, makes it easier to determine two distinct aspects of wholeness, namely maximality and integrity.

<sup>33</sup>This is a slight simplification since *pół* can also combine with collective nouns. However, as explained above, I will ignore this issue here.

### 3 Exploring topological sensitivity

The cross-linguistic investigation revealed that the phenomenon observed in Polish partitives is not a peculiarity of one language but rather appears in at least several other languages. The distinction is not always expressed lexically and sometimes it manifests itself in different interpretations assigned to different syntactic structures. It turns out that Brazilian Portuguese and Dutch distinguish between the topology-neutral half-words *metade* and *helft*, on the one hand, and the topology-sensitive adjectives *meio* and *half* semantically resembling Polish *połówka*, on the other. In contrast, English does not differentiate between distinct lexical items but rather distinguishes two constructions, i.e., the topology-neutral *half* DP phrase as opposed to the *a half of* DP structure, which again shows a semantic behavior similar to *połówka*. The same contrast is reported to hold between the *yí-bàn* and *bàn-clf* constructions in Mandarin. Finally, the German data suggest an interaction between half-words and (in)definiteness. While definite DPs involving half-words are topology-neutral, their indefinite counterparts behave analogously to what is attested in Polish. Furthermore, there is an additional construction involving the nominal half-word, the definite article, and the numeral ‘one’, namely *die eine Hälfte*, which is also topology-sensitive.

The significance of the data discussed here lies primarily in revealing the relevance of topological relations holding between parts of individuals forcing us to recognize that natural language semantics is sensitive to whether parts come in one piece or constitute discontinuous entities. In the following section, I will introduce yet another set of evidence concerning subatomic quantification. In particular, I will show that similarly to cardinal numerals, which are dedicated to counting wholes, there are numerical expressions in natural language dedicated to counting parts.

## 4 Multipliers

In the previous chapters, I provided robust linguistic evidence for the relevance of subatomic quantification in natural language as well as for the significant role the topological notion of integrity plays with respect to that phenomenon. I examined multiple types of partitive constructions including count explicit partitives and topology-sensitive proportional partitives. What these two types of expressions have in common is that they impose a certain constraint on how the denoted parts of objects are conceptualized. Specifically, they require the parts to constitute integrated continuous elements. On the other hand, we saw that subatomic quantification is not restricted to partitive constructions and is also attested in the adjectival domain, e.g., German and Romance adjectival half-words as well as different types of whole-adjectives. At this point, one could expect that given the amount of evidence for the relevance of part-whole structures in different types of constructions there should be quantificational expressions in natural language that are specialized for counting parts of entities. It turns out that in fact in many languages there are such expressions.

In this chapter, I will present novel data concerning subatomic quantification in the adjectival domain. In particular, I will examine semantic properties of numerical expressions such as English *double* and *triple* which I will refer to as MULTIPLIERS (following Quirk et al. 1985; Huddleston & Pullum 2002). In particular, I will focus mostly on Slavic multipliers exemplified by Polish *podwójny*, Czech *dvojitý*, Russian *dvojnój*, and Bosnian-Croatian-Serbian (BCS) *dvostruki*, all ‘double’, which all seem to have identical properties. Unlike cardinal numerals, multipliers do not count entities, but rather their particular parts. I have chosen Slavic multipliers due to their morphological complexity which suggests a rich semantic structure that is not expressed formally in a language such as English. To foreshadow, I will argue that since multipliers in Slavic are derivationally complex, they are in fact compositional. Though the distribution of multipliers is relatively broad, I will mainly concentrate on a subset of environments in which they can occur, which allows us for novel insights with respect to the phenomena discussed in this study.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Most of the data discussed in this chapter come from linguistic corpora. However, I would like to sincerely thank Mojmir Dočekal, Pavel Caha, and Markéta Ziková, Tetiana Kamyschanova, Boban Arsenijević, Kurt Erbach and Guy Tabachnick, and Viola Schmitt for confirming my intuitions concerning some of the Czech, Russian, BCS, English, and German phrases, respectively.

## 4.1 Significance of multipliers

Since the early days of formal semantics (starting with Montague 1973) the meaning of quantificational expressions such as numerals has been constantly receiving a lot of attention. Over the last several decades, extensive and extremely important work has been done in this area leading to a number of influential theories of cardinals (e.g., Barwise & Cooper 1981; Scha 1981; Landman 2004; Ionin & Matushansky 2006). Nevertheless, it seems that there is still a vast territory left uncharted since natural languages exhibit multiple classes of numerical expressions that did not receive nearly as much recognition as cardinal numerals. In this chapter, I will contribute to the study of such somewhat neglected classes of quantifiers by providing evidence considering multipliers. Though such expressions are cross-linguistically common, see (1), as for now their semantic properties are surprisingly understudied and I am not aware of any formal attempt to account for their behavior and meaning.<sup>2</sup>

- (1) a. English  
double
- b. German  
doppelt
- c. Italian  
doppio
- d. Lithuanian  
dvigubas
- e. Finnish  
kaksinkertainen
- f. Hungarian  
dupla
- g. Mandarin  
shuāng

The fact that multipliers have been somewhat overlooked is even more striking given that they exhibit non-trivial quantificational behavior that differs significantly from the one observed in cardinal numerals. For instance, consider examples such as those in (2).

- (2) English
  - a. crown
  - b. two crowns
  - c. double crown

---

<sup>2</sup>An exception is Wagiel (2020a) on which the whole chapter is loosely based.

The noun phrase in (2a) simply denotes a set of singular entities having the property of being a crown. Interestingly, although the phrase in (2b) is true of a plurality of two entities, (2c) can only be interpreted as referring to a single individual, similarly to (2a). There is, however, a crucial difference between the two expressions since (2c) seems to involve subatomic quantification. In particular, the multiplier appears to quantify over elements within the inner structure of a denoted entity. In other words, *double* in (2c) restricts the denotation of the noun to only those crowns that have a particular complex form.

In the following parts of this chapter, I will discuss the distribution and semantic properties of Slavic multipliers with a special focus on Polish. I will argue that such expressions are compositional and involve quantification over objects that are conceptualized as integrated parts of integrated wholes. Furthermore, I will suggest a generalization concerning the meaning of a representative subset of the data, i.e., multiplier phrases involving concrete singular nouns, and point out some non-trivial consequences as well as discuss other types of nominals multipliers that combine with and how it relates to subatomic quantification.

#### 4.1.1 Morphological complexity of Slavic multipliers

Since it is widely recognized that derivational morphology in Slavic languages is particularly rich, in recent years increasing attention has been drawn to the semantics of Slavic morphologically complex numerical expressions. The research has led to a number of insightful investigations concerning such constructions in Czech (e.g., Dočekal 2012; 2013; Dočekal & Wągiel 2018b; Grimm & Dočekal 2021), Polish (e.g., Wągiel 2014; 2015b; 2020a,b; to appear), and Russian (e.g., Khrizman 2020). However, while previous research focused mainly on the impact of numeral morphology on the collective/distributive alternation with respect to different types of numerals, in this study I will examine the adjectival domain and present evidence of the significance of multipliers for subatomic quantification, i.e., quantification over cognitively salient parts of entities. In §3.1 and §3.2, we saw how formal complexity correlates with topology-sensitive semantics in partitive words in Polish. In this section, I will focus on the morphology of Polish, Czech, Russian, and BCS multipliers which unlike their English counterparts exhibit a complex derivational structure. I believe this choice of data will be instructive since it will allow us to confront multipliers with cardinals in a straightforward manner that will reveal intriguing similarities as well as differences between the two classes.

The examined lexical items in question will be exemplified in the following sections by expressions derived from the numeral root  $\sqrt{dw} / \sqrt{dv}$  corresponding

#### 4 Multipliers

to the number 2. Let us assume the morphological make-up of the basic cardinals and matching multipliers as in (3)–(6).<sup>3</sup>

- (3) Polish
- a. dw-a  
numeral.root-inflectional.marker  
'two'
  - b. po)dw-ój(n-y  
circumfix)numeral.root-non.card.stem(circumfix-infl.marker  
'double'
- (4) Czech
- a. dv-a  
numeral.root-inflectional.marker  
'two'
  - b. dv-uj-it-ý  
numeral.root-non.cardinal.stem-deriv.suffix-infl.marker  
'double'
- (5) Russian
- a. dv-a  
numeral.root-inflectional.marker  
'two'
  - b. dv-uj-n-uj  
numeral.root-non.cardinal.stem-deriv.suffix-infl.marker  
'double'
- (6) BCS
- a. dv-a  
numeral.root-inflectional.marker  
'two'
  - b. dv-o-struk-i  
numeral.root-non.cardinal.stem-deriv.suffix-infl.marker  
'double'

---

<sup>3</sup>For convenience, I provide only unmarked forms for cardinals in (3a)–(6a). In a similar vein, in (3b)–(6b) masculine forms represent whole declensional paradigms. For BCS in (6b), the derivationally complex adjective *dvostruki* 'double' has been chosen for sake of exposition despite the fact that there is also another BCS multiplier, namely *dupli* 'double'. Although it seems that there is a difference in the distribution of the two forms, I assume that there is no relevant semantic distinction between them with respect to the phenomena discussed here.



As can be witnessed in the morpheme orderings in (3b)–(6b), all the multipliers in question consist of numeral roots shared with corresponding cardinals and some additional morphology including the affixes *po*⟨*n*-/it-/*n*-/struk- and the morphemes -*ój*-/o*j*-/o-, which mark a non-cardinal stem as well as inflectional markers. Notice that the morphemes -*ój*-/o*j*-/o- appear in multipliers derived from numeral roots referring to the numbers 2–3. In multipliers derived from roots referring to the number 4, the suffix -*ór*-/er-/oro- occurs instead, e.g., Polish *po*⟨*czw-ór*⟨*n*-y, Czech *čtv-er-n-ý*, Russian *čtv-er-n-oj*, and BCS *čtv-oro-stuk-i*, all meaning ‘quadruple’.

In general, Slavic multipliers exhibit adjectival morphology and agree with modified nouns in case, number, and gender, as in (7).

- (7) Polish  
 Ta                podwójna                szyba                się    stłukła.  
 this.NOM.SG.F double.NOM.SG.F glass.NOM.SG.F REFL broke.SG.F  
 ‘This double glazing broke.’

I will refer to the derivational circumfix *po*⟨*n*- in Polish and the suffixes *-it-*, *-n-*, and *-struk-* in Czech, Russian, and BCS, respectively, as multiplicative morphemes. Moreover, I will assume here that inflectional markers and morphemes constituting non-cardinal stems have no contribution to the semantics of multipliers. Therefore, in the analysis to come I will focus only on the interaction between numeral roots and multiplicative morphemes.

An approach neglecting the semantic role of some of the examined morphemes in composition might seem in fact a considerable simplification since affixes marking non-cardinal stems are attested not only in multipliers, but also in a variety of other numerical expressions. For instance, consider Polish denumeral group nouns such as *dwójka* ‘(group of) two’, derived numerals presupposing that a plurality is heterogeneous with respect to the natural gender of referents such as *dwoje* ‘two (one male and one female)’, taxonomic numerals like *dwojaki* or *dwoisty*, both ‘twofold’, as well as denumeral verbs such as *podwoić* ‘to double’.<sup>4</sup> At first blush, it seems appealing to assume that the appearance of non-cardinal stem markers in all the above cases is non-coincidental from a semantic point of view. Therefore, an alternative approach could assign, e.g., Polish -*ój*-/o*j*-/oi- a meaning general enough to cover the whole variety of considered expressions, i.e., an underspecified operation on numbers that is different from the one employed in cardinals. Nevertheless, in this study I will remain agnostic with respect

<sup>4</sup>See Wągiel (2014; 2015b) for a discussion and possible analysis of expressions such as *dwójka* and *dwoje*. Notice also that -*ój*-, -*oj*-, and -*oi*- are allomorphs.

## 4 Multipliers

to that possibility. Instead, I will assume that the discussed markers are semantically vacuous and that their sole function is purely structural, specifically they simply form stems. For the sake of simplicity I will also ignore all the intricacies related to the semantics of gender as well as its relationship with quantification (see, e.g., Arsenijević 2017; Fassi Fehri 2016; 2018; Wągiel to appear) and the role of inflectional markers in coding such an interaction.

### 4.1.2 Subatomic quantifiers

In the previous section, we saw that in Slavic the morphological make-up of multipliers resembles that of cardinals with the crucial difference that the former consistently involve more structure. Let us now consider the meaning of phrases in which multipliers modify a noun. I will start with the set of examples in (8)–(11), which are semantically analogous and equivalent to the English phrase in (2c).

- (8) Polish (NCP)  
podwójna korona  
double.SG.F crown.F  
'double crown'
- (9) Czech (CNC)  
dvojitá korona  
double.SG.F crown.F  
'double crown'
- (10) Russian (RNC)  
dvojnaja korona  
double.SG.F crown.F  
'double crown'
- (11) BCS (CrNC)  
dvostruka kruna  
double.SG.F crown.F  
'double crown'

The examples provided above will be considered as illustrative since they are all attested in representative Slavic text corpora such as the National Corpus of Polish (NCP) (Przepiórkowski et al. 2012), the Czech National Corpus (CNC) (Křen et al. 2012), the Russian National Corpus (RNC) (Apresjan et al. 2006), and the

Croatian National Corpus (CrNC) (Tadić 2009).<sup>5</sup> Furthermore, the Polish noun *korona* ‘crown’ ranks at the 13th place on the list of collocation candidates within two-words collocations for the form *podwójna* ‘double’ in the balanced sample of the National Corpus of Polish whereas the Czech noun *koruna* ‘crown’ ranks at the 7th place for the form *dvojitá* ‘double’ in a corresponding Czech sample in the Czech National Corpus. Moreover, the example is of historical relevance since it resembles the famous case of the complex papal crown discussed in the philosophical literature (see Wiggins 1980: p. 70), which I will also briefly address below.

As already mentioned, noun phrases such as those in (8)–(11) denote sets of singular (and not plural) entities despite the fact that in the morphological make-up of multipliers modifying a noun there are numeral roots which involve reference to the number 2. Given the classical perspective on the meaning of numerals, at first sight this fact might appear somewhat puzzling. Nevertheless, it seems clear that in all the multiplier examples discussed in this chapter quantification is involved albeit it is not quantification over wholes. To illustrate this claim, let us consider the historical example in (12).<sup>6</sup>

(12) Polish

- a. Pszent to podwójna korona.  
Pschent this double crown  
‘The Pschent is a double crown.’
- b. ꞑ Pszent składa się z dwóch części.  
Pschent consists REFL from two.GEN parts.GEN  
‘The Pschent consists of two parts.’

The sentence in (12a) indicates a complex inner structure of the Pschent, and thus entails the sentence in (12b). If it is true of an object that it is a double crown, it has to be a crown and it has to consist of (at least) two elements.

However, it is not sufficient that the object referred to by the noun *Pszent* consists of any two elements since it is not the case that every crown consisting of two parts is a double crown. Rather, the two relevant elements need to have a particular property, i.e., a property comparable to the property of the whole. In other words, a double crown consists of two parts which can be considered

<sup>5</sup>NCP: <http://nkjp.pl/>, CNC: <https://www.korpus.cz/>, RNC: <https://ruscorpora.ru/new/>, CrnC: [http://filip.ffzg.hr/cgi-bin/run.cgi/first\\_form](http://filip.ffzg.hr/cgi-bin/run.cgi/first_form).

<sup>6</sup>In the following part of this section, the phenomena will be discussed mainly on the basis of Polish examples. However, the generalizations are intended to hold for every language in question.

## 4 Multipliers

crowns themselves. For instance, a reader familiar with ancient history will recognize the Pschent as a crown worn by rulers of Ancient Egypt. Historically, as demonstrated in Figure 4.1 the Pschent combined two parts, i.e., the Red Deshret Crown of Lower Egypt, see Figure 4.2, and the White Hedjet Crown of Upper Egypt, see Figure 4.3.<sup>7</sup> Its design represented the pharaoh's power over all of the unified kingdom. Due to the discussed features of the relevant parts of the Pschent, one could say it is a two-in-one crown.



Figure 4.1: Pschent



Figure 4.2: Deshret



Figure 4.3: Hedjet

Note that there is only one cut that divides the Pschent into the Deshret and Hedjet and this characteristic can be generalized to any hypothetical double crown. In other words, not every part of a double crown is a crown itself. On the contrary, in this and similar cases within the set of all the parts of a whole there are exactly two parts of which a property comparable to the property of the whole holds. Therefore, the semantics of Slavic predicates such as those in (8)–(11) and others corresponding to the English phrase *double crown* does not involve the property of divisive reference which is sometimes assumed to hold for mass nouns (e.g., Cheng 1973).<sup>8</sup> Notice also that the referents of multiplier phrases differ from things designated by nouns like *twig*, *rock*, and *fence*. Though such entities also involve parts that have the property of a whole, e.g., parts of a twig are also twigs and parts of a rock are also rocks (Zucchi & White 2001; Rothstein 2010: e.g.), the crucial distinction lies in the level of the arbitrariness of subdivisions. While objects in the extensions of *twig*-like expressions can be partitioned in an arbitrary manner and the resulting parts will still have the property of a whole (assuming some level of granularity) as long as they form continuous segments, complex individuals denoted by multiplier phrases typically require

<sup>7</sup>The pictures in Figure 4.1–4.3 are based on the work by fi:Käyttäjä:kompak shared on Wikimedia Commons under the CC-BY-SA 2.5 license. Sources: <https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Pschent2.svg>, <https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Deshret.svg>, and <https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Hedjet.svg>.

<sup>8</sup>I do not share this view. For an overview of the problems related to treating divisive reference as the hallmark of mass terms see, e.g., Grimm (2012b: pp. 111–119).

a very specific subdivision in order to identify the salient parts. This property makes them on a par with the already mentioned example of the papal tiara (see Wiggins 1980: p. 70) which is a complex object constituting a triple crown. What I believe to be the signature property of such individuals is that they are simultaneously perceived as one integrated entity and as a configuration of parts that could be considered independent objects in their own rights.

At this point, one might object that the double crown example is somewhat fancy and does not really reveal the meaning of multipliers. However, the characteristic described above is also valid for many other examples including nouns ranked relatively high as collocation candidates in the NCP. For instance, consider (13).

- (13) Polish (NCP)
- a. podwójne drzwi  
double.PL doors  
'double door'
  - b. podwójny garaż  
double.SG.M garage.M  
'double garage'

As for (13a), the noun *drzwi* 'door' ranks at the 23rd place on the NCP collocation list for the non-virile/neuter form *podwójne*.<sup>9</sup> An object referred to by the phrase is a door made of two independently moving leaves, i.e., entities that could be perceived as self-sufficient doors. Likewise, a double garage denoted by the expression in (13b) can be a building with two entrances leading to separate parking spaces.<sup>10</sup> Again, it appears that the structure of the entity in question involves parts that can be considered as having a property similar to the property of the whole.

The same way of thinking about multiplier phrases also applies to examples that at first blush appear to be less obvious than those discussed above. For instance, Polish multipliers frequently occur in constructions such as those provided in (14).

- (14) Polish (NCP)
- a. podwójna warstwa  
double.SG.F layer.F  
'double layer'

<sup>9</sup>Notice that in Polish the noun *drzwi* 'door' is a plurale tantum.

<sup>10</sup>Notice, however, that similarly to the English phrase *double garage* (13b) can also mean simply a garage that is big enough to fit two cars.

## 4 Multipliers

- b. podwójna powłoka  
double.SG.F coating.F  
'double coating'

The intuitions about frequencies are corroborated by the fact that, e.g., the noun *warstwa* 'layer' ranks at the 7th place on the NCP collocation list for the feminine form *podwójna*. At first sight, it seems that expressions such as (14a) and (14b) refer to homogeneous entities and as such do not designate objects involving a complex structure. However, under closer inspection it turns out that even in these cases division into parts is not arbitrary. Specifically, a double layer is normally taken to be a layer consisting of two layers merged together. Since layers are flat entities spread over some surface, only a cut alongside a certain plane can divide the two parts constituting an entity denoted by the phrase in (14a). Similarly, the expression in (14b) designates an entity whose structure can be partitioned only in a particular manner in order to separate the salient parts. Intuitively, a double coating consists of two parts that themselves are coverings applied to the surface of some object.

Certainly, examples such as those in (8)–(11) and (13)–(14) do not exhaust the combinatorial potential of Slavic multipliers and some more problematic cases will be discussed subsequently in §4.2. Nevertheless, the data discussed above indicate that at least a subset of constructions involving multipliers indicates clear cases of subatomic quantification. Noun phrases such as those in (8)–(11) and (13)–(14) denote sets of things conceptualized as singular objects with a complex inner structure. The role of multipliers in the discussed constructions is to quantify over particular parts of such structures, i.e., parts that have a property comparable to the property of the whole. I will refer to such elements as self-sufficient parts. However, before we turn our attention to some less obvious examples and see how far the generalization proposed above can get us, let us briefly examine to what extent the described semantic properties are representative for multiplier phrases in general.

### 4.1.3 Cross-linguistic similarities

In this section, I will discuss corpus-based evidence suggesting that the semantic behavior of multipliers discussed in the previous section is not a Slavic idiosyncrasy but it is actually widespread in languages such as English and German. In particular, I will inspect a number of phrases mostly involving some of the most frequent collocates of *double* as specified by the Corpus of Contemporary American English (COCA) (Davies 2009) and supplement them with German equiva-

lents found in the German Reference Corpus (GRC) (Kupietz & Keibel 2009).<sup>11</sup> This brief investigation will both provide a slightly broader cross-linguistic perspective and prepare the ground for a discussion of more problematic cases in §4.2.

Let us start with the English phrases in (15).

- (15) English (COCA)
- a. double bracket
  - b. double sink
  - c. double oven
  - d. double knot

The expression in (15a) is a somewhat metalinguistic example. Specifically, the symbol  $\llbracket \dots \rrbracket$  used to indicate the semantic evaluation function every formal semanticist knows so well, is referred to by the pluralized phrase in (15a), i.e., *double brackets*. The structure of the entity is such that each of the two parts of the, say, opening bracket can be considered a bracket itself. However, since they are spatially arranged in such a way that they form an integrated object perceived as one, under ordinary circumstances it would be rather awkward to refer to a double bracket as *two brackets*. An analogous effect can be observed with respect to the meaning of the phrase in (15b) which refers to a basin designed in such a way that it includes two parts each of which is a sink itself. Similarly, (15c) is true of a cooking device that consists of two merged ovens, i.e., two parts that have a property comparable with the property of the whole. The expression (15d) refers to a knot wound twice which typically results in an object consisting of two recognizable parts that are knots themselves.

Other examples of the discussed sort involve relatively frequent multiplier phrases such as those in (16).

- (16) English (COCA)
- a. double staircase
  - b. double tomb
  - c. double canoe
  - d. double flute
  - e. double needle
  - f. double chin

---

<sup>11</sup>COCA: <https://www.english-corpora.org/coca/>, GRC: <https://www.ids-mannheim.de/digspra/kl/projekte/korpora/>.

#### 4 Multipliers

Each of the expressions provided above refers to an entity perceived as a complex object involving two salient parts with a property comparable to the one of the whole. Specifically, (16a) and (16b) denote a staircase consisting of two connected staircases and a tomb built in such a way that it comprises two tombs in one structure, respectively. Analogously, the phrases in (16c)–(16e) designate entities conceptualized as one object consisting of two merged individuals in their own right. Finally, the frequent expression in (16f) refers to a body part that due to the excessive amount of fat or skin looks as if it were a two-layered chin.

In parallel to phrases such as (14), the COCA provides examples of homogeneous entities involving self-sufficient parts, see (17). The same observations I have discussed with respect to the Polish data also apply to the English expressions.

- (17) English (COCA)
- a. double layer
  - b. double glazing
  - c. double stitching

Sometimes, parts of an individual denoted by a multiplier phrase are not actually connected but remain in such proximity that they are perceived as forming one complex entity. For instance, the phrases in (18a) and (18b) refer to close-set pairs of meteorological and astronomical objects, respectively. In such cases, the perceived distance between individual rainbows and stars is considered so small that a pair is conceptualized as a complex entity consisting of two parts each of which has a property comparable to the one of the whole. Similar examples include, e.g., *double nebula* and *double cluster* which also refer to astronomical objects perceived as complex dual entities.

- (18) English (COCA)
- a. double rainbow
  - b. double star

The results of several quick searches in the German Reference Corpus (GRC) consulted with native speakers demonstrate that the reported effects are also attested in German. The phrases in (19) exemplify different types of referents of multiplier phrases including homogeneous entities, see (19b), and phenomena perceived as wholes consisting of similar objects remaining in relative proximity, see (19c).<sup>12</sup>

---

<sup>12</sup>In fact, German distinguishes between two distinct, though morphologically related, multiplier



- (19) German (GRC)
- a. Doppelkrone  
double.crown  
'double crown'
  - b. Doppelverglasung  
double.glazing  
'double glazing'
  - c. Doppelregbogen  
double.rainbow  
'double rainbow'

The quick overview of some of the frequent contexts multipliers appear in shows that the double crown example discussed in §4.1.2 is not some extravagant case. Rather, it represents common semantic behavior of multipliers. I conclude that the English and German evidence based on the collocation list from the COCA and searches in the GRC suggests that the pattern is robust.

#### 4.1.4 Multipliers as degree modifiers

Briefly, I will return to the data both from Slavic and English to examine somewhat more problematic examples. Nonetheless, before I move on to the discussion of cases where at least at first sight intuitions concerning the subatomic structure of entities denoted by multiplier phrases are not that clear, let us discuss yet another use of the expressions in question. In English, multipliers can be used as predeterminer modifiers, i.e., external modifiers of the whole DP occurring before the central determiner such as the definite article (see, e.g., Quirk et al. 1985: pp. 257–258; Huddleston & Pullum 2002: pp. 433–436).<sup>13</sup> Examples of such uses are given in (20).

- (20) English (Quirk et al. 1985: p. 257; Huddleston & Pullum 2002: p. 434; adapted)
- a. double the amount
  - b. triple the size
  - c. quadruple the fun

---

expressions, e.g., adjectival *doppelt* and prefixal *Doppel-*. Though it seems that their distribution differs, for the sake of brevity I will not examine the alternation here and leave such an investigation for future research.

<sup>13</sup>Actually, the term predeterminer modifier is used only by Huddleston & Pullum. Quirk et al. use the term predeterminer instead.

## 4 Multipliers

The nominals provided in (20) appear to be degree-related (see Morzycki 2009). For instance, the meaning of the noun *size* in (20b) could be thought of as corresponding to some degree of volume. Likewise, the noun *fun* is clearly gradable since it allows for degree modification as witnessed by the well-formedness of the comparative phrase *more fun*. Consequently, I conclude that multipliers used as predeterminer modifiers involve degree modification and as such are expressions of a different type.

At some abstract level it might seem appealing to try to associate the use of multipliers as degree modifiers with the use related to subatomic quantification we are interested in here. However, in this book I will not pursue such an attempt for two reasons. First, the phrases in (20) have a different structure than, e.g., those in (15). In the former, multipliers combine with NPs whereas in the latter they modify whole DPs. I argue that this fact indicates that there are good reasons to believe that in each case they introduce a semantic operation of a different type. The second reason has to do with the cross-linguistic distribution of multipliers. For instance, Czech distinguishes lexically between subatomic multipliers such as *dvojitý* ‘double, consisting of two parts’ and *dvojnásobný* ‘double, twice as large’ (see Dočekal & Wągiel 2018b for a related discussion). This fact further suggests that the semantics of English multipliers used as degree modifiers differs from what is the main interest of this study.

### 4.2 Less obvious cases

In the previous section, I discussed model examples of multiplier phrases denoting complex entities with self-sufficient parts. I signaled that the distribution of multipliers in the examined Slavic languages as well as in English and German is richer. In this section, I will discuss other types of nominals that can be modified by numerical expressions such as *double* and show how the perspective posited above allows us to capture the meaning of less obvious cases.

#### 4.2.1 Essential parts

So far, I have discussed examples of multiplier phrases denoting objects involving self-sufficient parts, i.e., elements that have a property comparable to the property of the whole. However, it is possible to come across phrases in which the multiplier does quantify over parts of an individual, but crucially those parts are not self-sufficient. Examples of such expressions are frequent in the fast food culture and involve, e.g., Slavic phrases such as those in (21)–(24).

- (21) Polish  
 podwójny hamburger  
 double.SG.M hamburger.M  
 ‘double hamburger’
- (22) Czech  
 dvojitý hamburger  
 double.SG.M hamburger.M  
 ‘double hamburger’
- (23) Russian  
 dvojnoj gamburger  
 double.SG.M hamburger.M  
 ‘double hamburger’
- (24) BCS  
 dupli hamburger  
 double.SG.M hamburger.SG.M  
 ‘double hamburger’

In each of these phrases given above, it is not the case that its referent consists of two parts that are hamburgers themselves, but rather that it consists of two patties in a bun. This seems to differ significantly from the cases discussed so far. However, the fact that the parts that multipliers quantify over are not self-sufficient does not mean that they are arbitrary. In fact, they appear to be the most salient parts of the whole thing since in the fast food context it is commonly assumed that the essential element of a hamburger is a patty whereas other parts of a sandwich are considered to be merely a garnish.

The fact that a certain part of an entity is perceived as more salient than others corresponds to what is sometimes called structured parthood (Champollion & Krifka 2016). As mentioned in Chapter 1, the term has been postulated to account for the fact that some parts appear to have a more significant status than others or, in other words, are perceptibly distinguished within a whole.<sup>14</sup> The difference between structured and unstructured elements is that the former are cognitively salient parts of a whole whereas the latter are not. Table 4.1 gives some examples of structured part relations.

For some time, it has been recognized that structured parthood plays an important role in organizing lexicons of natural languages, specifically via semantic relations such as meronymy and hyponymy (see, e.g., Cruse 1986). However, in

<sup>14</sup>For an overview and discussion of related philosophical issues see, e.g., Simons (1987) and Varzi (2016).

#### 4 Multipliers

Table 4.1: Examples of structured parthood (Simons 1987: p. 10)

WHOLE	PART
a (certain) man	his head
a (certain) tree	its trunk
a house	its roof
a mountain	its summit
a battle	its opening shot
an insect's life	its larval stage
a novel	its first chapter

contemporary research on natural language, the impact of structured part relations on compositional semantics seems to be somewhat neglected (e.g., Champollion 2012b; Champollion & Krifka 2016). Yet, it appears that multipliers provide evidence that cognitively salient parts are relevant from a quantificational perspective. In particular, I would like to suggest that counting self-sufficient parts is a particular instance of a more general subatomic quantification over particular elements within a make-up of an entity. Consequently, I posit that the inner structure of objects such as hamburgers is in fact linguistically encoded in some way and that multipliers are sensitive to its most cognitively salient parts. In particular, they select for such essential elements within the part-whole structure of a certain whole and quantify over them. Within such a view, self-sufficient parts constitute a particular case within a class of structured parts, specifically a subclass of cognitively most salient elements, i.e., essential parts.

However, what counts as an essential part is somewhat vague and can be subject to different conceptualizations under different circumstances. To illustrate this claim, let us consider another sample from the COCA collocate list for the English multiplier *double*, as provided in (25).

- (25) English (COCA)
- a. double arrow
  - b. double dagger
  - c. double sword
  - d. double shotgun

For instance, consider the term in (25a) one can stumble across in the context of typography. Though in the Unicode standard the expression refers to the symbol  $\Rightarrow$ , it is commonly used to designate also the symbols  $\Leftrightarrow$  and  $\gg$ . In the Unicode

terminology, what appears to be considered the most salient, and thus multiplied, part is the horizontal line. However, in the more common and lax use of the expression, it seems that it is the arrowhead that is taken to be the essential part. In typography, the phrase in (25b) refers to the symbol ‡. Its design indicates that the parts worth quantification over are the handles. Nonetheless, in a military, martial arts, or gaming context the very same expression or a similar phrase such as (25c) is much more likely to denote thrusting weapons with two blades. On the other hand, there are some examples that display a stable meaning. For instance, the phrase in (25d) refers to a gun with two joint barrels. From a ballistic point of view, the barrel ensures functionality of a gun, whereas in terms of size it also constitutes its most significant portion. Consequently, it is perceived as the essential part of a weapon and when the noun *shotgun* combines with a multiplier, the resulting phrase designates objects consisting of two merged barrels.

Some other examples of the sort discussed above are the expressions in (26), which were all attested on the English Internet.

- (26) English (Internet)
- a. double stroller
  - b. double trolley
  - c. double tooth
  - d. double Axel

For instance, the phrases in (26a) and (26b) can refer to objects that have two components installed on a single set of wheels. The former can denote a pushchair with two baby seats arranged one over the other, whereas the latter would be true of a cart with two trays or two columns for trays. Likewise, the expression in (26c) describes a condition known also as tooth gemination when a person has a single dental root with a single crown that has a cleft in it. As a result, the tooth looks like consisting of two smaller teeth. Finally, the phrase in (26d) is not true of a figure skating element in which a skater jumps, spins in the air, lands and jumps, spins in the air, and lands again.<sup>15</sup> Rather, it refers to a single jump with two spins.

At this point, it is clear that the generalization concerning multipliers as quantifiers over self-sufficient parts requires an adjustment. In fact, multipliers count essential, i.e., cognitively most salient, elements within the subatomic part-whole structure encoded by the modified noun. Self-sufficient parts constitute only a subset of such entities. In the next section, I will discuss the case of mass nouns where at first blush talking about essential parts does not make any sense.

---

<sup>15</sup>A single Axel jump involves one spin in the air.

## 4 Multipliers

### 4.2.2 Measures

In the previous sections, I discussed examples involving count nouns. Nevertheless, just like equivalent expressions in other languages Slavic multipliers co-occur also with mass terms. At first sight, it might appear to be problematic for the proposed perspective since it is somewhat odd to think about referents of prototypical mass nouns in terms of consisting of essential parts. For instance, consider the phrases in (27)–(30).

- (27) Polish  
podwójna kawa  
double.SG.F coffee.F  
'double coffee'
- (28) Czech  
dvojitá káva  
double.SG.F coffee.F  
'double coffee'
- (29) Russian  
dvojnoj kofe  
double.SG.M coffee.M  
'double coffee'
- (30) BCS  
dupla kahva/kava/kafa  
double.SG.F coffee.F  
'double coffee'

Prima facie, it may seem that there is no straightforward correlation between the semantic behavior of multipliers we have observed so far and the examples introduced above since none of the expressions refers to some cognitively salient parts of coffee, e.g., coffee grounds. However, a more careful examination reveals some non-trivial facts about such examples. More specifically, the contrast appears to fade when we realize that multiplier phrases involving mass terms in fact are not mass. Notice that the expressions in (27)–(30) neither denote a scattered entity, i.e., a substance in general, nor do they refer to some arbitrary quantity thereof. Instead, they designate a standard amount, i.e., a big cup of coffee, which consists of two standard amounts of coffee or, in other words, it is equivalent to two regular cups of coffee.

Let us consider the relationship between bare mass nouns and mass nouns modified by multipliers more closely on the basis of Polish data. As already men-

tioned in §3.3, Polish mass terms are generally incompatible with cardinal numerals unless they are coerced into a count reading via some sort of packaging or portioning.<sup>16</sup> Consequently, a phrase such as (31a) lacks a substance interpretation and can only refer to a standard or contextually determined portion of coffee. As I have already stated, the same is true of a multiplier phrase such as that in (27). In this respect, multipliers pattern with cardinals in that they coerce the meaning of the modified mass noun. Furthermore, as can be witnessed by the felicity of (31b), multiplier phrases involving mass terms are countable. When combined with a cardinal, they denote a plurality of portions that consist of some number of standard measures.

- (31) Polish
- a. trzy kawy  
three coffees  
'three coffees'  
(i) portion interpretation  
(ii) #substance interpretation
  - b. trzy podwójne kawy  
three double.PL coffees  
'three double coffees'

Given the portion interpretation of examples such as (27)–(30), describing their meaning in terms of an interaction between quantification over self-sufficient parts and some sort of a mass-count shift appears as a plausible possibility. For this purpose, one can adopt the standard Universal Packager operation which yields quantized portions or packages of a substance for a given mass entity.<sup>17</sup> Assuming that the mass noun *kawa* 'coffee' is shifted by the Universal Packager or some other equivalent operation (see, e.g., Rothstein 2011; Khruzman et al. 2015; Landman 2016) before it is modified by the multiplier, the resulting count noun refers to a standard or contextually determined portion of coffee, specifically a cup of coffee.<sup>18</sup> The multiplier then asserts that within the package there are two standard or contextually determined measures, i.e., two cups of coffee. As

<sup>16</sup>Another possible coercion involves a taxonomic interpretation where the cardinal quantifies over subkinds of a particular kind. For the sake of brevity, I ignore this phenomenon here.

<sup>17</sup>An alternative approach to be taken is to enrich the structure with a classifier. As suggested by Selkirk (1977) and subsequent work, it is plausible to assume that possibly every natural language uses classifiers which are often null.

<sup>18</sup>There are good reasons to presume that the denotation of the mass noun is in fact coerced prior to the application of the multiplier since only after the shift mass nouns can combine with number words.

#### 4 Multipliers

a result, we obtain a double coffee, i.e., a standard quantity consisting of two smaller parts that have a property of being a standard quantity of coffee as well or, in other words, a cup of coffee to the measure of two cups-worth. This is actually quite similar to the cases provided in (8)–(11). Furthermore, note that in the discussed coffee scenario the portion of beverage is defined pragmatically and is at least to some extent fixed. In other words, there are exactly two parts of the amount of coffee constituting double coffee that are standard measures. Smaller or bigger amounts are simply not standard with respect to coffee. Yet of course the standard can differ with respect to other beverages or food-stuffs. For instance, multiplier phrases such as those in (32) refer to different amounts of substance.

- (32) English (COCA)
- a. double vodka
  - b. double martini
  - c. double ice cream

Interestingly, it seems that there is a deep relationship between multipliers and packaging. One could easily imagine that multipliers would also interact with another mass-count shift, specifically with Universal Sorter (see Bunt 1985), which coerces the mass noun denotation into a count denotation referring to quantized subkinds. However, it seems that at least in Slavic there is no such interaction since phrases such as those in (27)–(30) lack the relevant interpretation. In particular, (27) is not true of a substance consisting of two kinds of coffee, say a drink brewed from a mixture of *Coffea arabica* and *Coffea canephora* beans. This fact seems to suggest that multipliers operate only on mereologies involving object-level entities, i.e., tokens, and cannot count parts of kind-level individuals, i.e., types.<sup>19</sup>

Up to this point, I have focused on multiplier phrases involving concrete nouns since they are the subject of this study. However, as can be witnessed by the collocation lists in the examined corpora many of such constructions comprise also nominals of different sorts. For the sake of completeness, in the next two sections I will briefly discuss how the observations collected so far can inform us about the meaning of two other types of multipliers phrases.

---

<sup>19</sup>I leave aside the question what a part of a kind could be.



## 4.2.3 Events

I believe that the discussion of the data examined so far gives some intriguing insights into issues concerning subatomic quantification in the adjectival domain. The proposed generalization seems to cover a significant subset of constructions in which multipliers appear, including examples such as those in (8)–(11) and many others provided in this chapter. Nonetheless, as attested in the examined corpora, multipliers can co-occur also with nouns that at first sight might appear to be problematic since they do not refer to concrete entities such as crowns, hamburgers, or portions of coffee. For instance, as indicated by examples such as those in (33) Polish multipliers can also combine with deverbal nouns which do not involve reference to entities, but rather to some abstract objects. Neither murder nor victory are spatial objects as opposed to all previously discussed cases.

- (33) Polish (NCP)
- a. podwójne morderstwo  
double.SG.N murder.N  
'double murder'
  - b. podwójne zwycięstwo  
double.SG.N victory.N  
'double victory'

It is usually assumed that deverbal nominalizations with the exception of participant and result nominals denote properties of events (e.g., Grimshaw 2011), i.e., spatiotemporal particulars with a location and time (Davidson 1967). A standard test reveals that a noun such as Polish *morderstwo* 'murder' refers to an event since it can be felicitously modified by event-modifying predicates such as *mieć miejsce* 'take place' and *być świadkiem* 'witness' (e.g., Grimshaw 1990), as indicated in (34a) and (34b), respectively.

- (34) Polish
- a. Morderstwo miało miejsce w piątek.  
murder had place.ACC in Friday.ACC  
'The murder took place on Friday.'
  - b. Jan był świadkiem morderstwa.  
Jan was witness.INS murder.GEN  
'Jan witnessed the murder.'

#### 4 Multipliers

If multipliers can count essential parts of not only entities but also events, the proposed view naturally extends to examples such as those in (33). An intuitive way to understand subatomic quantification within the structure of an event involves temporal characteristics. Within this view, a self-sufficient part of an event is a subevent of which the same property as the one of the whole event holds. For instance, in a murder scenario in which a maniac stabbed to death two victims with a knife one after another there would be two relevant parts of the whole murdering event, i.e., stabbing victim 1 and stabbing victim 2, and each of those subevents can be considered a murder as well, see Figure 4.4. In such a case the multiplier in, e.g., (33a) quantifies over self-sufficient parts of the murdering event, i.e., subevents that are murders themselves. Since there is no murder without a victim, the phrase infers that there were two individuals murdered during the complex murdering event which seems to be the expected result.

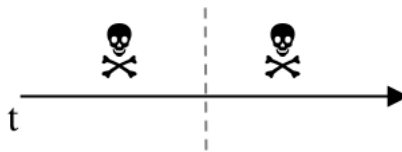


Figure 4.4: Parts of a double murder event in a knife-stabbing scenario

Nonetheless, one could object that such an approach cannot account for situations such as a bomb scenario in which an intended explosion affected two victims leading to a double homicide. In such a case, quantification over temporally subsequent subevents is not possible since the explosion had an immediate effect and there was virtually no running time of the event. However, I believe there is no reason to assume that temporal chunks are the only possible parts that can constitute an event. Since events are complex peculiarities involving not only times, but also locations, in a bomb scenario described above it is still possible to differentiate between parts of an event in spatial terms. Consider the situation depicted in Figure 4.5.

Even with no temporally defined subevents it is quite straightforward that one could specify two areas within the space in which the explosion took place, as indicated by the dashed line. As a result, we obtain two parts of the murdering event each of which turns out to have the property of the whole and since individuals are in general assumed to occupy space, it should be possible to draw divisions like that with respect to any event.

Another way of explaining scenarios such as the one depicted in Figure 4.5 would be to assume the uniqueness of roles condition on the individuation of

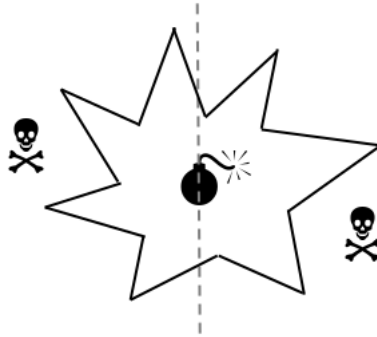


Figure 4.5: Parts of a double murder event in a bomb scenario

events (see Parsons 1990). In such a case, the bomb explosion event can be described as consisting of two murdering subevents by distributing to different victims.

All things considered, it seems that the way of thinking about the meaning of multipliers I argue for can be easily extended to phrases involving reference to abstract peculiarities such as eventualities. Adopting a typical distinction between entities and events as typically assumed in standard Neo-Davidsonian frameworks (e.g., Carlson 1984; Dowty 1989; Parsons 1990), along with the proposal that pluralities of events are obtained similarly to pluralities of entities (Bach 1986b), would simply require to ensure that the semantics of multipliers is general enough to cover both types of objects. In the next section, I will inspect yet another type of expression that is often modified by multipliers and does not necessarily denote concrete things.

#### 4.2.4 Social roles

The final piece of data that appears to be problematic for the claim that multipliers are in fact subatomic quantifiers is constituted by phrases with nouns referring to social roles in examples such as those in (35).

- (35) Polish (NCP)
- a. podwójny agent  
double.SG.M agent.M  
'double agent'
  - b. podwójny mistrz  
double.SG.M master.M  
'double champion'

## 4 Multipliers

Under ordinary circumstances, the phrase in (35a) does not refer to an individual who consists of two parts, e.g., Siamese twins working as spies, but rather they seem to involve a relationship between an individual and two other entities. To be an agent means to be an agent for some intelligence agency, i.e., one cannot be an agent without an employer for whom they spy. Likewise, (35b) refers to one person who is a champion in two disciplines. In both cases, the multiplier seems to quantify over entities denoted by the argument of the noun which at first blush is not expected given the previously discussed semantic behavior.

At this stage, it is not entirely clear how to integrate the ideas developed in this chapter with the treatment of examples such as those in (35). However, a possible extension of the proposed view is to assume that nouns such as *agent* involve some kind of an abstract association to entities related to denoted individuals, e.g., an association between agents and intelligence agencies, and that such an association is subject to part-whole relations. A promising perspective to pursue involves adopting the notion of roles into semantic theory (see Sowa 1984; Steimann 2000; Zobel 2017; Wągiel 2021). Intuitively, roles are functions or capacities of individuals, i.e., social constructs independent of the individuals that bear them. Crucially for our purposes, for an individual to bear a particular role, it must stand in a certain relationship to other individuals. Following Zobel (2017), one could distinguish between class nouns such as *man*, i.e., properties of individuals of type  $\langle e, t \rangle$ , and role nouns such as *agent* by adding a new type  $r$  referring to roles and a shifting mechanism relating roles and individuals. Role nouns would then essentially denote properties of roles at type  $\langle r, t \rangle$ , but they could be shifted to refer to properties of entities as well. Within this view, multipliers would quantify over essential parts of roles rather than individuals and the whole phrase could then be shifted to refer to entities if required. This would account for the fact that expressions such as those in (35) denote individuals performing a complex role, i.e., individuals involved in activities and bearing responsibilities related to two distinct intelligence agencies. However, exploring the interaction between subatomic quantification and roles is rather challenging and goes beyond the scope of this study. Instead, in the next section I will return to the relationship between multipliers and cardinals.

### 4.3 Multipliers vs. cardinals

As we saw in §4.1.1, Slavic multipliers display morphological complexity, which suggests semantic compositionality. For instance, the Polish multiplier *podwójny* ‘double’ consists of the numeral root  $\sqrt{dw}$  corresponding to the number 2 present

also in other types of numerical expressions, e.g., the cardinal *dwa* ‘two’, as well as additional morphemes including a special multiplicative circumfix *po* ... *n-*. This fact indicates that what multipliers and cardinals have in common is some sort of reference to integers. Though they both indicate that the number of quantified things equals 2, they differ in that they are devised to count entities of a distinct type. In particular, cardinals are semantically dedicated to count wholes. It is true that in Chapter 2 and 3 we saw that they can be used in count explicit partitives in order to quantify over parts of objects, but notice that it is only possible when they modify a partitive word. In such a case, entities denoted by the whole partitive are treated as objects in their own right. Hence, the source of subatomic quantification is in fact the partitive, and the cardinal simply counts provided entities in their relative entirety. Bare cardinals can never access elements within a part-whole structure of a given entity. Rather, they always count entire objects in the denotation of a modified noun. On the other hand, multipliers are essentially subatomic quantifiers. They count parts of objects referred to by a modified nominal.

To better illustrate the claim introduced above, let us closely consider the contrasts between the truth conditions of the sentences involving numerical expressions in (36).

- (36) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)
- a. There are two crowns in the vault.
  - b. There are two parts of the crown in the vault.
  - c. There is a double crown in the vault.
  - d. There are three double crowns in the vault.

Under normal circumstances, there is no way the statement in (36a) could be judged true if there were only two parts of a crown or crowns, e.g., an orb and a jewel, in the vault. The numeral phrase simply cannot be understood as referring to two parts instead of two entire objects.<sup>20</sup> In other words, cardinals are semantically devised to counting wholes. This is not in contradiction with the fact that in a sentence including a count explicit partitive construction as in (36b) the cardinal does count parts of a whole object. Consequently, (36b) would be true if there were only, say, an orb and a cross in the vault. Notice, however, that it is the partitive word that employs subatomic quantification. The cardinal here simply counts parts provided by the partitive construction as if they were considered

<sup>20</sup>Of course, what portion of an entity counts as an entire object is rather vague and might differ with respect to a particular predicate and a particular context. However, this is not at issue here.

#### 4 Multipliers

objects in their own right. In other words, it does not operate on the part-whole structure of a given part. This contrasts with the meaning of (36c) which would be true in a scenario where there were just one object in the vault. Crucially, however, that object would have to have two essential parts or, to put it differently, two parts having a property of being sort of a crown. Finally, the felicity of the sentence in (36d) shows that both types of quantification can co-occur within one phrase. Here, the multiplier triggers subatomic quantification constrained as discussed above, whereas the cardinal quantifies over wholes having the inner structure imposed by the multiplier. Consequently, the sentence would be true in a situation where in the vault there were three crowns such that each of them consisted of two self-sufficient parts. Notice that the relative order of the cardinal and multiplier as well as adjectival properties of the latter further suggest that subatomic quantification takes place first and only after the resulting wholes are counted.

The discussed contrast between cardinals and multipliers becomes even more salient if we consider what happens when the latter modify partitive words. Compare the examples in (37).

- (37) Polish
- a. dwie części adaptera  
two parts adapter.GEN  
'two parts of the adapter'
  - b. podwójna część adaptera  
double part adapter.GEN  
'double part of the adapter'

We have already examined in detail count explicit partitives such as (37a), but let us now contemplate the meaning of an equivalent multiplier phrase such as (37b). Crucially, the multiplier quantifies over parts of a part of the adapter. The whole expression would be true of an entity that is an adapter part and consists of two comparable parts. Yet again, the multiplier employs quantification within the part-whole structure of a thing denoted by the nominal no matter what that thing is. Though such a use is for sure very rare, the phrase is definitely interpretable.<sup>21</sup>

A natural example of a sentence with the discussed construction attested in the NCP is provided in (38).

---

<sup>21</sup>The example was actually found on a website of a producer of adapters with a picture of a described part. Source (accessed on 10th November 2020): <https://www.kstools.com/pl/produkty/narzedzia-specjalistyczne-do-samochodow-osobowych/silnik-system-paliwowy/czesci-pojedyncze/2159/podwojna-czesc-adaptera>.

- (38) Polish (NCP)  
 Skrzynkę horyzontalną otwiera się podobnie jak podwójną  
 box.ACC horizontal.ACC opens REFL similar how double.ACC  
 część przedniej ścianki [...]   
 part.ACC front.GEN wall.GEN  
 ‘The horizontal box can be opened similar to the double part of the front  
 wall [...]’

I conclude that the purpose of cardinals is essentially to count whole entities in the extension of a modified nominal. If they modify a regular noun, they simply quantify over objects in its denotation. Similarly, if they appear in a count explicit partitive, they count provided parts in their entirety as if they were wholes. At the same time, natural language developed a special type of expression dedicated to numerical subatomic quantification, namely multipliers. Multipliers differ from cardinals in that they always count essential parts of objects denoted by a modified nominal be it a whole or a part. In other words, they are equipped to count parts within a whole. On the other hand, the two categories are similar in that although they typically count, sometimes they seem to measure. The quantificational properties of the two numerical expressions in question are summarized in Table 4.2.

Table 4.2: Properties of cardinals and multipliers

	CARDINALS	MULTIPLIERS
subatomic quantification	*	✓
quantification over wholes	✓	*

This concludes the examination of some non-trivial properties of the neglected class of multipliers with respect to the issues concerning subatomic quantification.

## 4.4 Summary

In this chapter, I focused on a key topic concerning subatomic quantification. Specifically, I presented novel evidence demonstrating that in natural language there are numerical expressions devised for the purpose of quantification over parts, namely multipliers such as English *double*. The fact that such lexical items

#### 4 *Multipliers*

are cross-linguistically widespread indicates the relevance of part-whole structures of singular objects for the interaction between parthood and quantification in natural language semantics. The morphological evidence from Slavic demonstrates that Polish, Czech, Russian, and Bosnian-Croatian-Serbian multipliers are formally complex expressions derived from numeral roots of corresponding cardinals. I argued that the morphological complexity of Slavic multipliers suggests semantic compositionality.

Multipliers are sensitive to the internal part-whole structure of objects denoted by nouns they modify and involve quantification over cognitively most salient elements of those objects. Often, such elements are self-sufficient parts, i.e., entities that have a property comparable with the property of the whole. Sometimes, they are not self-sufficient but rather they are considered the most significant parts within the inner structure of an object. I generalized that multipliers count essential parts, i.e., parts perceived as crucial for an entity to be considered as having a particular property, with self-sufficient parts constituting a subset thereof. Moreover, I examined multiplier phrases involving mass terms. Interestingly, such expressions receive a portion interpretation and as such are countable. This fact indicates that multipliers either perform or require a mass-count shift in terms of packaging. Furthermore, I proposed how the view argued for here could be extended to cover cases of multiplier phrases involving other types of NPs, namely event nominals and role nouns. Incorporating abstract objects such as eventualities and roles into the ontology would allow us to capture the meaning of virtually all multiplier phrases in terms of one unified mechanism. Finally, I discussed how multipliers differ from cardinals. The crucial distinction between the two boils down to what type of entity they count in terms of part-whole structure. In particular, while cardinals always quantify over wholes, multipliers always count parts of a singular object which, similarly to complex entities or events they constitute, have themselves a property considered essential for an entity to fall in the denotation of a modified noun.

This chapter concludes the empirical part of this book. The most important insights could be summarized as follows. First, singulars and plurals share a unified part-whole structure. Second, natural language is sensitive to topological relations holding between parts of entities in the denotations of nominal expressions and allows for quantification at the subatomic level. Third, only entities that are perceived as constituting integrated wholes are conceptualized as countable. Finally, though different types of numerical expressions specialize in quantification either over wholes or over parts, the underlying mechanism is the same. In the next chapter, I will introduce the conceptual background that will serve as an informal notional basis for a formal account for subatomic quantification.



## 5 Conceptual background

In the previous three chapters, I discussed novel data concerning the interaction between partitivity and countability. In particular, I presented linguistic evidence suggesting that singulars and plurals do not differ with respect to the part-whole relation they employ but rather that parts of singularities remain in a particular topological configuration ensuring that the whole constitutes an integrated object, whereas parts of pluralities do not, and thus form a scattered entity. This claim is motivated by two linguistic facts. First, cross-linguistically the same partitive words can appear both in entity and set partitives. Second, the contrast between regular plurals and Italian irregular plurals reveals a crucial topological distinction between the two. Furthermore, I showed that natural language does not allow for counting arbitrary sums of topologically unrelated parts. Only entities that are conceptualized as constituting continuous objects can be subject to counting. This restriction appears to hold both on the level of wholes and on the subatomic level, as the evidence concerning topology-sensitive partitive words as well as the semantic behavior of multipliers indicate. In other words, quantification in natural language is sensitive to topological relations between parts of entities it operates on.

In this chapter, I will discuss the conceptual background concerning countability and subatomic quantification I assume here. In particular I will present three claims regarding the relevance of topological notions in nominal semantics, general counting principles, and their significance for subatomic quantification. This informal conceptual framework will motivate the formal account for the core phenomena explored in this study, which I will develop in Chapters 6 and 7. However, before I present in detail the notional core of this study, let us consider a more general cognitive context. Though the linguistic evidence presented so far is compelling and entirely motivates the claims, I believe it is useful to confront it with what we know from psychological research in order to provide supplementary support.

## 5.1 Psychological evidence

In this section, I will review psychological evidence that demonstrates several factors concerning human cognition that correlate with the linguistic evidence introduced in Chapters 2, 3, and 4. First, I will discuss the relevance of how spatial categories such as solidity, shape, and most importantly integrity of entities are conceptualized with respect to the mass/count distinction in grammar. Furthermore, I will consider the significance of the part/whole distinction for language acquisition and review the evidence that humans have simultaneous perception of an object as a whole and as a collection of parts. Finally, I will discuss what cognitive studies tell us on number sense in humans, especially on the relation between integrity and counting in young children. The literature on each topic is abundant. For the sake of brevity, in each case I will only refer to a few representative studies.

### 5.1.1 Object/substance distinction

I will start with a brief overview of the research in cognitive psychology relating individuation with the difference in perception of solid objects and amorphous substances, which suggests that this distinction is relevant to the phenomenon of countability in natural language. In the past 30 years, convincing evidence has been presented that indicates that the distinction between objects and substances is not merely an alternation based on grammar. Contrary to Quine's (1960) influential claim that it is language what provides the means for individuation of objects (see also Pelletier & Schubert 1989), it appears that count and mass syntax reflect on how we see entities in the world rather than the other way round. In other words, the research to be discussed here shows that the distinction between objects and substances is not something conventional, formal, or arbitrary imposed by the way a particular language is devised, i.e., a way of speaking so to say. To the contrary, it appears to be a deeply embedded component of human cognition manifesting itself in non-verbal infants at a few months of age and shared with non-human species.

Multiple experiments demonstrate that children associate count nouns with solid discrete objects at an early age (see, e.g., Landau et al. 1988; Soja et al. 1991; Imai & Gentner 1997). The evidence comes from the results of the so-called word extension task, which concerns learning new words by subjects. The procedure is as follows. First, a child is presented with a novel entity and instructed on what it is called. That entity can be either a solid object or a shapeless portion of a substance. Next, two other entities resembling the initial one with respect

to different perceptual features are introduced. One would match the already introduced entity in shape, whereas the other would be of the same material. Interestingly, extensive research shows that children extend the name of a novel item to items of the same shape only if the initial entity was a solid discrete object. On the other hand, if they were first presented an amorphous portion of a novel substance, they do not extend its name to items of a similar shape, but rather to objects made out of the same material.

Based on such evidence, Soja et al. (1991) argue that certain ontological commitments are prior to the linguistic mass/count distinction, contrary to Quine's claim. Additional support for such a conclusion comes from the fact that the results were replicated in populations using languages with syntax significantly different from English. For instance, Imai & Gentner (1997) demonstrate parallel evidence based on the same experimental paradigm using the word extension task in the Japanese speaking environment. Though Japanese lacks a straightforward morpho-syntactic equivalent of the distinction between mass and count nouns present in languages such as English, Japanese speaking children distinguish between objects and substances just as well as their English speaking peers.

A number of studies provide varied and carefully controlled evidence that preverbal children are endowed with certain assumptions concerning the nature of objects (e.g., Carey 1985; Spelke 1990; Soja et al. 1991; Carey & Spelke 1996). For instance, they expect objects to be bounded and cohesive. The former assumption reflects on an entity having natural boundaries, whereas the latter translates into an anticipation that objects have parts that stick together. Furthermore, objects are expected to move across space as wholes along continuous paths and to retain identity upon collisions with other entities. On the other hand, substances lack any of those properties. An exemplary experimental paradigm is as follows. An infant is introduced either to a solid object, e.g., a teddy bear, or a portion of substance, e.g., clay, displayed in front of them. Next, the entity is covered by a screen and the child sees that a second item is placed behind the screen. Finally, depending on an experimental condition after the screen was removed either there were two items revealed or due to the manipulation by an experimenter only one item could be seen. Interestingly, if the initially introduced entity was a discrete solid object, children reacted with great surprise if after removing the screen they could find only one item. On the other hand, no such reaction was recorded if they were introduced to a portion of a substance at the beginning. The conclusion is that preverbal children appear to know the difference between objects, pluralities thereof, and substances. They expect that if one adds a teddy bear to a teddy bear, the result should be two teddy bears, whereas if one combines clay with clay, one does not get a plurality of clay. Since similar results

## 5 Conceptual background

were also found in non-human primates (see, e.g., Hauser & Carey 2003; Hauser & Spaulding 2006 on rhesus monkeys), it seems plausible to assume that this property of human cognition has some evolutionary history. I will come back to the issue of number in §5.1.4.

However, though the difference between discrete solid objects and amorphous substances has a significant status in the cognitive and linguistic development of children, it turns out that the correlation between this distinction and mass/-count syntax is imperfect. A corpus study on toddler vocabulary pursued by Samuelson & Smith (1999) shows a significant asymmetry between particular syntactic categories. Specifically, while the large majority of nouns that English speaking children learn early are count nouns (74% of the vocabulary), only a small portion involves mass nouns (10% of the vocabulary). There is also a third class of expressions that is considered ambiguous between count and mass (16% of the vocabulary). The results of the examination in order to find out whether the object/substance distinction correlates with the mass/count distinction are somewhat surprising. In general, a correspondence between solid objects and count nouns, on the one hand, and non-solid entities, on the other, was in fact observed. However, it was imperfect and Samuelson & Smith recognized a number of interesting mismatches. Surprisingly, while solidity and shape turn out to be good predictors of count nouns, mass nouns appear to be less correlated with non-solidity and shapelessness.<sup>1</sup>

Yet another strand of research provides support for the findings discussed above. In particular, Prasada et al. (2002) demonstrate that categorization of a noun as countable or uncountable does not reduce to establishing an immutable ontological distinction between an object and a substance. Rather, it seems that speakers of languages such as English categorize nouns in terms of countability based on whether they construe entities they refer to as objects or as substances. A series of experiments utilizing novel vocabulary tasks show that a novel item that has an irregular shape is less probable to be referred to by a novel count noun when contrasted with entities of a regular shape. However, the same item is significantly more probable to be considered countable when displayed among other similar entities having such an irregular shape. This means that it is not the case that some objective properties of things influence the way grammar is directly. Instead, the mass/count distinction appears to reflect how humans conceptualize entities in the world.

To conclude, the psychological research reviewed in this section indicates that contrary to Quine's claim, human beings apparently do have certain ontological

---

<sup>1</sup>Notice that probably the main reason explaining this result is the existence of the category of object mass nouns such as *furniture* and *kitchenware*.

commitments prior to acquiring the syntax of a particular language. Specifically, the way children are biased towards perceiving objects as opposed to substances correlates with the mass/count distinction in grammar. However, this correspondence is not of a one-to-one type and there are well-known cases of mismatches. Yet, it is crucial that the distinction in grammar is not due to different ontological categories in some objective sense, but rather it reflects on how entities in the world are conceptualized. In the next section, I will discuss the relevance of part-whole structures in the process of language acquisition. In particular, I will briefly review how a certain bias concerning what it means to be a whole guides children in how they learn lexical meanings of nouns.

### 5.1.2 Whole object assumption

Since at least the early 1990's, language acquisition studies have shown that vocabulary development is constrained by certain mechanisms that govern it in order to ensure its effectiveness. In particular, children are guided by a number of word learning biases i.e., endowed assumptions that allow us to eliminate unlikely alternatives in order to efficiently process and learn new lexical meanings (see, e.g., Markman 1990; Hollich et al. 2007; Hansen & Markman 2009). Such assumptions begin to manifest around the age of 18 months when rapid expansion of a child's vocabulary starts. They are crucial in deciding what the reference of a new noun is, e.g., what aspect of an object it designates, as well as in solving the problem of indeterminacy. One of the word learning biases that will be of special interest to us here is the so-called whole object assumption (Markman 1990).

The whole object assumption allows children to constrain the meaning of novel words by guaranteeing that a child relates a new noun with an object in its entirety rather than with some arbitrary part or property of that object (Markman 1990). For instance, if an adult points to an item and labels it, e.g., by uttering *a doll*, a child assumes that the noun *doll* is meant to refer to the whole object and not to its part or its certain characteristic. Though in principle the adult's verbal behavior might have been interpreted as referring to the doll's head, leg, dress, color, or size, children intuitively rule out such possibilities and associate the label with the whole item.<sup>2</sup> This bias holds even in situations where an object's color or a certain dynamic activity are made salient to a child (Hansen & Markman 2009).

Though the original research regarded 18-month-year old children and older, later studies have demonstrated that in fact infants can associate nouns with

---

<sup>2</sup>See Quine (1960) for a related problem of the inscrutability of reference.

## 5 *Conceptual background*

whole objects already at the age of 12 months (Hollich et al. 2007). Crucially, the effect was attested despite the fact that test items could be viewed as two separate objects and even when a certain part of an item was made salient. Interestingly, similar results were obtained in experiments where participants were adult. Hence, the mechanism appears to be deeply embedded. Its relevance lies in that it enables children to determine which of the numerous logically possible meanings a word could have is actually the correct one.

In this section, we saw that children distinguish intuitively between parts and wholes. In the process of language acquisition, when exposed to a novel noun, they do not attribute its meaning to a part of an object it refers to but rather immediately assume it is true of a whole thing. The whole object assumption has often been related to the findings concerning infants' perception of objects discussed in the previous section. It has been hypothesized that the constraint in question reflects the non-linguistic status of objects (Hollich et al. 2007). This might suggest that from the perspective of a child the fact that wholes involve parts is somewhat discriminated. However, the evidence is much more complex. In the next section, I will provide a brief overview of the study of part-whole perception in children.

### 5.1.3 **Part-whole perception**

It is a cognitive fact that we often conceive of entities as being made up of smaller entities related to each other in a particular manner. Experimental evidence shows that humans have two simultaneous perceptions concerning part-whole structures of entities (e.g., Witkin 1950; Meili-Dworetzki 1956). On the one hand, we possess the ability to discriminate parts from a whole, i.e., decompose an entire object into distinct elements making it up. On the other hand, we are able to integrate the total sum of the parts into a complete whole. This phenomenon is usually referred to as part-whole perception and it is standardly attributed to the ability of an individual to decenter, i.e., to shift attention from parts to the whole or vice versa (see Piaget & Morf 1958).

Though adults in general show part-whole perception, it has been subject to controversy in the psychological literature at what age it emerges. In the early Piagetian studies, the experimental results suggested that this ability is absent in young children (Elkind et al. 1964). In a typical experiment, a child was presented a drawing of a whole consisting of parts that were independent objects in their own right, e.g., a person made out of fruits as in Figure 5.1, and was instructed verbally to report what they see.



Figure 5.1: Part-whole perception (Elkind et al. 1964)

According to Elkind et al., children report that they perceive simultaneously a whole and parts attributed to the same form, e.g. both a man and fruits, only at the age of 8. Before that age, subjects failed in complete decentration with 5-to-6-year-olds showing complete centration, i.e., they reported that they saw only parts, e.g., fruits but not a person, and older children gradually improved. However, later studies suggest that part-whole perception develops much earlier. For instance, Kimchi (1993) provides evidence that 5-year-old children show sensitivity to parts and to part-whole relations and that this sensitivity improves with age. Even more interestingly, Boisvert et al. (1999) show that 3-year-olds demonstrate good performance in part-whole perception tasks using multiple-choice tests instead of Piagetian verbal tasks used in earlier studies. Finally, Quinn et al.'s (1993) results indicate that 3-month-old infants can group elements of visual pattern information into larger perceptual units based on lightness similarity in a way that suggests at least some component of part-whole perception.

I interpret the experimental results presented above as suggesting that human cognition is devised to be sensitive to part-whole structures since even very young individuals can decompose a whole into pieces by discriminating its parts as well as represent individual elements as making up an integrated collection that is a whole. Since these two perceptions are simultaneous, one could expect that we intuitively categorize entities as certain configurations of smaller things that despite their often complex inner structure are singular objects. At the same time, parts of such objects remain cognitively salient and if required, can be easily accessed. If the conclusions from the experiments reported above are on the right track, this property of the human mind appears to be either innate or at least to emerge at an early stage of cognitive development.

## 5 Conceptual background

### 5.1.4 Number sense

The final piece of cognitive evidence to be discussed here concerns human number sense, i.e., an intuitive understanding of what numbers mean and how they can be affected by various operations (see, e.g., Dehaene 1997 for an overview). This mental mechanism allows for a special type of sensory perception through which the cardinality of a given set of entities can be perceived with similar ease as their size, color, shape, or position and as such provides the basis for various forms of calculation. In humans, number sense is based on two different cognitive systems, specifically the approximate number system (ANS) and the object tracking system (OTS) (see, e.g., Hyde 2011). The ANS is a cognitive system supporting the imprecise estimation of the numerical magnitude of a collection of objects without relying on symbolic representations (see, e.g., Feigenson et al. 2004; Nieder & Dehaene 2009 for an overview). It manifests already in infants and gets more developed with age (Cantlon et al. 2006). In contrast, the OTS is the mental ability to independently track up to 4 entities without counting by means of parallel individuation (see, e.g., Carey 1998; 2009 for an overview). Though the acquisition of abstract number concepts, even for low numbers, appears to require more than only the ANS and the OTS, both capacities seem to support this process (e.g., Hyde 2011; but see Piazza 2010 for arguments for the crucial role of the ANS rather than the OTS).

It appears that there is evidence indicating that humans are at least to some extent predisposed to develop certain numerical abilities such as the concept of exact number and simple arithmetic based on their number sense. For instance, Gelman & Gallistel (1978) argue that children are endowed with innate principles of counting and have intuitive understanding of the cardinality of a set of entities and its conservation under changes that do not affect quantity. It seems that a lot of knowledge concerning how to put objects in a one-to-one correspondence with numbers is intuitively understood by children though it is never taught or formulated in an explicit way. In particular, when learning to count children are not taught that each entity must be counted once and only once, or that one number cannot be associated with more than one entity, but this principle is taken for granted. Moreover, children know intuitively that number words are supposed to be recited in a fixed order and that the last numeral represents the cardinality of the whole enumerated set. According to this view, innate knowledge regarding counting principles precedes and facilitates the acquisition of that part of the lexicon that includes number words and guides its application in a particular situation of counting.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup>However, see Fuson (1988) for an opposing view claiming that children learn counting by imi-



The above introduced hypothesis seems to be corroborated by further experimental evidence that suggests that at the age of 2.5 years children understand that counting is an abstract procedure that can be applied to different kinds of objects including concrete entities as well as events (Wynn 1990). 3.5-year-olds know that the order in which they recite numerals is crucial, whereas the order of pointing at counted items is irrelevant as long as each item is counted and no one item is counted twice. Furthermore, children are able to indicate and correct subtle errors that result from violations of basic counting principles such as reciting numerals out of order, counting the same object twice, or omitting an item while counting (Gelman & Meck 1983; Gelman et al. 1986). By the age of 4 years, children show that they have already mastered the basics of counting and that they can generalize the procedure to novel situations. Older children often spontaneously reinvent arithmetic developing new strategies for calculating that best fit for a particular problem (Dehaene 1997: p. 119).

However, probably the most intriguing finding from the perspective of the interest of this study is a tight link between spatial integrity and numerical information observed in young children. Specifically, Shipley & Shepperson (1990) provide a particularly striking demonstration of the relevance of objects understood as integrated discrete physical entities for the cognition of 3-to-4-year-olds. In the experiment, children were presented sets of items and instructed specifically what they were supposed to count. For instance, an array of forks with one item broken in two pieces as illustrated in Figure 5.2 was displayed in front of a child who was then asked to count the forks.

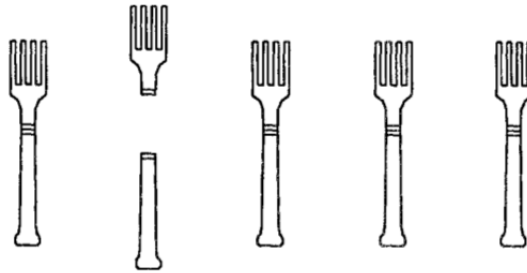


Figure 5.2: Relevance of integrity in counting (Dehaene 1997: p. 60; adapted from Shipley & Shepperson 1990)

---

tation. For instance, Fuson argues that children recite strings such as *onetwothreefourfive...* as uninterrupted sequences and only later on they segment them in order to delimitate numerals, learn to extend them to larger values and to apply them to particular situations.

## 5 *Conceptual background*

Unlike adults and older children, children between 3 and 4 years of age did not answer that there are five forks, but rather that there six of them, i.e., they counted each detached part of a fork as a separate entity. Similarly, when instructed to count kinds, e.g., different kinds of animals, or properties, e.g. different colors, in a setup where each kind or property was exemplified by a number of distinct discrete items, children included each separate object in their count.

The results demonstrate that the canonical countable entity for a young child is a discrete physical object that comes in a single piece. The role of spatial integrity is crucial in determining what counts as one and this bias precedes the process of learning how to count. In other words, at an early stage of development of arithmetic abilities young children simply cannot avoid counting each discrete integral object as one unit. It is very likely that the assumption that number is a property of sets consisting of discrete spatially contiguous objects is a deeply embedded principle that facilitates mastery of counting.

The findings of Shipley & Shepperson were further confirmed for other forms of linguistic quantification in experiments based on quantity judgment tasks involving comparative constructions and pluralization (Melgoza et al. 2008). In particular, when presented an object divided into three parts, e.g., a broken fork, on the one hand, and two whole objects, e.g., two integral forks, on the other, 4-year-old children judged the former to be more objects than the latter. Furthermore, in an elicitation task children often labeled broken objects using plural morphology. For instance, a phrase *some forks* was used to refer to three separated pieces of a broken fork. The results presented by Melgoza et al. not only confirm the findings of Shipley & Shepperson but also indicate the existence of a spatial bias for many forms of quantification in natural language. In all tested cases, the spatial criterion of integrity was preferred over other factors in order to establish what counts as one. In other words, when children quantify sets, they seem to define individual set members in terms of spatial contiguity in the first place. I take these results to be evidence suggesting that countability as a property of sets of discrete separate entities is a deeply embedded principle. Though as we know from every-day life experience adults can develop a mechanism to retrieve the original part-whole structure of counted entities, e.g., reconstruct a whole fork by combining separate pieces in thought, I hypothesize that the underlying quantificational procedure is based on a principle relating numbers with things that are conceptualized as coming in one piece.<sup>4</sup> However, before I conclude, I

---

<sup>4</sup>Admittedly, one can also count concrete entities such as functional units that do not seem to be integrated in a topological sense. For instance, a pestle and mortar can count as a single piece of kitchenware (Sutton & Filip 2016a). Nevertheless, I argue that in such cases the notion of integrity still applies, though it is not physical integrity but rather functional units are conceptually integrated in the sense that they are united under some functional role (see Grimm & Levin 2017). I will come back to this issue in §7.2.2.

will briefly discuss how human quantification differs from number sense in other animals.

Massive evidence indicates that number sense is not exclusive to human mind. Well-established research in etiology shows that apprehension, comparison, and even approximate addition of quantities is also present in animals (see, e.g., Davis & Pérusse 1988; Gallistel 1989; Dehaene 1997: pp. 13–40 for overview). The most well-known evidence concerns the ability to represent and discriminate quantities of relative sizes in primates (e.g., Woodruff & Premack 1981; Matsuzawa 1985; Rumbaugh et al. 1987; Washburn & Rumbaugh 1991; Boysen et al. 1996), but it is also found in other mammals such as dolphins (Mitchell et al. 1985), cats (Thompson et al. 1970), and rats (Capaldi & Miller 1988), as well as birds (Pepperberg 1987) and even fish (Agrillo et al. 2012). Furthermore, recent studies in botanics suggest that there are reasons to also assume plant arithmetic (Böhm et al. 2016). The evidence indicates either that number sense is an evolutionary ancient part of cognition or that there were multiple convergent evolution events. In any case, it is a widespread phenomenon shared by a wide range of species.

However, despite the large body of evidence indicating that many non-human animals have the approximate number system, their number sense seems to differ significantly from that of humans. Though there are well-documented cases of approximate quantification in animals, no case of symbolic addition is known in any species other than the chimpanzee, and there only after long training dedicated to learning a small set of digits and with frequent errors in computation (Dehaene 1997: p. 39). On the other hand, young children spontaneously count on their fingers, often up to 10 before the age of three and acquire the syntax of complex numerals with ease. Thus, the more lax concept of numerosity is often used with respect to animal quantification in order to distinguish it from the symbolic and verbal representation of number in humans. To conclude, though some forms of quantification appear to be frequent in the animal kingdom, they seem to differ significantly from what humans do when they count. While non-human animals estimate quantities on a regular basis, it seems that the ability to establish a one-to-one correspondence between an object and a discrete symbol which allows for computation of the exact number of entities in a given set is an extremely rare property among species.

It seems that counting as performed by humans is a quite unique ability which associates discrete entities with abstract representations of number. I hypothesize that the core mechanism underlying all counting manifests in early childhood and concerns establishing a one-to-one correspondence between integral physical objects that come in one piece and integers. In other words, I assume that the topological notion of spatial integrity is the basis for what counts as one,

## 5 *Conceptual background*

and only later humans develop ways of abstracting away from this principle, e.g., by extending it to quantification over abstract entities such as kinds and properties, or by being able to retrieve the original connection between detached parts. In the following sections, I will attempt to relate the linguistic evidence presented in Chapters 2, 3, and 4 with the conclusions of cognitive psychology in order to develop the three main claims of this study that will serve as a conceptual background for the formal account for subatomic quantification in natural language, to be developed in Chapters 6 and 7.

### 5.2 **The three claims**

I have already presented a broad range of data demonstrating both the relevance of subatomic structures in natural language and the important role that the way entities including parts of a whole are spatially related to each other plays with respect to quantification. Furthermore, in the previous section I reviewed additional psychological evidence suggesting that these issues are deeply embedded in human cognition. Now is the time to discuss in detail what I believe to be the conceptual core of this study, namely the three claims I make with respect to the interaction between parthood, topology, and quantification in natural language. I will start with postulating that natural language semantics is sensitive to topological relations holding between elements within part-whole structures designated by nominal expressions. Next, I will posit a set of general counting principles, including constraints concerning non-overlap, maximality, and integrity of counted things. Finally, I will postulate that the very same universal mechanism applies irrespective of whether one quantifies over entire entities or over parts of a whole.

#### 5.2.1 **Relevance of topological notions with respect to part-whole structures**

It is well-known that topological notions play an important role in natural language. The existence of locative expressions involving prepositions such as *inside*, *near*, *under*, *between*, and *far* shows that relations concerning how we conceptualize position and space are deeply rooted in grammar. Arguably, they constitute universal components of human cognition and natural language semantics. Though the research on locative PPs is well-established and contributed to our understanding what means language uses to encode information regarding location of objects with respect to each other (e.g., Clark 1973; Herskovits 1985;

Zwarts & Winter 1997; Kracht 2002), the question concerning spatial constitution of entities remained somewhat elusive in the study of meaning. One line of argumentation justifying why those kinds of issues should remain unaddressed is that they simply stem from every-day world knowledge, and thus, as extra-linguistic factors, are not supposed to be incorporated into semantic theory. For instance, Schwarzschild (1996) famously argues that the fact that (1a) entails (1b) has nothing to do with referential properties of the subject DPs in both sentences. Rather, the inference simply results from facts concerning what we know about where brains are located.

- (1) English (Schwarzschild 1996: p. 187)
- a. Bill is in Texas.
  - b. Bill's brain is in Texas.

Schwarzschild might seem right for examples such as (1). However, in previous chapters of this study we saw that there are a number of natural language expressions that are sensitive to topological properties of part-whole structures corresponding to their referents. My view is that if we want to account for the meaning of nouns in its entire complexity, topology-related phenomena deserve serious consideration.

It has been acknowledged for a long time that nominal semantics differentiates between count singulars referring to integrated objects, on the one hand, and mass terms and plurals denoting scattered entities and arbitrary sums of individuals, respectively, on the other. As we saw in §5.1.1, there are good reasons to assume that this contrast correlates with some fundamental properties of human cognition. Soon, we will see that the distinction can be captured in terms of how parts constituting a whole are spatially arranged. However, before I even start considering how to develop a proper account, it is crucial to realize that the extent to which topology plays a role in part-whole structures associated with referents of nominals is highly underestimated, if not neglected, in the contemporary mainstream research on pluralities and countability. One of the important empirical contributions of this study is about compensating this deficit.

The data presented in Chapter 2 and 3 show that certain classes of nouns encode certain types of spatial configurations of entities making up a whole. In particular, at least some Italian irregular plurals discussed in §2.3 denote integrated pluralities, i.e., sums of individuals that form cohesive wholes. On the other hand, different types of topology-sensitive partitive words explored in §3.1 and §3.2 involve reference to continuous parts whereas extensions of their topology-neutral counterparts comprise also discontinuous portions of a whole. Though the evi-

## 5 Conceptual background

dence explored in this study emphasizes specifically the role of integrity in subatomic quantification, recent research on different types of collective nouns and mass terms points to a similar conclusion regarding the relevance of topology in nominal semantics on independent grounds. In particular, Grimm (2012b) proposes that a subset of mass nouns that denote aggregates of granular objects, hence granular mass terms like *rice* and *gravel*, involve reference to clustered individuals, i.e., bundled entities transitively connected to each other. In a similar vein, Henderson (2017) argues that swarm nouns such as *grove*, *horde*, and *swarm* denote large pluralities whose constituents remain in proximity within a certain spatial configuration. Moreover, Grimm & Dočekal (2021) and Wągiel (2021) discuss a particular class of Slavic derived mass nouns, such as Czech *list* ‘leaf’ ~ *listí* ‘foliage’, that refer to collections of singular entities that are easily distinguishable yet conceptualized as aggregates.<sup>5</sup> Finally, as proposed by Grimm (2012b), referents of concrete count nouns can be viewed as entities whose part-whole structure is constrained in such a way that it forms an integrated object in its own right.

The psychological evidence discussed in §5.1 emphasizes the role of spatial integrity of objects, on the one hand, and our ability to simultaneously perceive individual parts of such cohesive wholes as entities in their own right, on the other. Given the amount of linguistic evidence supplemented with findings concerning human cognition, I argue that semantic theory needs to accommodate those facts. In other words, my first claim is as follows. There is more to the meaning of common nouns than usually assumed, and without a proper approach incorporating the insights concerning the role of topological notions in part-whole structures many phenomena will be left unexplained or even unnoticed. I posit that a good starting point is to try to capture the difference between count singulars, regular plurals, and mass nouns in terms of different topological relations encoded within corresponding part-whole structures. Specifically, count singulars refer to entities that constitute integrated wholes whose parts stick together, rather than mere collections of spatially unrelated portions of matter. On the other hand, plural nouns denote arbitrary sums of such individuals, i.e., they require their parts to be constrained by spatial integrity but impose no topological restrictions on configurations in which they appear. Finally, a proper treatment of mass terms should account for the fact that their prototypical referents are scattered unbounded entities. An additional advantage of such a novel perspective is that it suggests that different part-whole structures do not emerge due to

---

<sup>5</sup>For experimental investigation into the meaning of such expressions in Czech and Polish, see Dočekal & Wągiel (2018a).

distinct parthood relations. Instead, it seems that different part-whole structures arise as a result of the interaction between one unified parthood relation with distinct topological notions. In the next section, I will posit that the postulated view on what it means to be a whole can shed new light on countability.

### 5.2.2 General counting principles

In general, I follow a well-established linguistic tradition assuming that the mass/count distinction corresponds to a contrast concerning how different types of entities are conceptualized (e.g., Wierzbicka 1988; Chierchia 1998a,b; 2010; 2015; Grimm 2012b). As we saw in §5.1, a substantive body of research in cognitive psychology provides evidence that human beings categorize stable bounded things that preserve shape differently than amorphous substances. The former are considered delimited objects whose spatial identity can be tracked easily throughout time, whereas the latter are perceived merely as unindividuated portions of matter. On the other hand, there appears to be rich intuitive knowledge concerning what counting is, which seems to be part of human cognitive endowment. The exact nature of how cognitive facts relate to natural language semantics and grammar, i.e., the structure and meaning of certain syntactic constructions, might not be straightforward. Therefore, the view that I propose here is most probably a simplified account. Nevertheless, I believe that it reveals what I argue is an advantageous perspective on what it means to be countable.

Usually in the study of countability, at some point when it comes to defining what counting is something like ‘counting is quantification over what counts as one’ is stated. Often, ‘what counts as one’ is understood in terms of atomicity. In particular, an atom in a technical sense is an object that has no proper parts. Though at first blush this notion seems rather counterintuitive (see Champollion 2010; 2017 for discussion), it has been very influential in the research on countability.<sup>6</sup> To the extent that counting is often implicitly assumed to be simply quantification over atoms, spelling out the exact nature of the mechanism is rarely provided. In this section, I will attempt to elaborate a bit more on what counting is and how it differs from other forms of quantification. For this purpose, I will consider three conditions entities need to satisfy in order to be able to be put in a one-to-one correspondence with natural numbers based on what we know what humans do when they count. In particular, I will propose three general counting principles that will allow us to better understand countability in a more general manner. Though the proposed mechanism, as described below,

---

<sup>6</sup>I will come back to this issue in §7.1.

## 5 Conceptual background

is intended to apply only to concrete entities and will require certain additional assumptions with respect to (at least some) artifacts and functional units, I believe that in principle it can be generalized to cover also more abstract domains. As we will soon see, this novel perspective will also prove of great significance with respect to subatomic quantification.

Counting is usually understood as establishing a one-to-one correspondence between what is being counted and natural numbers. This kind of association is necessary to determine the cardinality of a particular set of entities. Though there are a number of aspects of counting, as well as many morphologically distinct numerical expressions dedicated to particular quantificational purposes, including cardinal numerals, ordinals, fractions, percentage expressions, nominals such as *dozen*, approximators like *hundreds*, and numerical adverbials, e.g., *twice*, it is usually assumed that at the end their interpretation is based on number (see Rothstein 2017).<sup>7</sup> In particular, different types of numerical expressions appear to represent enumerations of different types of sets, e.g., sets of entities as opposed to sets of events.

However, though the definition introduced above involves a significant component of counting, it is incomplete, and thus fails to capture what counting really is and how it differs from other quantificational operations such as measuring. As we will soon see, there are a number of situations where despite successfully establishing a one-to-one correspondence between entities and numbers we would intuitively reject a particular enumeration as counting. Therefore, a more specific characterization is required. In particular, I take counting to be a quantificational operation that is governed by three general principles restricting what kind of object can be assigned a number. I will refer to those constraints as the principle of NON-OVERLAP, MAXIMALITY, and INTEGRITY. It is not unlikely that their knowledge is inherent, and thus when talking about counting, their existence is taken for granted. That is precisely why I believe it might be useful to formulate them explicitly in order to get a better understanding of the phenomenon of countability.

The principle of non-overlap ensures that things that count as one must not overlap, i.e., do not share a part (see Landman 2011; 2016). Guaranteeing disjointness of units of counting is necessary to avoid the possibility of an entity being counted twice. For instance, assume portions of matter *a*, *b*, *c*, and *d* arranged in such a way that *c* overlaps with both *a* and *b*, specifically  $c = a \sqcup b$ . Now, one could

---

<sup>7</sup>Notice also that both complex numerical expressions are necessary if a language is to be able to enumerate the infinite series of numbers since in order to do so it requires a recursive system (Rothstein 2017: pp. 12–13).



imagine an operation that would assign numbers to all  $a$ ,  $b$ ,  $c$ , and  $d$ . Summing them up would yield number 4 but this result is incorrect if one wanted to count how many portions of matter there are. The reason is that  $c$  is not disjoint from  $a$  and  $b$ , and thus should not be associated with a number.<sup>8</sup> To put it differently, when counting it is disallowed to count a thing two times.

Though prototypical count nouns such as *cat* and *apple* denote sets of mutually disjoint entities, i.e., individual apples have no part in common and the same applies to individual cats, mass overlap, i.e., overlap between material parts of different entities is not inconceivable. For instance, it is possible to imagine three entities conceptualized as distinct objects  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$  such that  $a$  consists of three parts  $d$ ,  $e$  and  $f$  ( $a = d \sqcup e \sqcup f$ ),  $b$  consists and of  $f$ ,  $g$ , and  $h$  ( $b = f \sqcup g \sqcup h$ ), and  $c$  consists of  $h$ ,  $i$ , and  $j$  ( $c = h \sqcup i \sqcup j$ ). Or to use Landman's (2011) example, two hands of a certain person and their ten fingers are countable objects despite the fact that each hand shares material parts with its five fingers. Nonetheless, it seems that the way counting operates is that if we can count entities simultaneously as one, in that very counting situation we perceive them as disjoint objects, and any potential mass overlap is ignored. In other words, entities in the count domain are conceptualized as if they do not overlap, irrespective of what the exact structure of the corresponding things in the external world looks like. Given the human part-whole perception discussed in §5.1.3, I suggest that an ability to perceive objects this way is likely.

Furthermore, Rothstein (2010) shows that though a non-prototypical count noun such as *fence* might denote overlapping entities, in a particular situation its denotation is restricted to eliminate overlap. For instance, consider rectangular fence structure  $a$  consisting of four fences  $b$ ,  $c$ ,  $d$ , and  $e$  constructed by four different persons; thus,  $a = b \sqcup c \sqcup d \sqcup e$ . Depending on the context, we could count it as one fence ( $a$ ) or as four fences ( $b$ ,  $c$ ,  $d$ , and  $e$ ), but never as five fences in a single counting situation. In addition, Krifka (2009) discusses cases in which one counts configurations such as outfits, e.g., outfits  $a$  and  $b$  may both consist of pants  $c$  and shirts  $d$  and  $e$ , respectively. Such configurations can be conceptualized as distinct things despite the overlap. Crucially, however, such entities cannot exist simultaneously in one and the same situation. Rather, each of the possible combinations can come into being only if the other one is not chosen. Therefore, I conclude that counting typically requires non-overlap while in some non-typical cases it makes overlap irrelevant for how objects are conceptualized.

---

<sup>8</sup>Notice that this effect can also be captured by ensuring that the counted set is quantized (Krifka 1989), which is a weaker notion than non-overlap. However, I prefer the notion of non-overlap in order to provide a unified system that explains the difference between counting and measuring, see §5.2.3.

## 5 Conceptual background

The second principle concerns maximality understood in terms of mereological exhaustivity. It states that counting requires that what is associated with a number needs to be a maximal entity of which a certain property holds in a given counting situation. In other words, objects need to be counted in their entirety, i.e., all relevant parts of a thing need to be put in correspondence with a particular number and it is disallowed to leave some of them out. To illustrate this, let us consider a situation where there are three distinct cuboid entities  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$  such that  $c$  consists of two non-overlapping parts  $d$  and  $e$  ( $c = d \sqcup e$ ), as depicted in Figure 5.3.

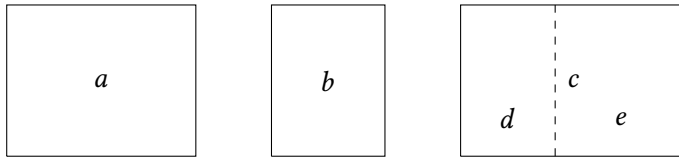


Figure 5.3: Counting and maximality

Now, let us assume that we are counting cuboids and that that is all what the context specifies. We can then imagine a quantificational operation that satisfies the non-overlap constraint but is not restricted by the principle of maximality. In this particular counting situation, when applied to the set of things in question, it might very well yield 4 since  $a$ ,  $b$ ,  $d$ , and  $e$  are disjoint cuboid entities, whereas  $c$  shares a part with both  $d$  and  $e$ . However, such an operation would not be of great help if one wanted to know how many cuboids there are since it fails to differentiate between wholes and their parts. Likewise, if one asked for two cuboids and got object  $c$  as a result of the request, they surely would not be satisfied.

Of course, situations such as the one described above are rare. Typically, the combination of the predicate and the context provide enough information to specify a counting situation unambiguously, so that there is little doubt regarding what counts as one. For instance, let us suppose that the rectangles in Figure 5.3 represent buildings such that  $a$  and  $b$  are each a detached house, whereas  $c$  is a building consisting of two semi-detached houses  $d$  and  $e$ . If one wanted to know the number of houses, the answer would be four ( $a$ ,  $b$ ,  $d$ , and  $e$ ; assuming that  $c$  is not in the extension of the predicate *house*). If, on the other hand, we were counting buildings, then the answer would be three ( $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$ ). Therefore, it might seem that in this particular case the principle of maximality is not playing a role. However, it is possible to find examples which demonstrate that the principle of maximality does apply after the enforcement of contextual disjointness.

In order to show the relevance of the interaction between maximality and context, let us consider the configuration in Figure 5.4, depicting a scenario in the spirit of Rothstein (2010).

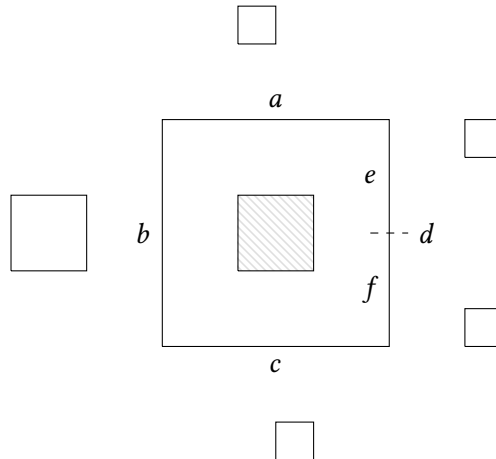


Figure 5.4: Counting, maximality and context

In Figure 5.4, lines  $a$ ,  $b$ ,  $c$ , and  $d$  represent straight fences that form a fencing structure ( $a \sqcup b \sqcup c \sqcup d$ ) around the owner's house represented by the dashed square such that each side separates that house from a different house (represented by white squares). Importantly,  $d$  consists of two parts  $e$  and  $f$  each of which also separates the owner's house from a neighboring house. Suppose that  $d$  is homogeneous in the sense that there is no visible separation between  $e$  and  $f$  such as a gate or some difference in the color or shape of the two parts, but both  $e$  and  $f$  completely cover the view of a corresponding smaller house to the right. Now, depending on the situation one could count  $a \sqcup b \sqcup c \sqcup d$  either as one fence, e.g., if one were supposed to pay a special tax for each fence, or as four fences, e.g., if one were to get a subsidy for each fence they had to build in order to separate their house from their neighbours. However, even though the property of separating the owner's house from other houses is contextually salient, it would be strange to say that there are five fences in Figure 5.4. I argue that that is because the principle of maximality operates on top of what the predicate along with the context specify. It is simply very hard to conceptualize  $e$  and  $f$  as separate objects in their own right. Rather, they are merely parts of  $d$ .

Based on the examples discussed above, I conclude that counting is about recognizing that though what counts as one might be constituted of smaller elements, for the purpose of quantification the maximal sum of those elements is

## 5 Conceptual background

considered a whole unit relative to the relevant predicate and counting situation. Again, counting ensures that an entity is not assigned two numbers. Notice also that this constraint accounts for how we count homogeneous entities such as twigs and rocks. Given a particular counting situation, what counts as one is always the thing perceived as the maximal entity relative to what is relevant and irrespective of how its part-whole structure is construed in that situation.

Finally, the principle of integrity requires what counts as one to be conceptualized as an integrated whole. It is crucial that for an individual to be assigned a number it is not enough to be mereologically maximal and disjoint from other entities. In addition, its parts need to be in a particular spatial configuration, i.e., they need to be connected. This means that scattered entities such as substances and arbitrary sums of individuals normally are not assumed to count as one. In the next chapter, I will introduce a theory of wholes spelling out those concepts in a formal way. Notice, however, that the words ‘integrated’ and ‘connected’ are used in a somewhat liberal sense here and should be rather understood as ‘conceptualized as integrated/connected’. If the connection between parts is easily retrievable, e.g., parts are physically dissected but remain in proximity to the original place of attachment, then with great probability the principle of integrity would be satisfied. Thus, individuation in terms of integrity is about how human beings categorize objects in the world rather than about objective properties of mind-external entities. As we will see in the next section, this property is also useful for distinguishing counting from another quantificational operation, namely measuring. However, before I discuss the difference between the two in detail, let us consider examples of proper counting as opposed to what I call illegal counting.<sup>9</sup>

Given the counting principles of non-overlap, maximality, and integrity discussed above, we expect that counting works as illustrated schematically below. In an apple counting situation, each of the apples in Figure 5.5 can be associated with integers since they all satisfy the requirements in question. First, the apples are disjoint from each other, i.e., they do not share parts. Second, in each case what is assigned a number is a whole apple, i.e., a maximal sum of parts making up an object. This means that counting is complete. In other words, after the procedure is finished, there are no entities left that have not been associated with an

---

<sup>9</sup>Notice that in accordance with the focus of this study the proposed principles are intended to account for quantification over concrete physical objects. In fact, they might be more abstract in order to be extendable to quantification over abstract entities such *two ideas* and *three proposals* (e.g., Grimm 2014; Sutton & Filip 2020), as well as imaginary individuals like *four monsters* (e.g., Haslinger & Schmitt 2021). Though I will not pursue this possibility here, I will return to the issue of artifacts in §7.2.2.

integer. Finally, individual apples constitute objects that are conceptualized as integrated wholes, i.e., configurations of parts that are connected to each other. This fact guarantees that each apple can be tracked in space and time, and thus is easily recognizable as an object distinct from other entities. The interplay of the three factors in question results in that the procedure illustrated in Figure 5.5 satisfies conditions on counting. Given the depicted set of apples, after performing it we would get an integer corresponding to the total number of apples.

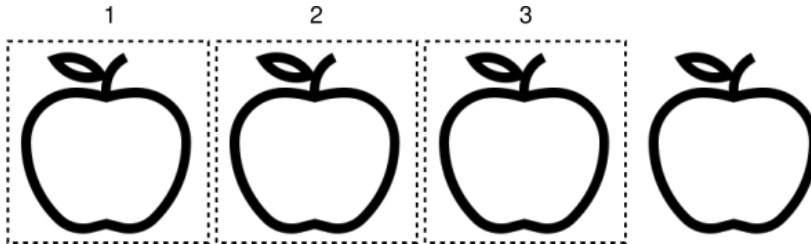


Figure 5.5: Counting

According to the general counting principles, counting is devised to be what we see in Figure 5.5. However, one could easily imagine an operation where, e.g., assigning a number to less than a whole entity or summing up complementary parts of corresponding entities to make up what counts as one is not prohibited. For instance, consider a quantificational operation that satisfies the general counting principle of non-overlap, but violates the principle of integrity. To illustrate this, let us assume illegal counting as depicted in Figure 5.6.

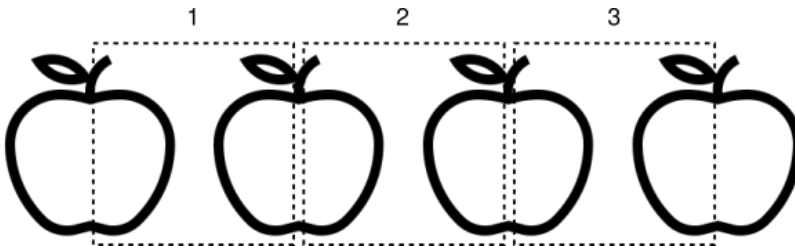


Figure 5.6: Illegal counting

In contrast to Figure 5.5, in this case numbers are associated with arbitrary sums of parts of distinct entities. Notice that those sums can be guaranteed to cover the total volume of all the relevant apples. If this were somehow ensured, in the discussed scenario we could obtain the same number as in Figure 5.5. However, intuitively this operation is very different from counting. It is simply not what we do when we count.

## 5 *Conceptual background*

Though the procedure illustrated in Figure 5.6 is not counting, it does not mean that it does not represent another quantificational operation human beings utilize for different purposes. In the next paragraphs, I will discuss what I believe to be the crucial difference between counting and measuring.

### 5.2.3 **Counting vs. measuring**

Intuitively, the difference between counting and measuring relies essentially on the fact that the former is about specifying how many objects of a certain kind there are in a particular context, whereas the latter concerns determining the quantity of a particular substance in relevant measure units. In principle, there are three possible views on the relationship between the two operations in question. The first one reduces measuring to a particular type of counting (e.g., Gil 2013). The intuition behind such an approach is that measure words individuate in terms of quantity (Lyons 1977). Consequently, instead of quantification over objects measuring is about counting units determined by measure words. An opposing approach is to view counting as a form of measuring. In particular, counting can be understood as measuring a quantity of an object in terms of natural units (Krifka 1989; 1995). Finally, the third option is to postulate that counting and measuring are two independent operations (Rothstein 2017). In this study, I adopt the third perspective and present novel evidence in its favor. In particular, I propose that the distinction between counting and measuring can be reformulated in terms of quantificational principles introduced in the previous section. Though both counting and measuring obey the principle of non-overlap and maximality, only the former satisfies the principle of integrity. Measured quantities of a substance cannot overlap in order to ensure that things are not measured twice. Furthermore, a unit of measurement needs to correspond to the maximal quantity of matter to guarantee that measuring is exhaustive. However, only counting is sensitive to the topological make-up of entities it applies to.

To better understand the essence of the distinction, let us consider the following two scenarios. In the first scenario, illustrated in Figure 5.7, someone has spilled some liquid on the table in such a way that there are two separate blobs *a* and *b* whose volume is one and a half milliliters each. In the second scenario, see Figure 5.8, someone has simply put two cubes *c* and *d* on the table. Let us also assume that apart from the liquid and the cubes there is nothing else on the table in each of the cases, respectively.

Now, let us examine the sentences in (2a) and (2b) describing the situations depicted in Figures 5.7 and 5.8, respectively. The statement in (2a) is true despite the fact that one of the three milliliters must be split between a portion of *a* and

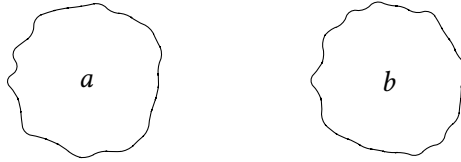


Figure 5.7: Measuring and integrity



Figure 5.8: Counting and integrity

a portion of  $b$  since each of the blobs consists of one and a half milliliters of liquid. On the other hand, (2b) is simply false. This contrast shows that units of measurement such as milliliters are not objects. In other words, unlike counting measuring does not care about individuation in terms of integrity and it indeed appears to be a distinct operation.

- (2) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)
- a. There are three milliliters of liquid on the table.
  - b. #There are three objects on the table.

I argue that this is because counting is topology-sensitive whereas measuring is not. In other words, in measuring, units of measurement are not required to be assigned only to contiguous entities. There are multiple ways in which one could assign particular milliliters  $u_1$ ,  $u_2$ , and  $u_3$  to particular portions of  $a$  and  $b$ , and Figure 5.9 illustrates one possible distribution, with  $u_2$  corresponding to the volume of liquid of a sum of one-third of  $a$  and one-third of  $b$ . As long as the total volume of  $a$  and  $b$  equals three milliliters, (2a) is true with respect to Figure 5.7.

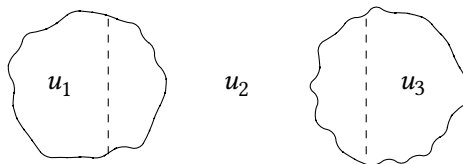


Figure 5.9: Measuring in units

## 5 Conceptual background

Unlike measuring, counting is sensitive to what kind of topological structure entities in its domain have. In parallel to Figure 5.9, one could imagine that two-thirds of  $c$  correspond to an object  $o_1$ , one-third of  $c$  plus one-third of  $d$  make up  $o_2$ , and the remaining two-thirds of  $d$  correspond to  $o_3$ , as depicted in Figure 5.10. However, this is not how counting typically works. The statement in (2b) is false with respect to Figure 5.8 because counting assigns numbers to integrated individuated entities rather than arbitrary portions thereof.

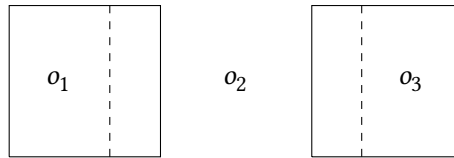


Figure 5.10: Counting objects

I argue that what the contrast between truth-conditions of (2a) and (2b) discussed above shows is that counting and measuring are in fact two distinct semantic operations, as proposed by Rothstein (2017). The core difference between the two boils down to the fact that counting is topology-sensitive, whereas measuring is not. In other words, it is misleading to think of measuring in terms of counting measure units (pace Gil 2013). If it were, similarly to Figure 5.8, we would expect (2a) to be false with respect to Figure 5.7, contrary to fact.

The distinction gets even more salient if we realize that many numeral phrases can get a measure interpretation.<sup>10</sup> For instance, consider the contrast between the scenarios described in (3) and (4). In (3a), the numeral phrase *three apples* denotes a plurality of integrated wholes, i.e., distinct individuated objects, and thus it can be felicitously continued by (3b). In other words, since the referents of the phrase satisfy conditions specified by the general counting principles, they can be put in a one-to-one correspondence with numbers.

- (3) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)  
*Scenario:* John is cooking with his child. They put three whole apples on a table. John says:
- a. There are three apples on the table...
  - b. Let's count them together: one, two, three.

---

<sup>10</sup>See Rothstein (2017: p. 3) for extensive discussion of ambiguities of another sort, namely the alternation between individuating and content readings of container words such as *glass of water*.



On the other hand, the same phrase in the context of (4) gets a measure reading. Given that the slices in the bowl are placed in such a way that it is impossible to retrieve the original part-whole structures of individual apples, *three apples* does not refer to distinct objects but rather to the volume corresponding to three apples. Consequently, it is distinctively odd to continue the sentence in (4a) with (4b). All things considered, (3a) presumes an operation depicted in Figure 5.5, whereas (4a) does not.

- (4) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)  
*Scenario:* John is cooking with his child. They sliced three apples and put the slices into a bowl. John says:
- a. There are three apples in the bowl...
  - b. #Let's count them together: one, two, three.

The contrasts discussed above prove that counting indicates integrity or at least easily retrievable traces of integrity of entities it applies to, whereas measuring ignores this factor. Though monotonic systems of measurement track part-whole relations (Schwarzschild 2002), they do not seem to be sensitive to topological notions. On the other hand, counting does care about the spatial arrangement of parts making up wholes. This strongly suggests that the two operations in question are distinct from each other. Perhaps, one could argue that despite syntactic as well as semantic differences between numeral phrases and measure phrases (see Rothstein 2017) counting is a very special case of measuring (see Krifka 1989; 1995). In particular, measuring could be thought of as a more general quantificational procedure. However, for the sake of what this study is about I will assume that measuring and counting are two distinct semantic operations. In the next section, I will propose how general counting principles extend to subatomic quantification.

#### 5.2.4 Subatomic quantification

In Chapters 2, 3, and 4, we saw that there is substantial evidence showing that natural language semantics is sensitive to the fact that entities we refer to by means of nominal constructions consist of parts and that there are linguistic means to quantify over such parts. On the other hand, in the previous section I postulated the general counting principles of non-overlap, maximality, and integrity. So far, we have seen that there are good reasons to believe that these quantificational constraints capture what humans do when they count objects. In this section, I argue that the proposed set of rules constitutes a universal mechanism that can

## 5 Conceptual background

be applied not only to whole individuals but also when counting parts of objects. In other words, I posit that subatomic quantification is subject to the very same constraints as quantification over wholes.

Analogously to what we saw in Figure 5.5, counting at the subatomic level presumes mereological maximality and topological integrity of entities subject to quantification. Typically, counting is sensitive to the fact that some parts are cognitively more salient within the part-whole structure of an object than others. This seems to correspond to what Champollion & Krifka (2016) call structured parthood as well as to the distinction between specific and arbitrary subdivisions of a whole into parts introduced in philosophical considerations, as already mentioned in Chapter 1 (e.g., Krecz 1986; Markosian 1998; Jennings 2010). Notice that what counts as a cognitively salient part can vary with respect to the context. For instance, consider the two sentences in (5).

- (5) English (Guy Tabachnick, p.c.)
- a. Both parts of the teddy bear are painted.
  - b. Two parts of the teddy bear are painted.

Assume John's daughter has a teddy bear called Fuzzy Wuzzy. In a situation where she has covered Fuzzy Wuzzy's entire left half with red paint and its entire right half with black paint, John might want to say (5a). In such a case, the total volume of matter making up the teddy bear is partitioned in such a way that the cognitively salient parts are its left half and its right half.<sup>11</sup> On the other hand, in a scenario where John's daughter painted Fuzzy Wuzzy's left paw red and its right paw black, the count explicit partitive in (5b) refers to the teddy bear's body parts. Nevertheless, what cognitively salient parts have in common is that given a particular context they are disjoint. This brings us to the relevance of the principle of non-overlap in subatomic quantification.

Since there are numerous ways in which one could divide an object into parts, there are multiple portions of matter of which the property of being part of that object holds. For instance, Figure 5.11 illustrates a number of entities the phrase *part of the apple* could refer to. Notice that none of them is disjoint from the others, i.e., all of them share a part with at least one other part. However, the principle of non-overlap states that such entities cannot be counted. Similarly to arbitrary portions of mass, e.g., juice, arbitrary parts of an apple avert individuation since they are not well-defined bounded integrated objects and it is virtually impossible to distinguish them from other parts. This means that not all parts are

---

<sup>11</sup>The sentence in (5a) appears to be slightly degraded due to the fact that instead of *part* a more accurate partitive word, i.e., *half*, could have been used. Many thanks to Guy Tabachnick for discussing the English examples with me.

equal with respect to countability. Some of them are countable, whereas others are not. Crucially, only those divisions of a whole into parts can be enumerated that are perceived as involving only non-overlapping parts.

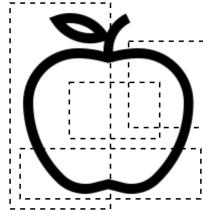


Figure 5.11: Overlapping parts

Another issue concerns the principle of maximality. What counts as part of an object can also consist of smaller parts. Notice that such parts of parts also satisfy the property of being part of that object. However, the general counting principles require that only entities in their mereological entirety can be associated with a number. This means that once a particular division of an individual into parts has been executed in a given counting context, those parts are immutable and are treated as objects in their own right. Consequently, the principle of maximality applies as it would in a situation when one counts whole individuals. In other words, given a partition, non-overlapping parts are assumed to be maximal with respect to how the whole has been divided.

Finally, as we saw in the previous section, countability is also governed by the principle of integrity. However, as we saw in Chapter 3, extensions of expressions referring to parts of objects do not necessarily involve topological commitments, i.e., parts need not be continuous. For instance, let us consider explicit entity partitives. There is definitely a sense in which two or more separated portions of matter within an object are part of that object, and thus a topology-neutral explicit entity partitive construction would be true of such a configuration. Nevertheless, as any arbitrary sum such entity is not countable since associating it with a number would clearly violate the principle of integrity. Therefore, only sets including parts that are mereologically maximal integrated entities that do not overlap can be enumerated. In other words, only a subset of possible divisions of an object is fit for counting.

Having this in mind, let us see how the general counting principles apply in the context of subatomic quantification. For this purpose, let us assume John's daughter wants to count parts of her teddy bear Fuzzy Wuzzy. Figure 5.12 represents an exemplary situation that intuitively fits what we expect from counting.

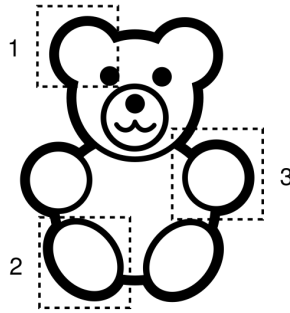


Figure 5.12: Counting of parts

The operation illustrated above assigns numbers to cognitively salient non-overlapping parts of Fuzzy Wuzzy, namely its ear, leg, and paw. Those parts constitute mereologically maximal and integrated entities, i.e., though they are elements of a larger whole, when counted they are treated as objects in their own right. This means that, e.g., number 1 is associated with Fuzzy Wuzzy's whole ear and there is no part of that ear that is left out. Also, an ear is a continuous part that comes in one piece. To sum up, since the depicted division of the teddy bear consists of elements that are disjoint, maximal, and integrated, all the counting principles are satisfied and the set of parts can be enumerated.

On the other hand, one could imagine another operation, e.g., one such as that illustrated in Figure 5.13. Though it is definitely logically possible, it seems weird and would intuitively be rejected as counting. There are two reasons why this is so. The first reason is that the indicated ear and leg do not constitute a continuous integrated part that would be cognitively salient. Therefore, assigning them the number 1 violates the principle of integrity. In other words, there is a sense in which an ear and a leg are part of the teddy bear, but they are not *a part* of it and only entities that can be considered as such can satisfy the countability condition. The second reason is that the marked paw is not disjoint with the right half of the teddy bear which of course violates the principle of non-overlap. Given the division in Figure 5.13, the paw in question would be counted twice and since counting requires that an entity can be associated with a number once and once only, the depicted operation fails to satisfy the general counting principles and represents what I call illegal counting at the subatomic level, recall Figure 5.6.

All things considered, counting at the subatomic level presumes assigning numbers to salient parts of a whole constituting disjoint integrated entities that are maximal with respect to a given partition. In other words, once it is decided

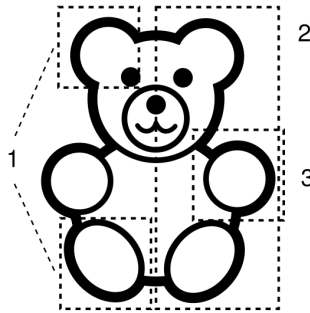


Figure 5.13: Illegal counting of parts

what counts as a part, it is treated as an individuated object in its own right and all discussed constraints concerning counting apply. The key conclusion is that there is one universal mechanism governing quantification over wholes as well as subatomic quantification, and exploring the latter can reveal some fundamental properties of countability in general that otherwise might be difficult to recognize.

### 5.3 Summary

In this chapter, I provided a general conceptual framework that will serve as a basis for developing a formal account for subatomic quantification in natural language. I suggested how the linguistic evidence presented in Chapters 2, 3, and 4 correlates with findings in cognitive psychology. In particular, in the first part of the chapter I reviewed several representative studies in the research indicating the following. First, there is compelling evidence that humans possess an innate ability to perceptually distinguish between objects, i.e., bounded integrated entities, and substances, i.e., shapeless scattered portions of matter, and that this contrast correlates with the mass/count distinction in grammar, though the correspondence is imperfect. Specifically, integrated solid things are predictably referred to by count nouns, but there is a class of mass terms that also refer to objects. Importantly, the object/mass distinction is not based on ontological properties of entities in some objective sense but rather it is construed by human cognition. Second, the ability to simultaneously perceive parts as elements of a whole and a whole as a collection of parts manifests itself in early childhood. The capacity to intuitively distinguish between parts and wholes guides vocabulary acquisition. Finally, human number sense appears to be sensitive to

## 5 *Conceptual background*

whether counted items are conceptualized as integrated objects. Experimental evidence shows that young children always count each separate physical entity as one. Even if they are instructed to do otherwise or given clues that two elements might be considered one broken thing, they ignore them and simply cannot avoid counting contiguous entities. This suggests that further development of quantification in older humans rests on a mechanism individuating singular objects in terms of spatial integrity.

In the second part of this chapter, I presented the three claims that constitute the conceptual core of this study. I postulated that natural language is sensitive to how the spatial relationship holding between parts of a particular entity is conceptualized. The relevance of the topological notion of integrity manifests itself primarily in how the nominal lexicon is classified into different grammatical categories. In particular, count singular nouns prototypically designate integrated wholes, i.e., encode information concerning a particular spatial configuration of parts their referents consist of, whereas plurals denote arbitrary sums thereof, i.e., presuppose integrated wholes as parts but impose no topological constraints on them.

The second claim regards what I call the general counting principles. I posit that counting is a special kind of quantificational operation that presumes certain properties of entities that are put in a one-to-one correspondence with numbers. Specifically, the principle of non-overlap guarantees that enumerated entities are disjoint, and thus no thing is counted twice. On the other hand, the principle of maximality requires that numbers are associated with entities in their mereological entirety, i.e., no part is left out. Finally, the principle of integrity ensures that what can be counted needs to be conceptualized as something that comes in one piece. This constraint excludes arbitrary sums of individuals as well as scattered entities such as substances. Altogether, the general counting principles guarantee that sets that can be enumerated consist only of elements that are discrete object.

The final claim extends the general counting principles to subatomic quantification. In other words, I postulate the quantificational mechanism described above is a universal mechanism that can apply both at the level of wholes and at the level of parts. In the next chapter, I will introduce a theory of wholes called mereotopology in which the formal account for subatomic quantification will be grounded. In particular, it will enable us to capture various subtle topological distinctions including the intuitive notion of an integrated whole as opposed to an arbitrary sum of parts. This will provide means to model not only the fact that some entity is part of something else but also how individual parts are spatially arranged within a whole configuration.

## 6 Theory of parts and wholes

Given the conceptual background described in the previous chapter, an account for subatomic quantification is supposed to capture the intuitive notions of parthood and integrity. In this chapter, I will introduce a theory of parts and wholes that provides the formal apparatus devised to model both concepts. This theory is usually referred to as mereotopology and as suggested by the name it involves two interrelated components. In the following sections, I will first introduce standard mereology, its axioms, and advantages. Next, I will turn to its limitations and discuss how it can be extended with topological notions such as connectedness. As a result, the sophisticated mereotopological framework to be presented will allow us to model integrated wholes as opposed to other types of entities. The mereotopological distinctions to be developed will play a crucial role in the formal account for subatomic quantification in natural language that I will propose in the next chapter.

### 6.1 Mereology

MEREOLOGY (from the Greek  $\mu\epsilon\rho\omicron\zeta$  ‘part’) is the study of parthood, i.e., relations between part and whole as well as between parts within a whole. It was proposed by Leśniewski (1916) and further developed by Leonard & Goodman (1940) and Goodman (1951) as an alternative to set theory. In particular, since set theory is founded on the notion of set membership  $\in$ , i.e., the relation between an element and a set, it distinguishes between a singleton set and its member, i.e.  $\{a\} \neq a$ . For this reason, the nominalist tradition from which mereology stems has considered set theory as ontologically suspect. In order to avoid potentially problematic ontological assumptions, mereology does not postulate abstract entities such as sets. Instead, the meronomic relation of parthood is postulated as the primitive notion of the theory. Therefore, in mereology there is no need to draw the distinction between a singleton set and its member. Though historically mereology was viewed as equivalent to a rejection of set theory, since at least Eberle (1970) it has been gradually recognized that employing mereological concepts is possible irrespective of one’s ontological position concerning sets.

## 6 Theory of parts and wholes

The part-whole relation can hold between portions of masses, parts of individuals, members of groups, locations, events, times, and even abstract entities, as depicted in Table 6.1 (see Simons 1987; Winston et al. 1987). It is a prominent notion in how the world appears to be structured, how human beings perceive things and talk about things. Therefore, mereology plays an important role in ontology, cognitive psychology, and natural-language semantics. Since Quine's (1960) discussion of mass nouns as scattered objects (a clearly mereological concept), considering countability in mereological terms became standard in philosophy (see especially Sharvy 1980 for a treatment of mass definite descriptions in this spirit). However, it was Link (1983) who introduced formal mereology to linguistics in his lattice-theoretic approach to pluralities.

Table 6.1: Examples of wholes and parts (Champollion 2017: p. 12)

WHOLE	PART
some horses	a subset of them
a quantity of water	a portion of it
John, Mary, and Bill	John
some jumping events	a subset of them
a running event from A to B	its part from A halfway towards B
a temporal interval	its initial half
a spatial interval	its northern half

There are different ways in which one could spell out mereological intuitions and axiomatize the parthood relation (see, e.g., Simons 1987; Casati & Varzi 1999; Varzi 2016 for thorough surveys of the field). However, in this chapter I will discuss only a system that gives rise to algebraic structures, i.e., sets with binary operations defined on them, which is often referred to as classical extensional mereology. For brevity, however, I will simply call it standard mereology since it is considered to be a standard in mereology (though see, e.g., Rescher 1955 for an alternative proposal) and is most commonly used in formal semantics for natural language (e.g., Link 1983; Krifka 1989; Landman 2000; Champollion 2017, to name just a few prominent approaches). The axiomatization of standard mereology presented here largely follows the extensive discussions provided by Simons (1987) and Casati & Varzi (1999) as well as the encyclopedic entry on linguistic applications of mereology by Champollion & Krifka (2016). To avoid terminological confusion I will follow Grimm (2012b) in distinguishing between *INDIVIDUALS*, i.e., a pre-theoretic notion regarding well-defined physical entities, and *M-INDIVIDUALS*, i.e., objects in the mereological sense.



The most common view on the axiomatization of mereology takes the concept of PART ( $\sqsubseteq$ ) to be the basic notion. The part-of relationship  $\sqsubseteq$  is the primitive relation which is reflexive, transitive, and antisymmetric.<sup>1</sup> The axioms given in (1)–(3) constrain  $\sqsubseteq$  to be a partial order.

- (1) Reflexivity (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 515; adapted)  
 $\forall x[x \sqsubseteq x]$   
 (Every thing is part of itself.)
- (2) Transitivity (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 516; adapted)  
 $\forall x \forall y \forall z [(x \sqsubseteq y \wedge y \sqsubseteq z) \rightarrow x \sqsubseteq z]$   
 (Any part of any part of a thing is itself part of that thing.)
- (3) Antisymmetry (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 516; adapted)  
 $\forall x \forall y [(x \sqsubseteq y \wedge y \sqsubseteq x) \rightarrow x = y]$   
 (Two distinct things cannot both be part of each other.)

Given that the primitive  $\sqsubseteq$  relation is defined in such a way that an m-individual is part of itself, it might be useful to introduce an auxiliary notion of parthood which is not reflexive. The formula in (4) provides the definition of PROPER PART ( $\sqsubset$ ).

- (4) Proper part (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 36)  
 $x \sqsubset y \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} x \sqsubseteq y \wedge \neg(y \sqsubseteq x)$   
 (A proper part of a thing is a part of a thing that is distinct from it.)

Furthermore, one might also want to account for the fact that entities can share parts. For this reason, an ancillary relation OVERLAP ( $\circ$ ) can be defined, as in (5).<sup>2</sup> From a mereological point of view, identity can be understood as a special case of overlap.

- (5) Overlap (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 516; adapted)  
 $\circ(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists z[z \sqsubseteq x \wedge z \sqsubseteq y]$   
 (Two things overlap if and only if they share a part.)

The parthood relation together with the derived notions of proper part and overlap constitute the core of standard mereology. However, without any further

<sup>1</sup>I use the symbol  $\sqsubseteq$  following Landman (1989a,b; 2000). Other authors use  $\leq$  instead. The main motivation behind this notational decision is to avoid potential confusion with the ‘less than or equal to’ relation between numbers.

<sup>2</sup>I use the  $\circ(x, y)$  notation following Casati & Varzi (1999), Varzi (2007), and Grimm (2012b). Other authors use  $x \circ y$  instead.

constraints the system developed so far gives rise to structures which have been traditionally dismissed as objects that a theory of part-whole relations should represent. For instance, Figure 6.1 illustrates a mereological relation between the m-individuals  $a$  and  $b$  such that  $b$  is a proper part of  $a$  and there is no other proper part of  $a$ .<sup>3</sup>



Figure 6.1: Object with a solitary proper part

Similarly, Figure 6.2 depicts a model in which two distinct m-individuals  $a$  and  $c$  both share all parts. Though such models are allowed within the system, intuitively they are not what a theory of parts and wholes should account for. To remedy this, further constraints have to be introduced.

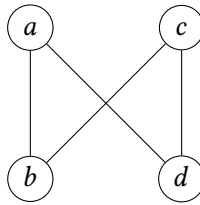


Figure 6.2: Objects sharing all parts

Standard mereology can be devised in order to restrict how an m-individual can be decomposed into parts. In particular, an additional axiom can be added that constrains mereological objects in such a way that every proper part must be supplemented by another disjoint part. In other words, there is always a mereological difference between a whole and its proper parts. An extension known as *REMAINDER PRINCIPLE* or *SUPPLEMENTATION*, see (6), guarantees that m-individuals cannot consist of a single proper part, and thus models such as that in Figure 6.1 are ruled out.

- (6) *Supplementation* (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 36)  
 $x \sqsubset y \rightarrow \exists z[z \sqsubseteq y \wedge \neg o(z, x)]$   
 (Whenever a thing has a proper part, it has more than one.)

<sup>3</sup>The line represents  $\sqsubseteq$  with the m-individual corresponding to the lower node being part of the m-individual corresponding to the higher node.

However, supplementation is insufficient to exclude structures like the one in Figure 6.2, and thus another extension needs to be implemented in order to ban them. Given  $\sqsubseteq$ , the notion of SUM can be defined. Sums are devised to capture a pretheoretical concept of collections, i.e., the result of grouping several entities together. In natural language, conjoined terms and definite descriptions like *the water* have been analyzed in terms of sums. In particular, in his influential paper Link (1983) treats expressions such as *John and Mary* as referring to the sum of two individuals, namely John and Mary. In a similar vein, Sharvy (1980) proposes that a definite expression such as *the water* denotes the sum of all water. Here I will follow the classical definition of sum due to Tarski (1929), as presented in (7) (for alternative definitions, see Simons 1987; Casati & Varzi 1999).

- (7) Sum (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 517; adapted)  

$$\text{SUM}(x, P) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \forall y [P(y) \rightarrow y \sqsubseteq x] \wedge \forall z [z \sqsubseteq x \rightarrow \exists z' [P(z') \wedge o(z, z')]]$$

In prose, a sum of (the things in) a set  $P$  is a thing that consists of everything in  $P$  and whose parts each overlap with something in  $P$ . Since the part structures in standard mereology are closed under sum formation, for any two individuals there is also a sum of those two individuals. This is ensured by UNIQUENESS OF SUMS, which requires two things composed of the same parts to be identical, see (8). This principle excludes structures such as the one in Figure 6.2. Since  $b$  and  $d$  form two different sums, namely  $a$  and  $c$ , uniqueness of sums is violated and the model is ruled out, as desired. Notice also that introducing uniqueness of sums makes the axioms of reflexivity and antisymmetry redundant since any transitive relation that satisfies uniqueness of sums is provably reflexive and antisymmetric (see Hovda 2009; Champollion 2017). The axioms have been discussed for completeness though.

- (8) Uniqueness of sums (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 517; adapted)  

$$\forall P [P \neq \emptyset \rightarrow \exists! z \text{ SUM}(z, P)]$$
  
 (Every non-empty set has a unique sum.)

Finally, the additional notions BINARY SUM and GENERALIZED SUM can be derived, as given in (9) and (10), respectively.<sup>4</sup> The former operation allows us to refer explicitly to the sum of two  $m$ -individuals, whereas the latter to the sum of an arbitrary set.

<sup>4</sup>Again, I follow Landman (1989a,b; 2000) in the use of the symbols  $\sqcup$  and  $\sqllcorner$ , respectively, which correspond to the symbols  $\oplus$  and  $\bigoplus$  one can often find in the literature.

6 Theory of parts and wholes

- (9) Binary sum (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 518; adapted)  
 $x \sqcup y \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \iota z \text{ SUM}(z, \{x, y\})$
- (10) Generalized sum (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 518; adapted)  
 $\sqcup X \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \iota z \text{ SUM}(z, X)$ , where  $X$  is any non-empty set

Consequently, the meaning of the coordinate phrase *John and Mary* can be represented as  $j \sqcup m$ , whereas the semantics of the definite description *the water* is represented as  $\sqcup \text{WATER}$ .

Alongside philosophical arguments for standard mereology, a significant advantage of this framework is that it involves a well-understood algebraic structure. In particular, as demonstrated by Tarski (1935) models delivered by mereology are essentially isomorphic to Boolean algebras with their bottom element removed, or equivalently complete semi-lattices without the null element (see also Pontow & Schubert 2006).<sup>5</sup> Figure 6.3 gives an example of a mereological structure licensed by standard mereology. Note that it is isomorphic to the powerset of the set  $\{a, b, c\}$  with the bottom element removed.

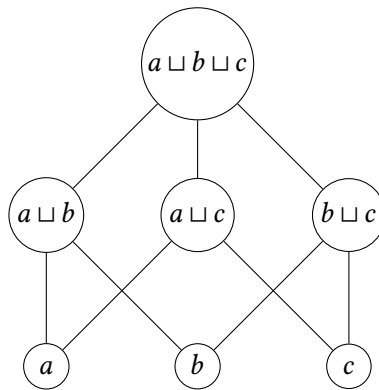


Figure 6.3: Semi-lattice

I will follow the well-established tradition in the semantic literature and refer to such models as complete semi-lattices. However, as pointed out by Champollion (2017) due to the lack of the null element the use of the term *complete* is rather inadequate since it deviates from standard mathematical practice (see also Landman 1989a). The definition of such a structure is given in (11).

---

<sup>5</sup>The reason is that standard mereology does not allow for an object that is part of everything and since the empty set is a subset of every other set, it must be eliminated.

(11) Semi-lattice (Champollion 2017: p. 17; adapted)

Let  $S$  be a set and  $\sqsubseteq$  be a relation from  $S$  to  $S$ . A pair  $\langle S, \sqsubseteq \rangle$  is called a complete semi-lattice iff  $\sqsubseteq$  satisfies the axioms of transitivity and uniqueness of sums.

Before we move on to the discussion of the limits of standard mereology that seem to have posed some serious problems in the study of natural language semantics adopting lattice-theoretic approaches, let us briefly contemplate some correspondences between mereology and set theory.

### 6.1.1 Mereology vs. set theory

It can be easily noted that the notion of parthood in standard mereology has basically the same properties as the subset relation in standard set theory. Therefore, since  $\sqsubseteq$  and  $\subseteq$  are very much alike, there are a number of deep correspondences between the two axiom systems, some of which are illustrated in Table 6.2. Consequently, in many contexts it might be convenient to regard sums as sets, and a question arises on why mereology is preferable over set theory in modeling pluralities in natural language semantics.

Table 6.2: Correspondences between mereology and set theory (Champollion & Krifka 2016: p. 519; adapted)

PROPERTY	MEREOLGY	SET THEORY
reflexivity	$x \sqsubseteq x$	$x \subseteq x$
transitivity	$x \sqsubseteq y \wedge y \sqsubseteq z \rightarrow x \sqsubseteq z$	$x \subseteq y \wedge y \subseteq z \rightarrow x \subseteq z$
antisymmetry	$x \sqsubseteq y \wedge y \sqsubseteq x \rightarrow x = y$	$x \subseteq y \wedge y \subseteq x \rightarrow x = y$
interdefinability	$x \sqsubseteq y \Leftrightarrow x \sqcup y = y$	$x \subseteq y \Leftrightarrow x \cup y = y$
unique sum/union	$P \neq \emptyset \rightarrow \exists!z[\text{sum}(z, P)]$	$\exists!z[z = \cup P]$
associativity	$x \sqcup (y \sqcup z) = (x \sqcup y) \sqcup z$	$x \cup (y \cup z) = (x \cup y) \cup z$
commutativity	$x \sqcup y = y \sqcup x$	$x \cup y = y \cup x$
idempotence	$x \sqcup x = x$	$x \cup x = x$
unique separation	$x \sqsubset y \rightarrow \exists!z[x \sqcup z = y \wedge \neg o(x, z)]$	$x \subset y \rightarrow \exists!z[z = y - x]$

Though early approaches to the semantics of plural expressions were grounded in set theory (Bennet 1974; Hausser 1974), a substantive body of contemporary research embraces systems based on the notion of parthood. The original motivation behind preferring mereology over set theory in the logic of plurality developed by Link (1983; 1998) was formulated on philosophical grounds. In

particular, Link argues that the traditional set-up of semantics taking the domain of individuals to be simply a non-empty set fails to represent various relations between objects. In other words, it is devised to capture only flat domains and cannot account for structured domains, as in modeling natural language. In terms of ontology, Link describes his position as “relative nominalism” and argues that a set-theoretic approach is not desirable because by treating pluralities as sets, it commits us to assuming additional abstract objects. On the other hand, since in a mereological framework pluralities are treated on par with singularities as individuals, such an approach bears no additional ontological commitments, and thus is to be preferred.<sup>6</sup>

Another arguable advantage of using mereology rather than set theory in plural semantics is that it conveniently allows us to distinguish type-theoretically between the denotations of common nouns, i.e., set-denoting expressions of type  $\langle e, t \rangle$ , and plural individuals, i.e., individual-denoting expressions of type  $e$  (see also Vaillette 2001; Champollion 2017). Due to the lack of sums set-theoretic approaches to pluralities conflate the meanings of these two types of expressions which can be considered an undesired result.

A prominent linguistic application of standard mereology is the theory developed by Champollion (2017), who adopts the order-theoretic perspective and treats  $\sqsubseteq$  as primitive. On the other hand, Krifka (1998) derives  $\sqsubseteq$  from  $\sqcup$ . Other influential theories that were intended to characterize standard mereology were developed by Link (1983; 1998) and Landman (1989a; 1991; 2000).<sup>7</sup>

### 6.1.2 Limits of mereology

As has been pointed out by many authors, there is independent motivation for extending standard mereology with auxiliary notions. One factor concerns the criticism mereology faced with respect to its inadequacy in modeling objects in the real world. In particular, mereology is committed to unrestricted sum formation and as such it is insufficient to capture what it means to be a whole. This results in diametrical discrepancies between intuitions regarding the nature of entities in the world and objects mereology actually delivers. To use Casati & Varzi’s (1999) example, imagine a cup and broken glass. Intuitively, the former constitutes an object, i.e., an individuated whole, something that counts as one, whereas the latter is just a collection of shards. However, this distinction cannot be captured by describing entities purely in terms of parthood. This is because in

---

<sup>6</sup>But see Landman (1989a) for a discussion challenging such a view.

<sup>7</sup>But see a scrupulous review by Hovda (2009) who demonstrates in detail that these systems contain certain flaws, which result in them failing to describe standard mereology, as intended.

mereology for every whole there is a set of parts and to every arbitrary collection of parts there is their sum, i.e., a complete whole. As a result, a cup and broken glass have the very same mereological status. In other words, the allowance of scattered entities makes it impossible to differentiate between them and individuals constituting integrated wholes. Consequently, mereology has faced criticism that in principle it fails as a theory of individuals.

As suggested by Grimm (2012b), it is very likely that at least some of the shortcomings of mereological approaches to pluralities and countability in natural language may be due to the general flaws of standard mereology in attempting to capture what it means to be a whole. Arguably, extending standard mereological frameworks with additional notions in order to develop a better theory of objects, as proposed, e.g., by Casati & Varzi (1999), may provide superior tools for semantic treatments of quantification in natural language. As already signaled, a challenging problem concerns the requirement of unrestricted sum formation which states that for every two elements in the domain, there is a plural individual corresponding to the sum of those two elements. Specifically, the ontological status of such a plural entity has often been disputed. As wittily put by Landman (1989a), if three children messed up the living room, the correct answer to the question “How many individuals were involved in messing up the living room?” is “three”, whereas “seven” clearly seems incorrect.<sup>8</sup> However, if pluralities were conceptualized as having the same ontological status as singular individuals, we would expect this answer to be adequate since that number includes all distinct sums of the children in question. In other words, if the children were Anne, Betty, and Carl, i.e.,  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$  respectively, then 7 is the number of the elements of the set consisting of all entities that are part of the total sum of the children, i.e.,  $\{a, b, c, a \sqcup b, a \sqcup c, b \sqcup c, a \sqcup b \sqcup c\}$ . The fact that natural language does not allow for quantification over arbitrary sums suggests that the way individual objects are conceptualized differs from how we see pluralities of objects. However, standard mereology lacks notions fine-grained enough to distinguish between objects that come in one piece and entities that do not.

The next section will introduce an extension of standard mereology within which more fine-grained notions can be defined. These notions will enhance mereology in that in addition to parthood they will allow us to capture also the topological configuration of entities making up a particular sum, i.e., their spatial arrangement. In other words, the topological extension will make it possible to discriminate between scattered entities and wholes that come in one piece.

---

<sup>8</sup>See also Cresswell (1985).

## 6.2 Mereotopology

TOPOLOGY (from the Greek *τοπος* ‘place’) is the study of those properties of space that are unaffected by continuous deformations of shape or size of figures such as stretching or bending, as opposed to tearing or gluing. Two of the crucial notions studied in the field are connectedness and compactness. Important contributions to the early development of topology were made by Fréchet (1906), Hausdorff (1914), and Kuratowski (1922).

Theories that extend standard mereology with topological relations are known as MEREOTOPOLOGY. Though early attempts to formalize such a system trace back to Whitehead (1920; 1929), for many decades there was no continuation in the systematic study of mereotopological issues until relatively recent work in artificial intelligence began to investigate the interaction between mereological and topological notions in order to develop formal representations of spatial relations such as NEAR or INSIDE. Consequently, new developments in philosophy and ontological modeling (e.g., Clarke 1981; Smith 1996; Roeper 1997) motivated the extension of standard mereology with topological relations in order to advance an improved theory of objects.

Though topological notions have been widely used within the study of locatives (e.g., Clark 1973; Herskovits 1985; Zwarts & Winter 1997; Kracht 2002), it was not until Grimm (2012a,b) that mereotopology was introduced to natural language semantics.<sup>9</sup> In this chapter, I will define basic topological concepts and review how they interact with mereological notions as discussed by Casati & Varzi (1999) and adopted for the semantic treatment of countability by Grimm (2012a,b).

There are two main approaches with respect to relating mereology and topology: (i) choosing mereology as a basic level and augmenting it with topological notions, or (ii) choosing topology as a basic level and adding mereological relations. I will follow Grimm (2012b), who employs a technique of simply extending mereology with topological notions. In particular, he adopts the approach developed in Casati & Varzi (1999), which I will describe in the following paragraphs.

The crucial topological notion for the purpose of this study is CONNECTEDNESS (c). This relation is introduced in such a way that it interacts with other definitions and axioms of standard mereology. Connectedness is reflexive and symmetric, as defined in the axioms in (12) and (13).

---

<sup>9</sup>Mereotopology has been further applied to particular topics concerning countability in Lima (2014) and Grimm & Dočekal (2021). The theory has also inspired approaches that do not develop full-fledged mereotopological accounts but employ some spatial relations in order to capture certain issues relating to individuation such as Scontras (2014; 2017), Sutton & Filip (2017a,b), Henderson (2017), and Krifka (2021).



- (12) Reflexivity (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 52; adapted)  
 $\forall x[c(x, x)]$   
 (Every thing is connected to itself.)
- (13) Symmetry (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 52; adapted)  
 $\forall x\forall y[c(x, y) \rightarrow c(y, x)]$   
 (If  $x$  is connected to  $y$ , then  $y$  is also connected to  $x$ .)

Notice, however, that unlike the parthood relation  $\sqsubseteq$ , as defined in standard mereology, recall (1)–(3), the connectedness relation  $c$  does not need to be transitive. For instance, consider the configuration depicted in Figure 6.4. Although  $a$  and  $b$  are connected to each other and  $b$  and  $c$  are connected to each other, it is not the case that  $a$  and  $c$  are connected to each other.

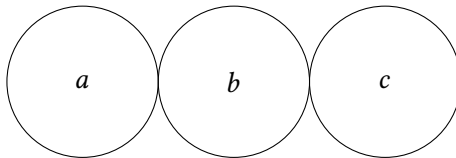


Figure 6.4: Connectedness and transitivity

As discussed by Casati & Varzi (1999), there are a number of intuitive interactions between the topological notion  $c$  and the mereological relations  $\sqsubseteq$  and  $\circ$ . These intuitive interactions can be formalized as the so-called bridging principles which interrelate the mereological and the topological component of the theory (Varzi 2007). The main aim of the bridging principles is to secure that, irrespective of their full characterization,  $\sqsubseteq$  and  $c$  are related in such a manner that a whole and its parts are firmly connected. In particular, the principle of INTEGRITY ensures that connectedness is implied by parthood, see (14), and consequently mereological overlap is in fact a form of connection, as guaranteed by the principle of UNITY, see (15). Finally, the principle defined in (16) secures MONOTONICITY.<sup>10</sup>

- (14) Integrity (Varzi 2007: p. 981; adapted)  
 $\forall x\forall y[x \sqsubseteq y \rightarrow c(x, y)]$   
 (If an  $m$ -individual is part of another  $m$ -individual, then they are connected.)

<sup>10</sup>In fact, (16) implies both (14) and (15) (Varzi 2007: pp. 981–982). However, I provide all the bridging principles for the sake of completeness.

## 6 Theory of parts and wholes

- (15) Unity (Varzi 2007: p. 981; adapted)  
 $\forall x \forall y [o(x, y) \rightarrow c(x, y)]$   
 (If two m-individuals overlap, then they are connected.)
- (16) Monotonicity (Varzi 2007: p. 981; adapted)  
 $\forall x \forall y [x \sqsubseteq y \rightarrow \forall z [c(z, x) \rightarrow c(z, y)]]$   
 (If an m-individual is part of another m-individual, then whatever is connected to the former, is also connected to the latter.)

Given these extensions, a number of mereotopological properties like INTERNAL PART ( $\mathcal{IP}$ ), INTERNAL OVERLAP ( $\mathcal{IO}$ ), and TANGENTIAL OVERLAP ( $\mathcal{TO}$ ) can be defined. Such notions enable us to draw subtle topological distinctions in order to account for different spatial configurations that entities may be in. For instance, the individual  $b$  in Figure 6.5 is an internal part of the individual  $a$  since every entity that is connected to  $b$  overlaps with  $a$  or, in other words,  $a$  includes  $b$ . On the other hand, though part of  $b$  is an internal part of  $a$  in Figure 6.6, there is also a part of  $b$  which is not included in  $a$ . Finally, Figure 6.7 illustrates a configuration where there is overlap between  $a$  and  $b$  but there is no internal overlap, i.e., the individuals only share their edges.

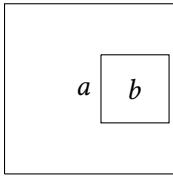


Figure 6.5: Internal part

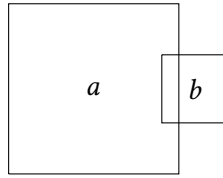


Figure 6.6: Internal overlap

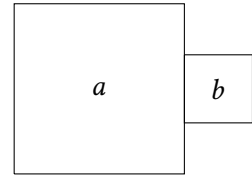


Figure 6.7: Tangential overlap

The relevant definitions are given in (17)–(19).

- (17) Internal part (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 55; adapted)  
 $\mathcal{IP}(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} x \sqsubseteq y \wedge \forall z [c(z, x) \rightarrow o(z, y)]$
- (18) Internal overlap (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 55; adapted)  
 $\mathcal{IO}(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists z [\mathcal{IP}(z, x) \wedge \mathcal{IP}(z, y)]$
- (19) Tangential overlap (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 55; adapted)  
 $\mathcal{TO}(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} o(x, y) \wedge \neg \mathcal{IO}(x, y)$

In addition, within the mereotopological framework standard topological notions can be defined. Assuming MEREOTOPICAL COMPLEMENT ( $\sim$ ), as provided in (20), (21)–(24) give definitions for INTERIOR ( $\text{INT}$ ), EXTERIOR ( $\text{EXT}$ ), CLOSURE ( $\text{CLO}$ ), and BOUNDARY ( $\text{B}$ ), respectively.

- (20) Mereological complement (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 45; adapted)  
 $\sim(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \iota y \forall z [z \sqsubseteq y \leftrightarrow \neg o(z, x)]$
- (21) Interior (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 58; adapted)  
 $\text{INT}(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sqcup X$  where  $X = \{y : \text{IP}(y, x) = \text{TRUE}\}$
- (22) Exterior (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 58; adapted)  
 $\text{EXT}(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{INT}(\sim(x))$
- (23) Closure (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 58; adapted)  
 $\text{CLO}(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sim(\text{EXT}(x))$
- (24) Boundary (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 58; adapted)  
 $\text{B}(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sim(\text{INT}(x) \sqcup \text{EXT}(x))$

Figure 6.8–6.10 illustrate the intended configurations.

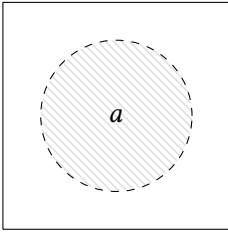


Figure 6.8: Interior

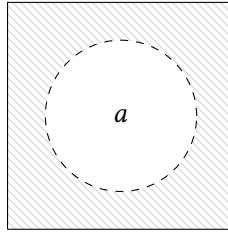


Figure 6.9: Exterior

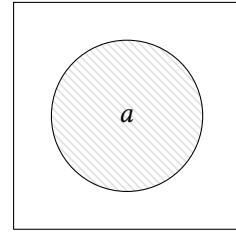


Figure 6.10: Closure

The shaded area in Figure 6.8 represents the interior of an object, which is taken to be the sum of an *m*-individual's internal parts. The dashed line marks the boundary of the object, i.e., the part that is not included in its interior. On the other hand, Figure 6.9 represents the exterior of an object, which again does not comprise the boundary, whereas the solid line in Figure 6.10 indicates that both the interior and boundary make up the closure of an entity.

The framework described so far extends standard mereology with the primitive topological relation of connectedness and several derived notions, which allow us to talk about different configurations that entities can be in. Such a system provides means to distinguish between arbitrary and non-arbitrary sums, and consequently to define individuals as integrated wholes, i.e., objects characterized in terms of different degrees of connectedness. The following section will discuss a mereotopological approach to such individuals.

### 6.2.1 Integrated wholes

A great advantage of the mereotopological approach to natural language semantics is that by means of the topological relations defined so far it is possible to capture what it means to be an individual understood as an integrated whole. In particular, a distinction can be drawn between entities which come in one piece, as opposed to pluralities, i.e., scattered entities, which bear no topological commitments. To distinguish the former from the latter, it is essential to introduce the property SELF-CONNECTED (sc). Unlike arbitrary sums, sc entities cannot be divided into separated parts. The definition of sc is provided in (25).

- (25) Self-connected (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 57; adapted)  

$$sc(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \forall y \forall z [\forall w (o(w, x) \leftrightarrow (o(w, y) \vee o(w, z))) \rightarrow c(y, z)]$$
 (An entity is self-connected if and only if any two parts that form the whole of that entity are connected to each other.)

Given the definition in (25), it is possible to differentiate inseparable individuals from separable ones including arbitrary sums of entities, i.e., disconnected configurations of objects. To illustrate this let us assume a model containing four entities. Specifically, suppose  $a$  and  $b$  are two halves of a cube, whereas  $c$  and  $d$  are a pyramid and a sphere, respectively, see Figure 6.11. Intuitively, there is a difference between the sum  $s_1 = a \sqcup b$  and the sum  $s_2 = c \sqcup d$ . While  $s_1$  forms an integrated whole, the plurality  $s_2$  is just an arbitrary collection of disconnected objects, and thus it does not make up a solid whole. In other words,  $sc(s_1)$  is true, whereas  $sc(s_2)$  is false.

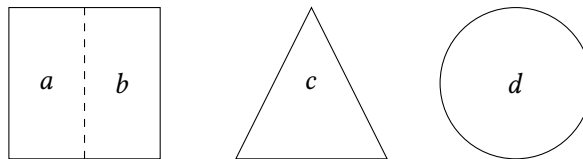


Figure 6.11: Wholes vs. sums

Self-connectedness is a great improvement in the theory of wholeness. However, this notion is still insufficient to capture what it means to be conceptualized as an integrated object since it allows for configurations involving only an external connection holding between individuals. In other words, cases when the closure of one object overlaps the other or vice versa are not ruled out. For instance, Figure 6.12 depicts two spheres  $a$  and  $b$  which only touch each other, i.e., their boundaries are connected at a single point. Given the definition of sc

in (25),  $a$  and  $b$  are self-connected but intuitively such a spatial configuration is not sufficient to count as an integrated whole.

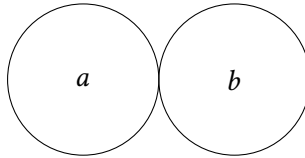


Figure 6.12: External connection

In order to rule out cases such as the one illustrated in Figure 6.12, a stronger relation is required. Ostensibly, what is necessary is that not only boundaries of parts of a whole are connected to each other, but also that their internal parts are shared. To solve this problem one needs to define an additional restriction on the concept of interior given in (21). Accordingly, Casati & Varzi (1999) postulate the property of being **STRONGLY SELF-CONNECTED** (SSC), as defined in (26).<sup>11</sup> This refinement will get us much closer to the type of entities we would like to single out, i.e., integrated wholes.

- (26) Strongly self-connected (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 60; adapted)  
 $ssc(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} sc(x) \wedge sc(\text{INT}(x))$   
 (An  $m$ -individual is strongly self-connected if it is self-connected and its interior is self-connected.)

The restriction introduced in (26) guarantees that not only boundaries of parts are shared but also that the interior of an entity is self-connected. Therefore, the property of  $ssc$  rules out objects that merely touch each other, e.g., the spheres in Figure 6.12. However, the fact that an entity is strongly self-connected still does not ensure that such an entity is an integrated whole in the sense a theory of wholeness is supposed to capture. For instance, consider the entity  $a$ , i.e., the left half of the cuboid represented in Figure 6.13. Although  $a$  qualifies as a strongly self-connected object since any two parts that form its interior are connected, intuitively it cannot be characterized as a whole. Obviously, the reason is that there is yet another half of the cuboid and only the two together make up the entire individual. Consequently,  $ssc$  is insufficient for our purposes and an even stronger notion is required to capture what is perceived as an integral whole.

<sup>11</sup>Notice that on some plausible assumptions concerning boundaries the first conjunct in (26) is superfluous (for a discussion of various views on boundaries, see Casati & Varzi 1999: pp. 61–62, 71–98).

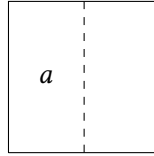


Figure 6.13: Strongly self-connected part

Describing wholes is about capturing an intuitive notion of unity. This means that a proper definition should accommodate both topological integrity and mereological exhaustivity. For this purpose, Casati & Varzi (1999) introduce the property of being MAXIMALLY STRONGLY SELF-CONNECTED (MSSC), as defined in (27).

- (27) Maximally-strongly-self-connected (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 60; adapted)  

$$\text{MSSC}(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \text{SSC}(x) \wedge \forall y[\text{SSC}(y) \wedge \text{O}(y, x) \rightarrow y \sqsubseteq x]$$
 (An *m*-individual is maximally strongly self-connected if (i) every part of the individual is connected to (overlaps) the whole (strongly self-connected) and (ii) anything else which overlaps it and is strongly self-connected is once again part of it (maximality).)

More generally one could single out entities that are maximally strongly self-connected relative to a particular property. The relativized MSSC property can be characterized as in (28), which provides the final mereotopological definition of what an integrated whole is.

- (28) Maximally strongly self-connected relative to a property (Casati & Varzi 1999: p. 60; adapted)  

$$\text{MSSC}(P)(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} P(x) \wedge \text{SSC}(x) \wedge \forall y[P(y) \wedge \text{SSC}(y) \wedge \text{O}(y, x) \rightarrow y \sqsubseteq x]$$
 (An *m*-individual is maximally strongly self-connected relative to a property if (i) every part of the individual is connected to (overlaps) the whole (strongly self-connected) and (ii) anything else which has the same property, is strongly self-connected, and overlaps it is once again part of it (maximality).)

If an entity satisfies MSSC, then it is the largest entity satisfying that property which is self-connected. For instance, if *P* is the property of being a cuboid, then the definition in (28) will select the largest such entities among those that come in one piece. In particular, it will single out the whole cuboid in Figure 6.13 as opposed to, e.g., its left half *a* though *a* itself also satisfies the property of being a cuboid. That is because *a* is part of the cuboid whereas the whole cuboid is not part of any other strongly self-connected object.

Though the structure of the mereotopological framework of Casati & Varzi (1999) discussed above is relatively simple, the distinctions developed within it are fine-grained enough for the representation of spatial objects. As standard mereology, mereotopology gives rise to algebraic structures isomorphic to Boolean algebras with their bottom element removed. However, such lattice representations are further endowed with regions indicating which elements are associated with the connectedness relation  $c$ . For instance, consider Figure 6.14.

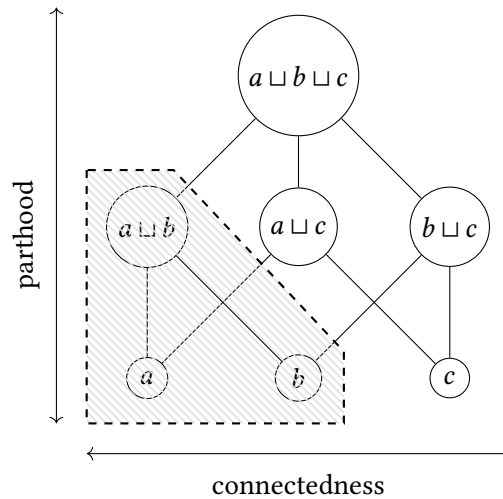


Figure 6.14: Parthood and connectedness (based on Grimm 2012b: p. 136)

Given a model with 3 entities, namely two halves of a cube  $a$  and  $b$  and a pyramid  $c$ , the semi-lattice represents all the possible sums generated by the set of corresponding  $m$ -individuals. The vertical axis illustrates the parthood relation with individual lines between particular nodes symbolizing  $\sqsubseteq$ , whereas the horizontal axis represents connectedness. The shaded area then covers those entities in the structure which are connected. In other words, the mereological component of the theory defines part-whole relations between  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$  and all the possible sums thereof, whereas the topological component singles out those parts that form self-connected wholes. In particular, while  $a$  in the model is part of  $a \sqcup b$  (as well as of itself due to the axiom of reflexivity), it is not part of  $b$ . However, it is connected to  $b$  (as well as to  $a \sqcup b$  due the axiom of integrity and to itself – again reflexivity).

Moreover, as discussed by Grimm (2012b), the subtle niceties between different types of connectedness provide means to capture differences between distinct

types of nominals, such as object, substance, and aggregate nouns, as well as eliminate old problems concerning cumulative singular count nouns such as *fence* or *twig* (see, e.g., Zucchi & White 2001; Rothstein 2010). Specifically, among multiple parts that have a property of being, say, a rock only the maximal (improper) part counts as a whole object. Hence, I conclude that compared to standard mereology, mereotopology proves to be a superior theory of parts and wholes and its application in natural language semantics should be considered advantageous. In the next section I will discuss several other kinds of connection.

### 6.2.2 Other types of connection

In the previous section, we saw that given the primitive relation  $c$  it is possible to derive a notion that can capture what it means to be an integrated whole as opposed to an arbitrary sum, namely the  $\text{mssc}$  property. This, however, does not deplete the potential of mereotopology in modeling different types of objects and spatial configurations. Based on  $c$ , many other types of topological relations representing distinct varieties of connectedness may be defined. In this section, I will discuss some of them.

The first auxiliary mode of connection to be discussed is the property of  $\text{FIRMLY CONNECTED}$  ( $\text{FC}$ ), as defined in (29).<sup>12</sup>

- (29) Firmly connected (Varzi 2007: p. 1003; adapted)  
 $\text{FC}(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists w \exists z [w \sqsubseteq x \wedge z \sqsubseteq y \wedge \text{SSC}(w \sqcup z)]$   
 (Two  $m$ -individuals are firmly connected if a sum of their parts is strongly self-connected.)

This property holds between two entities when they overlap in a substantive sense. In other words, two  $m$ -individuals are firmly connected if their sum is strongly self-connected. Such a definition excludes cases of tangential overlap, i.e., configurations where entities only touch each other, since the  $\text{SSC}$  property implies that not only the boundaries but also the interiors of  $m$ -individuals are connected.

With an additional restriction regarding the local scope of connectedness, the notion of  $\text{FC}$  seems to be suitable to capture what it means to be conceptualized as a substance, as opposed to an integrated individual that we count as one. Specifically, substances can be represented as comprising of  $m$ -individuals that

---

<sup>12</sup>I use the term following Varzi (2007), whereas Casati & Varzi (1999) and Grimm (2012a,b) talk about strong connection. My motivation is mainly to avoid potential confusion with the  $\text{SSC}$  property which plays a crucial role in defining  $\text{FC}$  but is distinct from it.



are locally firmly connected, i.e., at a given location an instance of a substance is always firmly connected to another instance of the same substance (Grimm 2012a,b: pp. 140–142). For instance, a section of mud in a puddle overlaps with other sections of the puddle of mud, which are again mud.

In contrast to FC, the property EXTERNALLY CONNECTED (EC), as defined in (30), concerns entities that are merely tangentially connected, i.e., it is only their boundaries that are connected, whereas their interiors do not overlap. This notion enables us to model configurations of entities that are not merged but simply touch each other.

(30) Externally connected (Grimm 2012b: p. 134; adapted)

$$EC(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} c(x, y) \wedge \neg c(\text{INT}(x), \text{INT}(y))$$

(Two m-individuals are externally connected if they are connected but it is not the case that their interiors are connected.)

Another topological notion it might be useful to derive is one describing a configuration of objects touching each other in such a way that they form, say, a row. This variety of connectedness can be captured by the property BY-CONNECTED (BC), as provided by Varzi (2007). It holds between entities that are not connected to each other but are associated by virtue of being connected to another mediating entity. The definition in (31) describes BC as a three-place relation establishing indirect connectedness between the outermost entities within a configuration.

(31) By-connected (Varzi 2007: p. 979; adapted)

$$BC(x, y, z) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} c(x, z) \wedge c(z, y)$$

(Three m-individuals  $x$ ,  $y$ , and  $z$  are by-connected if  $x$  is connected to  $z$  and  $z$  is connected to  $y$ .)

A related notion is called MEDIATELY CONNECTED (MC). This is a binary relation that holds between entities that are not necessarily connected to each other, but are part of a by-connected configuration, e.g. a row of individuals. In other words, there is an object that mediates the connection between two such entities. The formal definition of MC is given in (32).

(32) Mediately connected (Varzi 2007: p. 979; adapted)

$$MC(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists z[BC(x, y, z)]$$

(Two m-individuals are mediately connected if they are by-connected through a third m-individual.)

To illustrate the  $\text{bc}$  and  $\text{mc}$  relations, consider the configuration of two spheres  $a$  and  $c$  and a cube  $b$ , as depicted in Figure 6.15. The three entities are by-connected since  $a$  is externally connected to  $b$  and  $b$  is externally connected to  $c$ . At the same time, the spheres are mediately connected since both  $a$  and  $c$  are connected to the cube  $b$ , i.e.,  $b$  in a way mediates the connection between  $a$  and  $c$ .

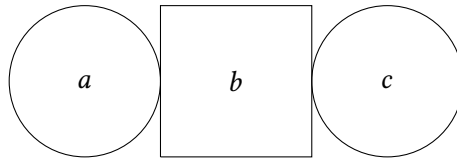


Figure 6.15: By-connected and mediately connected

As pointed out by Grimm (2012b: pp. 134–135), the notion of  $\text{mc}$  may prove useful in modeling natural language expressions denoting entities such as eyes or fingers. Such objects seem to be conceptualized in a particular way which is further reflected in grammar. Specifically, in some languages they belong to a category of inherently plural or dual expressions.

Furthermore, the  $\text{bc}$  relation can be generalized to hold for any number of entities. This gives rise to the property  $\text{TRANSITIVELY CONNECTED}$  ( $\text{TC}$ ). As defined in (33) (see Grimm 2012a,b: p. 144), it is intended to determine whether two individuals are connected through a series of mediating entities. For instance, it would hold of two opposite entities in a scenario similar to the one illustrated in Figure 6.15 with the exception that between the spheres  $a$  and  $c$  there is not only the cube  $b$ , but also a pyramid  $d$  such that it touches both  $b$  and  $c$ .

- (33)  $\text{Transitively connected}$  (Grimm 2012a: p. 15; adapted)  
 $\text{TC}(x, y, P, C, Z) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \forall z \in Z [P(z) \wedge (x = z_1 \wedge y = z_n) \wedge Cz_1z_2 \wedge Cz_2z_3 \cdots \wedge Cz_{n-1}z_n]$   
 where  $Z = \{z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n\}$   
 (Entities  $x$  and  $y$  are transitively connected relative to a property  $P$ , a connection relation  $C$ , and a set of entities  $Z$ , when all members of  $Z$  satisfy  $P$  and  $x$  and  $y$  are connected through the sequence of  $z_i$ s in  $Z$ .)

The property  $\text{TC}$  allows for defining the concept of  $\text{CLUSTER}$  ( $\text{CLSTR}$ ) (see Grimm 2012a,b: p. 144). According to (34), a cluster is a special type of entity that is conceptualized as a plurality of  $m$ -individuals that are transitively connected, i.e., they compose a connected sequence. For instance, the sum  $a \sqcup b \sqcup c$  in Figure 6.15 forms a cluster relative to the property of being a three-dimensional geometrical object.

(34) Cluster (Grimm 2012b: p. 144; adapted)

$$\text{CLSTR}(x, P, C) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists Z[x = \sqcup Z \wedge \forall z \forall z' \in Z \exists Y[\tau C(z, z', P, C, Y)]]$$

(An entity  $x$  is a cluster relative to a property  $P$  and a connection relation  $C$  iff  $x$  is a sum of entities falling under the same property which are all transitively connected relative to some set  $Y$  under the same property and connection relation.)

Though the notions of  $\tau C$  and  $\text{CLSTR}$  are intriguing and important mereotopological concepts, the definitions in (33) and (34) seem to give rise to certain unintended consequences.<sup>13</sup> In (33), the argument  $Z$  being a set does not have an inherent ordering. However, the indexed variables  $z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n$  make reference to some ordering of this set. Since there is no quantifier over these variables in (33), the particular indexing assumed for a given case in fact determines whether the relation  $\tau C(x, y, P, C, Z)$  holds or not. For instance, if  $Z = \{a, b, c\}$  such that  $a$  and  $b$  are connected,  $b$  and  $c$  are connected and no other connections hold, the condition in (33) is met for  $z_1 = a, z_2 = b, z_3 = c$  but not for  $z_1 = a, z_2 = c, z_3 = b$ . This seems counterintuitive since, given the context of Grimm (2012a,b), the intention behind (33) must be that it is valid whenever there is *some* finite sequence  $\langle z_1, \dots, z_n \rangle$  such that  $Z = \{z_1, \dots, z_n\}$ ,  $x = z_1, y = z_n$  and for every index  $i$ , such that  $1 \leq i < n$ , the connection relation  $C(z_i, z_{i+1})$  holds. And yet, based on (33), it seems like some particular such sequence must be always contextually given, which means it is unclear how to apply (33) in the context of (34).

Another problem is that the definition of a cluster in (34) has the following counterintuitive consequence. Let  $P = \{z_1, z_2, z_3\}$  and  $Z = \{z_1, z_3\}$  and assume that  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  are connected,  $z_2$  and  $z_3$  are connected and nothing else is connected. In such a case,  $z_1$  and  $z_3$  are transitively connected via the set  $Y = \{z_1, z_2, z_3\}$ , which is a subset of  $P$ , so the sum  $z_1 \sqcup z_3$  should form a cluster relative to  $P$  and  $C$ , even though it is not a connected entity.

In order to avoid the problems discussed above, I propose the revised definitions for  $\tau C$  and  $\text{CLSTR}$  in (35) and (36), respectively. The main difference between (33) and (35) is that in the revised version the quantification over possible orderings of  $Z$  is made explicit, i.e., the parameter  $Z$  ranges over sequences rather than unordered sets.

(35) Transitively connected (revised)

$$\tau C(x, y, P, C, Z) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} z_1 = x \wedge z_n = y \wedge \forall i[1 \leq i < n \rightarrow C(z_i, z_{i+1})] \\ \wedge \forall i[1 \leq i \leq n \rightarrow P(z_i)], \text{ where } Z = \langle z_1, \dots, z_n \rangle$$

(Entities  $x$  and  $y$  are transitively connected relative to a property  $P$ , a connection relation  $C$ , and a finite sequence of entities  $Z$ , when all members

<sup>13</sup>I would like to sincerely thank Nina Haslinger for pointing this out as well as suggesting a solution.

## 6 Theory of parts and wholes

of  $Z$  satisfy  $P$  and  $x$  and  $y$  are connected through the sequence of  $z_i$ s in  $Z$ .)

Furthermore, the key modification in (36), as compared to (34), is that in (36) the variable  $Y$  is restricted to the subsets of  $Z$ . This excludes configurations such as the unconnected sum  $z1 \sqcup z3$  in the scenario discussed above.

(36) Cluster (revised)

$$\text{CLSTR}(x, P, C) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists Z [x = \sqcup Z \wedge \forall z \forall z' \in Z \exists Y \subseteq Z [\tau_C(z, z', P, C, Y)]]$$

(An entity  $x$  is a cluster relative to a property  $P$  and a connection relation  $C$  iff  $x$  is a sum of entities falling under the same property which are all transitively connected relative to  $Y$  which is a subset of a sequence  $Z$  under the same property and connection relation.)

Finally, the weakest variety of connectedness can be captured by the notion of PROXIMATELY CONNECTED (PC).<sup>14</sup> This relation concerns entities that are neither contiguous, nor do they touch each other, but rather they are “very close”. The formula in (37) defines PC in terms of the distance function  $D$  which yields the distance between two entities it is applied to. For instance, if a sphere  $a$  is 1 meter away from a cube  $b$ , the distance function  $D$  would yield 1 meter. The value  $n$  is determined with respect to the predicate in question so that entities that satisfy it are conceptualized as being sufficiently near each other relative to the relevant property.

(37) Proximately connected (Grimm 2012b: p. 135; adapted)

$$\text{PC}(x, y, P) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} D(x, y) \leq n(P)$$

(Two  $m$ -individuals are proximately connected if the distance between them is lesser than or equal to the value determined for a given predicate.)

The overview provided here does not by any means exhaust possible configurations of objects and different types of connectedness. Nonetheless, for our purposes the notions introduced in this section will be absolutely sufficient. The introduced distinctions allow us to differentiate between several types of entities. First, due to the  $\text{MSSC}$  relation it is possible to distinguish between arbitrary sums and solid integrated wholes. On the other hand, the  $\text{FC}$  property might be useful in capturing the nature of substances, i.e., entities that come in multiple instances which overlap each other. Furthermore, the  $\tau_C$  relation enables us to single out entities consisting of connected objects arranged in configurations

<sup>14</sup>In order to refer to a similar concept, Casati & Varzi (1999) use the term quasi-connected. However, I will follow Grimm’s (2012b) terminology and formalism here.

such as rows and piles, whereas  $\text{PC}$  provides means to describe entities involving multiple parts remaining in a proximate distance from each other such as complex mechanical devices as well as swarms (see, e.g., Henderson 2017).

## 6.3 Summary

In this chapter, I presented a theory of parts and wholes called mereotopology. The described system involves a mereological core devised to capture the intuitive notion of parthood. This allows us to relate elements that are part of certain larger entities with those entities. However, what standard mereology cannot account for are certain relations between parts that result in different spatial configurations. This is where the topological component introduces the notion of connectedness. Based on this primitive concept more sophisticated properties can be derived. From the perspective of this study, the most prominent is the property of being a maximally strongly self-connected individual. This notion enables us to capture integrated wholes, i.e., objects that are conceptualized as coming in one piece. In the next chapter, I will demonstrate how the mereotopological framework introduced here can be used to model individuals in term of integrated wholes as well as continuous fragments of such wholes as integrated parts. Such treatment will allow us to better understand countability and to develop a novel account for subatomic quantification.



## 7 Mereotopological account for subatomic quantification

Given the mereotopological framework introduced in the previous chapter, let us now attempt to account for some of the relevant expressions employing quantification over parts such as partitives and multiplier phrases as discussed in Chapter 2, 3, and 4. The conceptual basis of the general mechanism of subatomic quantification outlined in Chapter 5 can now be spelled out formally with the notions of parthood and connectedness playing the central role in modeling the meaning of expressions that provide objects to be counted as well as of those that do the counting.

In this chapter, I will propose an analysis of different types of partitives and multiplier phrases. I will start with the general discussion of the implausibility of atomicity-based approaches to subatomic quantification. Next, I will turn to my own proposal spelled out in terms of mereotopology, supplemented with additional components such as measure functions, partitions, and the individuation operation. First, I will address the mass/count distinction by distinguishing between different types of nominals, as well as give the meaning of the plural in the spirit of Grimm (2012b). Subsequently, I will turn to defining other semantic objects I assume in the structure of different types of partitives and multiplier phrases including the meanings of different types of partitive words as well as numerical expressions, which I treat as complex constituents comprising a classifier component. Finally, I will propose a compositional analysis of the expressions in question by showing how the pieces fit together.

### 7.1 Doing without atoms

In standard theories of pluralities and countability the mass/count distinction is often formulated in terms of atomicity (e.g., Link 1983; Landman 1991; 2000; Chierchia 1998a; 2010). Though particular theories differ significantly with respect to the exact character of the alternation, the contrast between count and mass nouns usually boils down to the existence or lack of minimal building blocks in their denotation or, alternatively, to a distinct nature of those building

blocks. The approach developed here rejects the view that what counts as one is best represented as an atomic entity. Instead, I build on the mereotopological notion of *MSC* introduced in §6.2.1 to capture what can be an object of counting. There are three main motivations behind this decision. The first one is the linguistic relevance of topological relations holding between parts of a whole object as empirically attested in multiple constructions in various languages discussed in Chapters 2 and 3. The second stems from the general counting principles described in §5.2.2, which I believe constitute a deeply rooted part of human cognition and as such interact with that part of the language faculty that generates the grammar of countability. Finally, the last reason for abandoning atomicity is simply that it does not seem helpful with respect to subatomic quantification. Before we move on to the proper proposal, let us briefly consider why that is.

Things that count as one are typically defined as atomic individuals, i.e., entities that have no proper parts, see (1) for the definition of the notion *ATOM* and (2) for an optional mereological axiom of *ATOMICITY* that delivers atomic domains, i.e., domains consisting of atoms.

- (1) Atom  
 $\text{ATOM}(x) \leftrightarrow \neg\exists y[y \sqsubset x]$   
 (An atom is an entity which has no proper parts.)
- (2) Atomicity  
 $\forall x\exists y[y \sqsubseteq x \wedge \neg\exists z[z \sqsubset y]]$   
 (For any element, there is a part for which there does not exist a proper part.)

At first blush, such an approach to what it means to count as one seems counter-intuitive since we know from our everyday life experience that things we count as one very often do have multiple parts. However, one should not confuse intuitive concepts with formal notions devised to represent the semantics of natural language expressions, e.g., the meaning of the English partitive word *part* with  $\sqsubset$ . Thus, my view is that there is nothing wrong in dissociating intuitive entities from their intuitive parts in terms of mereological modeling as long as it serves a certain purpose. For instance, Champollion (2010; 2017) assumes that the relation between, say, a teddy bear named Fuzzy Wuzzy and its paw is not mereological parthood. In other words, despite the fact that Fuzzy Wuzzy consists of a number of material parts it is considered a mereological atom, i.e., an inseparable unit in the domain of entities. This might seem plausible since it corresponds to yet another intuition, namely that though we know that things have parts, we seem to ignore this fact when we count those things. However, a significant problem



for such an account arises when we decide to quantify not over whole things but over parts of those things. Thus, I will argue for two claims. First, having a notion of atomicity is not enough for a full analysis of quantification of parts. Second, atomicity is actually not needed to analyze quantification over parts since it can be reduced to topological notions which are required independently.

To illustrate this, let us consider the following case involving subatomic quantification. Assume we wanted to count parts of Fuzzy Wuzzy, e.g., its paws. Of course, natural language allows for that since we can say (3).

- (3) English (Peter Sutton, p.c.)  
Exactly two parts of Fuzzy Wuzzy are brown.

The sentence in (3) would be true if, say, Fuzzy Wuzzy's paws were brown whereas all of its other parts were of a different color. However, if referents of proper names are mereological atoms, there are no parts to be counted since the entity designated by the expression *Fuzzy Wuzzy* cannot be split. Without saying anything else, this is untenable if we want to account for (3). Consequently, one could follow Link (1983) and propose to distinguish between a domain of entities and a domain of portions of matter over which a different parthood relation would be defined, i.e., the material parthood relation  $\sqsubseteq_m$  as opposed to the individual parthood relation  $\sqsubseteq_i$ . Assuming the domains are related by a function from entities to portions of matter, one could argue that subatomic quantification is about triggering this mapping and operating on portions of matter corresponding to the mereological atom in the domain of entities. However, such a proposal raises questions. If the domain of portions of matter is atomless, which at first blush might seem intuitive, then how is it possible to count entities of such a domain? Since atomicity is a necessary condition for countability,<sup>1</sup> we need to ensure that at least some portions of matter are atomic. However, this is problematic.

Let us now imagine that for some reason we wanted to count parts of a part of an individual. Again, natural language does allow for that. The sentence in (4) is perhaps not something one would frequently say but it sounds completely natural and it is definitely interpretable.

- (4) English (Peter Sutton, p.c.)  
Exactly two parts of this part of Fuzzy Wuzzy are brown.

---

<sup>1</sup>Notice that it is not a sufficient condition due to the existence of object mass nouns which are also assumed to have atomic reference yet are uncountable (see, e.g., Chierchia 1998a; Barner & Snedeker 2005).

It would be true if, say, exactly two digits of Fuzzy Wuzzy's left paw were brown and the remaining part of the paw were not. Notice that truth-conditionally (4) is not equivalent to (3). Consider, for instance, a scenario where the brown parts of Fuzzy Wuzzy included only its head, right leg, and two digits of its left paw. In such a scenario, (4) would be true but (3) would not. Now, if countable portions of matter are atomic, then the same problem as discussed with respect to atoms in the domain of entities arises. Specifically, if a portion of matter corresponding to Fuzzy Wuzzy's left paw is modeled as having no proper parts, then how can we quantify over its parts? To account for that we would be forced to postulate another domain and relate it with the domain in which the material part corresponding to Fuzzy Wuzzy's paw is an atom. However, this seems weird and even if we did it, the same problem would arise again if we wanted to count parts of a digit of Fuzzy Wuzzy's paw. Consequently, distinguishing between just two distinct parthood relations is not enough. In fact, since there are multiple possible divisions of matter, we might end up establishing numerous or even potentially infinitely many domains in order to be able to define parts as atomic objects in a particular domain. This, of course, is far from desirable and it seems to me that the discussed example strongly suggests that sorting domains does not offer a tenable solution to the issues concerning subatomic quantification and atomicity.

Yet another argument against the two domain view can be put forward based on examples such as (5).

- (5) English (Peter Sutton, p.c.)  
 Exactly two parts of Fuzzy Wuzzy are brown: his (two) paws.

If one said that exactly two parts of Fuzzy Wuzzy are brown and this was true because of his paws, then (5) would not be straightforwardly true since the paws would be interpreted relative to a different domain than the two parts. This further suggests that a Linkean approach is not a good path to follow.

Since sorted domains proved unsatisfactory for our purpose, one might think of another idea. As discussed in §3.3, one of the very few attempts to propose a solution to the problem of countability of portions of matter (as opposed to uncountability of matter) preserving atomicity was developed in Chierchia (2010).<sup>2</sup> In this system, an expression such as English *part* is modeled as a variable over partitions of an entity, i.e., an expression of type  $\langle e, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle$  that selects an entity and returns a set of relative atoms that are 'spatio-temporally included' in that

---

<sup>2</sup>Another account worth mentioning was proposed by Landman (2016) but this theory also abandons atomicity.

entity. Since in principle such partitioning can be applied recursively, we can obtain parts of parts of entities etc. This seems to be a significant improvement compared to an attempt to account for subatomic quantification in terms of sorted domains and distinct parthood relations. However, there are still several issues with this approach.

First, as already discussed, an analysis along the lines of Chierchia's proposal fails to account for the fact that parts can be either continuous or discontinuous, and, crucially, natural language turns out to be sensitive to this distinction. Second, the notion "spatio-temporally included" introduced above is very loose. Compared to the fine-grained concepts discussed in the previous chapter, it appears to be very unsatisfactory. In general, I agree with Chierchia's "mereotopological" intuition; however, its formulation leaves a lot to be desired. For instance, imagine that Fuzzy Wuzzy was left in a car. Does it mean that for linguistic purposes it is now part of that car? Or if an elephant accidentally swallowed Fuzzy Wuzzy in a zoo only to throw it up after some time, would the poor teddy bear be considered part of that elephant in the period between swallowing and throwing up? Intuitively, that does not seem to be the case. Finally, from my point of view postulating partitions of entities is an attempt to compensate deficits of atomicity rather than a genuine development. On the one hand, it seems like circumventing the ban on having proper parts by singular individuals, which are building blocks of denotations of count nouns. On the other, though it seems to point in a desirable direction, it somewhat stops halfway. As we will see, given the potential of a mereotopological account, the vague concept of a partition of entities does not make a tenable alternative. In particular, if maintaining one unified parthood relation proved successful, then partitions of entities could be reformulated in terms of such unified  $\sqsubseteq$ , as we will see in §7.5.5. Though I will return to partitioning as a useful tool in modeling partitive words denoting continuous parts, I do not find Chierchia's proposal an overall satisfactory analysis.

I believe that at this point it is plausible to conclude that in order to account for subatomic quantification it is desirable to find a substitute for atomicity. One might think that a plausible alternative would be to adopt frameworks that model building blocks of denotations in terms of natural or object units, as proposed by Krifka (1989; 1995). At first blush, this might seem attractive because what counts as one, i.e., an entity to which we can assign the number 1, is not defined in terms of not having proper parts. Thus, in principle accounting for quantification over parts of such an object would not have to face the issues described above. Nonetheless, such an approach would run into a nagging conceptual problem.

Intuitively, it is quite straightforward what a natural unit of, say, entities that have the property of being an apple is. Alternatively, it is clear what kind of con-

cept such entities realize as object units. But what is a natural unit of a part? Or what kind of concept does a part instantiate as an object unit? Given the systems mentioned above, these notions would have to refer in some way to the denotations of partitive words. But it seems to me that this is a very strange way of thinking about parts. However, even if one accepts the existence of natural units or concepts of this sort, other questions arise. Since there are numerous ways how to divide portions of matter making up an entity, does it mean there are numerous natural units or concepts corresponding to such portions, e.g., a natural unit/concept of a tiny part, half, great part, and not-that-small-but-not-that-big part? Can both continuous and discontinuous parts be considered as natural units? Are they realizations of the same concept or two different concepts? Is there a difference between natural units or concepts corresponding to parts of a singularity and those corresponding to parts of a plurality? If yes, then how do quantificational operations know that one is to be selected over the other? If no, then how can we distinguish between the semantic subtleties that the meaning of partitive words are associated with? It feels like all of these questions are quite odd questions but they would need to be addressed seriously in order to account for the data presented in Chapter 3. Therefore, it appears to me that trading in atomicity for natural or object units does not make a satisfactory alternative with respect to subatomic quantification.

Given the problems considered above, I conclude that an approach based on mereotopology proves more advantageous for accounting for subatomic quantification. Not only does it provide means to better capture what it means to be a whole but also, as we will see, it turns out to be extremely useful in modeling those entities that can be counted. In the following sections, I will introduce a minimal set of tools necessary to model two different types of constructions concerning quantification over parts, namely multiplier phrases and partitives. I treat this repertoire of means alongside the standard principle of Function Application as the first attempt to develop a compositional analysis of the syntactic structures in question that could shed new light on the somewhat neglected phenomenon of subatomic quantification as well as on countability in general. At the same time I believe the real journey begins afterwards.

## 7.2 Common nouns

I will start my proposal with a brief discussion of the semantics for different types of concrete nouns, i.e., expressions denoting sets of individuals such as apples and teddy bears as well as scattered entities such as juice and rice. Though everything I have to say about the semantics of nouns extends naturally to NPs,

for the sake of brevity I will focus only on nouns. In general, I assume that all common nouns of the sort discussed in this study as well as nominals derived from them, e.g., by adjectival modification, are standard  $\langle e, t \rangle$  predicates, i.e., functions from entities to truth values. Among such expressions there are some that are countable and some that are not. Though countability is, of course, a grammatical category, I assume that the mass/count distinction correlates with cognitive factors determining how human beings conceptualize things in the world, as discussed in Chapter 5. In particular, I take the counting principles of non-overlap, integrity, and maximality as the benchmark for deciding what is countable and what is not. In other words, I postulate that only nouns whose referents satisfy all three criteria are countable. In the next section, I will propose how the meaning of such predicates can be captured.

### 7.2.1 Count nouns

Building on Grimm (2012b), I model the distinction between count and mass nouns in terms of mereotopological distinctions developed in the previous chapter. In particular, I propose that defining countable predicates is about ensuring that their extensions include only entities conceptualized as objects, i.e., discrete integrated wholes that are perceived as being disjoint from each other. Intuitively, the core distinction between count nouns, on the one hand, and mass nouns including substance terms, granulars, and object mass nouns, on the other, can be reduced to the fact that the former denote only individuated objects, whereas the latter either do not have integrated wholes in their extension at all, or they do but in addition they also refer to other types of entities. For instance, the noun *apple* simply denotes a set of individuals, i.e., distinct apples. On the other hand, the referents of *juice* do not have properties that integrated wholes have, i.e., they are not constrained as bounded non-overlapping discrete objects. The case of granular terms such as *rice* is somewhat more complicated. Arguably, those predicates do denote integrated wholes since one can point at a single grain of rice and truthfully call it *rice*. Intuitively, grains of rice have similar properties as apples, i.e., they are disjoint, integrated, and mereologically maximal, however *rice* does not refer exclusively to individual grains of rice. In addition, it can also denote arbitrary sums as well as clusters of rice which lack those properties. Likewise, object mass nouns such as *footwear* have both integrated wholes, i.e., individual shoes, as well as groups of such individuals, i.e., pluralities of shoes, in their extensions. Thus, though there are important differences between particular types of mass nouns, they all contrast with count nouns with respect to what kinds of entities fall into a denoted set.

Since mereotopology provides powerful means to distinguish formally between objects conceptualized as integrated wholes and other types of entities, I will use the notion of *MSSC* defined in (27) in order to capture the main intuition behind the contrast discussed above. Specifically, I will employ the variant of *MSSC* relativized to a property as provided in (28) in §6.2.1 and repeated here as (6). As discussed in §6.2.1, this allows us to distinguish between integrated objects such as individual apples and scattered entities like juice, on the one hand, and arbitrary sums such as pluralities of apples, on the other.

- (6) Maximally strongly self-connected relative to a property  

$$\text{mssc}(P)(x) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} P(x) \wedge \text{ssc}(x) \wedge \forall y[P(y) \wedge \text{ssc}(y) \wedge o(y, x) \rightarrow y \sqsubseteq x]$$
 (An *m*-individual is maximally strongly self-connected relative to a property if (i) every part of the individual is connected to (overlaps) the whole (strongly self-connected) and (ii) anything else which has the same property, is strongly self-connected, and overlaps it is once again part of it (maximality).)

Given the mereotopological notion of *MSSC*, we can now characterize the subset of predicates that refer exclusively to integrated wholes. In the following text, I use the symbol  $\text{PMSSC}$  to refer to a higher order predicate of which such predicates are true. As stated in (7), there is nothing in the denotation of a predicate satisfying  $\text{PMSSC}$  that is not an *MSSC* entity.<sup>3</sup> This means that, e.g., *apple* does satisfy  $\text{PMSSC}$ , whereas *juice*, *rice*, and *furniture* do not since either they do not refer to *MSSC* individuals at all or they also denote entities that are not *MSSC*.

- (7) Predicate of *MSSC* individuals  

$$\text{PMSSC}(P) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \forall x[P(x) \rightarrow \text{mssc}(P)(x)]$$
 (Any *m*-individual of which a predicate satisfying  $\text{PMSSC}$  is true is an *MSSC* *m*-individual relative to the relevant property.)

Let us now consider the semantics of the English count noun *apple*, as provided in (8).

- (8) Count noun  

$$\llbracket \text{apple} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{mssc}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$$

What the semantics in (8) says is that *apple* is an expression of type  $\langle e, t \rangle$  which yields the truth value True for entities that are *MSSC* with respect to the property

---

<sup>3</sup>For convenience, I use the term *MSSC* entity/individual to refer to objects that are maximally strongly-self connected relative to a relevant property.

APPLE. Given the definition in (6),  $\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)$  entails  $\text{APPLE}(x)$  which means that the discussed predicate denotes a set of apples that are integrated wholes. Therefore, the proposed semantics captures the intuition that referents of count nouns constitute discrete objects without any reference to the notion of atomicity.

Since the main topic of this study concerns subatomic quantification, I will refrain from discussing the exact semantics for different types of mass nouns. Nonetheless, the meaning of all of the expressions mentioned above can be captured in terms of mereotopological distinctions. In particular, substance terms such as *juice* can be modeled in terms of m-individuals having a certain property that are firmly connected to distinct m-individuals with the same property, formally involving the  $\text{FC}$  relation introduced in (29) (see Grimm 2012b: pp. 140–142). On the other hand, granular mass nouns such as *rice* can be accounted for by treating them as aggregates, i.e., expressions that can denote  $\text{MSSC}$  individuals, their sums as well as clusters thereof, i.e., configurations of  $\text{MSSC}$  entities transitively connected via the  $\text{TC}$  relation defined in (35) (see Grimm 2012b: pp. 142–148).<sup>4</sup> Finally, object mass nouns such as *footwear* can be thought of as denoting both  $\text{MSSC}$  entities and sums thereof though definitely more work needs to be done with respect to this category.

The mereological approach to nominal semantics allows us to distinguish countable nouns without postulating atomicity. As we will see, this will prove crucial in accounting for subatomic quantification. However, before I move to the discussion of the machinery behind measuring and counting, the issue of number morphology on nouns needs to be addressed. In the next section, I will take up the meaning of the plural.

### 7.2.2 Artifacts and functional units

Before I move on to the discussion of plurals, cardinal numerals and multipliers, and partitive words, I would like to address a class of apparent counterexamples to the proposed account. Grimm (2012b: p. 21) explicitly restricts his mereotopological approach to natural concrete entities, i.e., referents of expressions such as *cat* and *apple*. Aside from the reasons of simplicity stated by Grimm for why artifact nouns, e.g., *clock* and *pen*, are excluded from the analysis, there are also other reasons for doing this. In particular, it might seem that lots of artifacts that we count as one do not seem to be  $\text{MSSC}$  individuals. For instance, a clock is a system of connected gears, hands, a spring, and a clock face. For some clocks,

<sup>4</sup>Clusters can be further relativized to different types of connections, such as external connection, see  $\text{ET}$  in (30), and proximate connection, see  $\text{PC}$  in (37) (Grimm 2012b).

these parts may be merely touching, like interlaced cogs. Similarly, a pen can be the main part of the pen and its lid, which can merely touch. Other potential counterexamples include *chain*, which designates a string of interlinked mssc individuals, nouns such as *fence* and *wall*, which might overlap at edges, and count counterparts of object mass nouns, e.g., a pestle and mortar can count as one piece of kitchenware (see Sutton & Filip 2016a).

Admittedly, the examples provided above seem to pose a problem for the semantics of count nouns proposed in (8) and for the principle of integrity in general since, strictly speaking, they are not mssc individuals. One possible reply is that, given the cognitive view of meaning adopted in this book, see §1.2.1, what matters for grammar is how referents of artifact nouns are conceptualized rather than what objects, which we use language to talk about, exactly look like in the mind-external world. This means that there might be mismatches between mereotopological structures in the part of the human mind that is relevant for natural language semantics, on the one hand, and the internal make-up of (at least some) physical entities we use linguistic expressions to refer to, on the other.

Another possibility is to loosen the relationship between the notion of integrity and the mssc relation. In particular, it is possible that the referents of natural concrete entities exemplified by (8) are only one particular subtype of things conceived of as integrated objects. Although artifactual entities are not integrated in the sense of mssc (in the physical space), there are still other mereotopological notions that might be relevant for the way such entities are conceptualized as integrated wholes. For instance, one could model artifacts as various types of clusters, i.e., collections of parts that (typically) either touch each other or remain in close proximity, see §6.2.2. This solution would require some slight amending of the principle of integrity, and consequently the semantics of cardinal numerals and multipliers. However, it would definitely preserve the core idea and the general spirit of the approach.

Finally, I would like to suggest that it is also possible to have a unified account on which both natural entities and artifacts are modelled in terms of the mssc relation by extending mereotopology to abstract domains. Though this requires several non-standard assumptions, some of which might at first sight seem rather controversial, I believe that it is worth considering since it offers a very promising and advantageous perspective.

First of all, notice that artifacts are usually characterized by their intended function, e.g., measuring and indicating time for the clock and writing for the pen. This makes them conceptually different from natural concrete entities, which



seem to lack any functional component. Grimm & Levin (2017) argue that the semantics of an artifact noun includes an associated event, which often represents the intended function of the corresponding object. This is a very interesting idea and one could extend the framework proposed here with this kind of approach. However, there is yet another account I would like to suggest.

As already mentioned in §4.2.4, there are reasons to assume that natural language is sensitive to the distinction between individuals and roles, which are certain functions or capacities of entities. Zobel (2017) provides a number of linguistic phenomena involving, e.g., English and German *as*-phrases, which demonstrate the relevance of this distinction, and proposes to model roles as independent ontological objects of the primitive type *r* that can be also associated with individuals that perform them. Though previous research has focused on roles of human individuals, e.g., *judge* (Zobel 2017) and *clergy* (Wagiel 2021), it is conceptually conceivable that there might also be “inanimate” roles, which would represent functions or capacities of inanimate objects. For instance, consider the contrast in (9).

- (9) English (Katie Fraser, p.c.)
- a. Jenny used that thing as a pen.
  - b. #Jenny used that thing as an apple.

The sentence in (9a) is perfectly natural since it is easy to imagine that one could use various items for writing, e.g., a stick. On the other hand, (9b) is weird because apples have no intended function unless the context makes it clear that in this particular situation apples are used in a very special way, e.g., as some kind of offering in a religious ritual.<sup>5</sup>

An important result in the last four decades of the study of part-wholes structures is that mereological relations hold not only between concrete physical objects but also between abstract entities such as events (Bach 1986b), information states (Krifka 1996), times (Artstein & Francez 2003), and degrees (Dotlačil & Nouwen 2016) as well as propositions (Lahiri 2002) and functions (Schmitt 2013; 2019). Therefore, I see no a priori reason to assume that this cannot be true also for mereotopological notions. Of course, such an approach would require abstracting from the connectedness relation *c* as a relation between physical objects. Rather, it would need to be viewed as a purely abstract notion that can

---

<sup>5</sup>Of course, there are also nominals that can get coerced to an artifact meaning in a particular situation, e.g. a stone or a stick can have a function if they are used as a skipping stone or a walking stick, respectively (see also Asher 2011: pp. 256–259). Importantly, however, the function seems to stem from the human intention to use an object in a particular way rather from some intrinsic property of that object.

## 7 Mereotopological account for subatomic quantification

hold between entities of any type (similarly to the parthood relation  $\sqsubseteq$ ). The core intuition behind such an idea is that the manner in which parts of a whole are arranged can be equally relevant for any type of entity including abstract objects.

Importantly, there is evidence that mereological structures apply also in the domain of roles, see (10) (Wągiel 2021).

- (10) English (Wągiel 2021)
- a. Paul gave 4,000 euros to Tom and Amy.
  - b. Paul earns 4,000 euros as a judge and a lecturer.

It is well known that conjunction in examples such as (10a) gives rise to the distributive and the non-distributive reading. Specifically, the sentence can either mean that Tom and Amy got 4,000 euros each or that they got 4,000 euros between them. Interestingly, (10b) displays the same type of ambiguity. On the distributive interpretation, Paul earns 4,000 euros working as a judge and 4,000 euros working as a lecturer, i.e., 8,000 euros in total. In addition, the sentence has the non-distributive reading on which Paul earns a total of 4,000 euros for both of those two professional roles.

The existence of mereological structures in the domain of roles opens up the possibility for a topological extension. For the sake of presentation, let us assume that both individuals and roles are conceptualized as occupying positions within regions of space, the former as concrete things located in physical space whereas the latter as abstract entities inhabiting abstract functional space. We could then postulate connected roles if, e.g., two roles involved overlap. Such an extension of the model would allow for developing more complex mereotopological notions including *mssc*. As a result, an artifact could be modelled as an *mssc* inanimate role, i.e., abstract integrated functional unit, that can be in turn mapped onto entities that perform that function. This would allow us to talk about functional integrity as a notion that is at the same time independent and closely related to physical integrity.

Since the main focus of this book concerns subatomic quantification, I will not pursue a detailed implementation of the idea of functional integrity here, but instead leave it for future research.<sup>6</sup> Nonetheless, I conclude that, given the analytical possibilities discussed above, the proposed approach can be extended to account also for potentially problematic artifact nouns without sacrificing its core components.

---

<sup>6</sup>But see Wągiel (2021) for a mereotopological attempt to model social collective nouns as properties of clusters of roles.

### 7.2.3 Pluralization

Following Grimm (2012b), I assume that number morphology is sensitive to the mereotopological structure of referents of the basic, i.e., unmarked, form of a noun.<sup>7</sup> Specifically, as we saw in the previous section in a language such as English only a subset of nouns can be characterized as denoting single objects conceptualized as MSSC individuals. For the purpose of this study, I assume that in general this property corresponds to countability and thus the compatibility of such nouns with the plural morpheme.<sup>8</sup> In particular, the plural marker attaches only to predicates that have exclusively MSSC entities in their extensions.<sup>9</sup>

Keeping this in mind, the plural can be analyzed as an operation which selects a set of MSSC individuals and applies the strict pluralization operation, see (11)–(13).

- (11) Algebraic closure (see Link 1983)  
 $*P \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \{x | \exists P' \subseteq P [x = \sqcup P']\}$
- (12) Strict pluralization  
 $+P \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} *P - P$
- (13) Plural  
 $\llbracket \text{PL} \rrbracket = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P)[+P]$

The semantics in (13) involves the  $+$  operator whose definition is provided in (12). As one can see,  $+$  employs the classical  $*$  operator introduced by Link (1983), which is defined as a closure under sum formation, see (11). Specifically, what  $+$  does is that it selects a predicate, applies  $*$  to it and then removes all the MSSC individuals from the pluralized set. The selectional requirement of the plural marker is introduced by what I refer to as the INDIVIDUATION PRESUPPOSITION represented by  $\text{PMSSC}(P)$  introduced after a colon following immediately the relevant

<sup>7</sup>Alternatively, one could argue that this kind of information is already encoded in the semantics of the stem (pace, e.g., Pelletier & Schubert 1989; Borer 2005a). However, for the sake of brevity I will not explore this hypothesis here.

<sup>8</sup>This is, of course, a simplification. As mentioned before, for the sake of simplicity I ignore here collective nouns as well as count abstract nouns. However, I assume that in principle it is possible to extend the core mereotopological concepts to develop a framework based on notions derived from or inspired by MSSC that would account for phrases such as *two ideas* and *three committees* (see also Grimm 2014).

<sup>9</sup>Without any additional assumptions, this approach fails to account for inherently plural mass nouns such as *leftovers* (Acquaviva 2008) as well as pluralized mass nouns as observed, e.g., in Greek (Tsoulas 2009). However, since the general topic of the meaning of the plural lies beyond the scope of this study, I leave it for future research.

$\lambda$ .<sup>10</sup> The individuation presupposition requires an argument of the  $\lambda$  operator to be a predicate denoting only MSSC individuals as defined in (7).

As indicated by (13), I adopt here the so-called exclusive analysis of the plural. Within this view, plurals are assumed to refer only within the domain of sums, i.e., singularities are excluded from the denotation, and thus the plural is treated as designating *more than one* (cf. Hoeksema 1983; Chierchia 1998a,b; Grimm 2013; see also Wągiel 2017).<sup>11</sup> Hence, what the plural does is that it selects a set including only MSSC individuals and yields a new set consisting of all the sums formed by joining the members of the input set. For instance, let us consider the semantics of the bare plural *apples*, see (14).

$$(14) \quad \text{Plural NP} \\ \llbracket \text{apples} \rrbracket = \llbracket \text{PL} \rrbracket(\llbracket \text{apple} \rrbracket) = \lambda x \left[ {}^+ (\lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y))] (x) \right]$$

In this case, the plural morpheme *-s* combines successfully with the noun since the individuation presupposition is satisfied, i.e., *apple* is a predicate of MSSC entities. As a result, the set denoted by *apple* is first closed under sum and then all the MSSC individuals are removed. Hence, we obtain a new predicate which is true only of entities that are pluralities of apples.

To see how this works, consider the following example. Let us assume a model with three individual apples *a*, *b*, and *c*. Given such a model, the common noun *apple* denotes the set of singular apples as in (15a). On the other hand, its plural counterpart *apples* in (15b) denotes the set comprising all the sums obtained from the singular individuals, i.e., pluralities of apples. In both cases, the semantic type of the expression in question is  $\langle e, t \rangle$ .

$$(15) \quad \text{Plural NP} \\ \text{a. } \llbracket \text{apple} \rrbracket = \{a, b, c\} \\ \text{b. } \llbracket \text{apples} \rrbracket = \{a \sqcup b, a \sqcup c, b \sqcup c, a \sqcup b \sqcup c\}$$

An important advantage of such treatment of the plural is that it explains why the plural marker does not occur on mass nouns without triggering any additional

<sup>10</sup>For notational conventions used in this book see §1.3.2.

<sup>11</sup>This decision is mainly motivated by independent reasons and as far as I can see for the most part nothing hinges on this from the perspective of the phenomena I attempt to account for here. However, the exclusive analysis will prove advantageous in the context of set partitives. Notice also that many arguments have been proposed in favor of the inclusive view on which singularities are included in the meaning of the plural mainly based on the data concerning downward-entailing environments (see, e.g., Link 1983; Schwarzschild 1991; Landman 2000; Sauerland et al. 2005; Spector 2007; Zweig 2009). However, see Grimm (2013) for an analysis of such contexts maintaining the exclusive view.

semantic effect such as a portion interpretation. Or, alternatively, it is not the plural marking that triggers that effect but rather, the application of the Universal Packager is a prerequisite for the plural morpheme to be able to attach to a mass noun.<sup>12</sup> Since packaging restricts the extension of a mass term in such a way that the resulting portion has properties similar to integrated objects, it is plausible to postulate that it does so by applying an MSSC constraint or at least some related restriction. In any case, non-coerced mass nouns fail to satisfy the individuation presupposition simply because either they do not refer to MSSC individuals at all as in the case of substance terms, or though their denotations include MSSC individuals, they also include other entities such as sums (object mass nouns) and clusters (granulars).

Apart from the individuation presupposition, the approach to the meaning of the plural provided here is essentially one of the two standard analyses. However, there is an important comment to be made concerning the morpho-syntax/semantics interface. Namely, I assume that not all morphological plurals get the interpretation in (13). Leaving aside pluralia tantum which would require much unrelated consideration, I posit that only bare plurals are semantic plurals, i.e., expressions on which the plural marker is interpreted. To foreshadow, I will claim that plural morphology in quantificational constructions such as numeral phrases in languages such as English makes by contrast no semantic contribution and is merely triggered syntactically by agreement (see, e.g., Krifka 1989; 2007; Ionin & Matushansky 2004; Deal 2017).

#### 7.2.4 Consequences

Adopting the mereological account for nominal semantics has some interesting consequences. First, as we saw in §7.2.1 the notion of MSSC allows us to model individuals denoted by singular count nouns without reference to atomicity. Therefore, there is no need to postulate a special category of entities that have no proper parts. To the contrary, unlike atoms MSSC objects are viewed as certain configurations of parts, specifically configurations forming integrated wholes. This is a radically different approach from purely mereological theories. In my opinion, its great advantage is that it succeeds in capturing two ontological intuitions concerning individuals at the same time. As we saw in Chapter 5, there are good reasons to believe that cognitive structures underlying conceptualization of

---

<sup>12</sup>I refrain here, from the discussion of the role of the Universal Sorter since it is unclear whether kind-level entities can be considered subject to topological relations. Potentially, subkind readings constitute a problem for the described approach. For sure, more research is required on this topic.

solid objects differ from those corresponding to scattered entities. On the other hand, human beings are able to perceive wholes simultaneously as discrete units and as configurations of parts. Unlike atomicity-based theories, a mereotopological account enables us to model natural language expressions in such a way that the former cognitive aspect can be captured without sacrificing the latter. From my point of view, this is an important advantage.

The second favorable consequence of mereotopology is that it provides a very simple and intuitive way to distinguish between integrated sums of parts, i.e., singular individuals, and arbitrary sums, i.e., plural entities. The distinction simply boils down to whether topological notions are involved in the part-whole structure of an entity or not. As *MSSC* individuals, referents of singular count nouns consist of connected elements, whereas pluralities encode no topological relations holding between their parts. Intuitively, the sum of two apples *a* and *b* remains the same entity  $a \sqcup b$  irrespective of whether *a* and *b* touch each other, stay in proximity, or are situated in distant locations. On the other hand, *a* would cease to exist if its halves were separated from each other by some contextually significant distance.<sup>13</sup> In other words, while plural entities can be modeled in purely mereological terms, singular individuals require an additional topological layer. It seems that such a distinction accounts for the intuition that, contrary to what standard mereology posits, singularities and pluralities are very different types of creatures. However, this approach does not exclude yet another ontological possibility, namely the existence of sums of solid entities that are topologically arranged in a particular way. This fact is of considerable significance since there is linguistic evidence indicating that introducing such type of entities might be necessary for the meaning of certain expressions in natural language. As we saw in §2.3, referents of Italian irregular plurals make a good candidate for such a class.<sup>14</sup>

There is another welcome result. The theory adopted here allows for distinguishing between different types of entities in terms of the distinction between mereotopological and purely mereological configurations. This fact in turn enables us to reduce the number of domains. In particular, there is no need to distinguish between the domain of entities and the domain of portions of matter as postulated by Link (1983). Since referents of count nouns are not considered mere-

---

<sup>13</sup>Often, when parts remain in proximity it is still possible to retrieve the original part-whole structure from the context. Though the constraints on such a ‘reconstruction’ operation are potentially an interesting topic in cognitive science, I refrain here from any speculations on this issue and focus only on clear cases.

<sup>14</sup>Another kind of expressions that are arguably of this sort are certain types of Slavic derived collectives (see Dočekal & Ważiel 2018a; Grimm & Dočekal 2021).

ological atoms, i.e., entities without proper parts, but rather mereotopologically constrained sums of parts they have additional properties compared to arbitrary collections of portions of matter. Those properties are formulated in terms of connection, specifically *MSSC*. Therefore, it is sufficient to assume only one domain of concrete things, namely the domain of entities, and different types of objects populating this domain can be distinguished in terms of different types of either mereological or mereotopological part-whole structures.

I believe that at this point it is useful to readdress the classical paradox in (16) which led Link to distinguish between the domain of entities and the domain of portions of matter.

- (16) English (Link 1983: adapted)
- a. This is a gold ring.
  - b. The ring is new but the gold is old.

Assume that (16a) points at a ring which was recently forged from some old Egyptian gold. If the ring is nothing more than a sum of portions of gold, it is surprising that (16b) is not contradictory. To the contrary, in the described scenario it is true. In other words, the problem concerns the fact that an object appears to have different properties than the sum of its parts, but in mereological terms the two are identical (see also Rothstein 2010; 2017 for discussion).

Mereotopology offers a new explanation for the paradox. What is crucial here is that the ring is not just the sum of portions of gold it is made of. Rather, to be perceived as a ring entity needs to remain in a particular spatial configuration, i.e., its parts need to be related by a topological relation. Therefore, the reason why (16b) is not contradictory is that it says that while the parts are old, the configuration is new. For instance, this intuition could be captured by attributing different topological properties to the definite descriptions *the ring* and *the gold*. As a result, even if the extensions of these two expressions involved absolute material overlap, e.g., imagine that at a certain point in time the ring consisted of all of the gold, the two entities could still be differentiated since only the referent of *the ring* would be conceptualized as an integrated whole.<sup>15</sup>

To sum up, the view developed here offers a radically different perspective on nominal semantics compared to standard approaches which utilize the notion of atomicity. Given the above discussion, I conclude that it turns out to be advantageous both from the conceptual and practical point of view because it better captures intuitions concerning the nature of individuals as well as allows for simpler models with less domains. Soon we will see that since it is free from

---

<sup>15</sup>Of course, it would be a topic for another study to work out what these properties are.

the deficits of atomicity-based approaches discussed in §7.1, it also proves significantly favorable in modeling subatomic quantification. In the following section, I will make a first step towards developing an analysis along those lines. In particular, I will introduce the theoretical background for a unified analysis of numerical expressions.

### 7.3 Measure functions

Following Krifka (1989; 1995), I model quantification over both parts and wholes in numeral and measure constructions in terms of extensive measure functions, i.e., operations that directly relate entities to numbers. The core mechanics behind a measure function is that when applied to a plurality of individuals or quantity of substance it maps it onto a real number corresponding to the number of individuals or units making up the plurality or quantity in question. Such operations need to satisfy what we expect from counting, i.e., they need to be additive. The definition in (17) ensures that no entity will be counted twice.

- (17) Additive measure function  
 $\mu$  is an additive measure function iff it satisfies the following requirement  
 $\forall x \forall y [\neg \circ(x, y) \rightarrow [\mu(x \sqcup y) = \mu(x) + \mu(y)]]$   
 (The measure of a sum consisting of non-overlapping parts equals the arithmetic sum of the measures of parts.)

Assuming supplementation for the join operation as defined in (6) in §6.1 and repeated here in (18) alongside the Archimedean property of measure functions, see (19), it can be demonstrated that an additive Archimedean measure function is monotonic, see (20) (see Schwarzschild 2002).

- (18) Supplementation  
 $\forall x \forall y [x \sqsubset y \rightarrow \exists z [z \sqsubseteq y \wedge \neg \circ(z, x)]]$   
 (Whenever a thing has a proper part, it has more than one.)
- (19) Archimedean property  
 $\forall x \forall y [\mu(x) > 0 \wedge y \sqsubseteq x \rightarrow \mu(y) > 0]$   
 (If a measure of a thing is greater than zero, then a measure of its part is also greater than zero.)
- (20) Monotonicity  
 $\forall x \forall y [x \sqsubset y \rightarrow \mu(x) < \mu(y)]$   
 (A measure of a whole is greater than a measure of its proper part.)



Examples of extensive additive measure functions include LITER, METER, and CALORIE, whereas measure functions such as DEGREE-CELSIUS and CARAT are non-additive.<sup>16</sup> For instance, for an entity  $x$  the measure function LITER yields a number of liters corresponding to the volume of that entity. In other words, it measures the quantity of space occupied by its argument in units of liters. Analogously, METER and CALORIE return the number of meters and calories of a particular entity, respectively.

### 7.3.1 Counting operation

With this machinery in place, we can now start developing an account for counting. Let us begin with an operation to which I will refer as  $\mu_{\#}$ . Its formal definition is provided in (21).<sup>17</sup>

- (21) Measure function  $\mu_{\#}$   
 $\mu_{\#}$  is an additive measure function standardized by the following requirement  
 $\forall x[\mu_{\#}(x) = 1 \text{ iff MSSC}(x)]$

In §5.2.2, I demonstrated that counting and measuring differ in that the former is topology-sensitive, whereas the latter is not. Despite this fact, for convenience I will talk about measure functions when referring to both operations yielding a cardinality of objects as well as operations giving a measure in terms of, e.g., volume. Given the definitions introduced above, the counting operation  $\mu_{\#}$  defined in (21) is a kind of measure function. Nevertheless, it is crucial to emphasize that it is a special kind of measure function. Similarly to other additive measure functions, it cares about non-overlap, but in addition it is also sensitive to the mereotopological structure of the entities that it applies to. In particular, as specified in (21) it assigns the value 1 exclusively to MSSC individuals.<sup>18</sup> This fact makes it distinctively different from measure functions such as LITER which ignore whether their arguments refer to integrated entities that come in one piece.

To see the measure function  $\mu_{\#}$  at work, let us consider the example provided in (22). Assume that there are two distinct MSSC individuals  $a$  and  $b$ , i.e.,  $a \neq b$ . In

<sup>16</sup>This distinction corresponds to the monotonicity/non-monotonicity distinction in Schwarzschild (2002). In the following part of the chapter, I will focus only on additive/monotonic measure functions.

<sup>17</sup>The symbol # in the subscript indicates quantification in terms of number of elements.

<sup>18</sup>In the original theory of Krifka (1989) the equivalent of  $\mu_{\#}$  measures in terms of natural units, hence the NU operation. On the other hand, Krifka (1995) introduces the OU and KU operations (for ‘object unit’ and ‘kind unit’, respectively), whereas in newer versions of the theory (e.g., Krifka 2007) the AC measure function (for ‘atomic count’) is defined to count atoms.

## 7 Mereotopological account for subatomic quantification

such a case, after we apply  $\mu_{\#}$  to the sum of  $a$  and  $b$ , the returned value will be 2 which of course is a correct result.

- (22) Counting via  $\mu_{\#}$   
 $\text{MSSC}(a) \wedge \text{MSSC}(b) \wedge \neg \text{O}(a, b) \rightarrow \mu_{\#}(a \sqcup b) = 2$   
(If both  $a$  and  $b$  are MSSC and they do not overlap, i.e., they are not identical, then the measure function  $\mu_{\#}$  applied to the sum of  $a$  and  $b$  yields the number 2.)

The measure function  $\mu_{\#}$  seems to do what we would expect an operation intended to capture the core intuitions concerning counting to do. However, there is yet another improvement to be implemented. As we discussed in §6.2.1, it is desirable to relativize MSSC to a particular property in order to avoid ending up with the single integrated whole corresponding to the entire material universe. Therefore, a proper device intended to account for counting should also be relativized to a property so that it does not count absolutely MSSC entities but rather objects that are MSSC with respect to a particular characteristic, e.g., apples. This can be ensured by introducing a new operation to which I will refer as  $\#$ . As can be seen in the definition in (23), it is similar to  $\mu_{\#}$  in that the notion of MSSC plays a crucial role here.

- (23) Measure function  $\#(P)$   
 $\#(P)$  is an additive measure function standardized by the following requirement  
 $\forall P \forall x [\#(P)(x) = 1 \text{ iff } \text{MSSC}(P)(x)]$

Importantly,  $\#$  differs from  $\mu_{\#}$  in that it takes a property  $P$  and yields a measure function that returns a number of MSSC individuals relative to  $P$ . For instance, assume there are two distinct apples  $a$  and  $b$ . Then,  $\#$  can yield a measure function that will count entities that are MSSC with respect to the property of being an apple. As a result, we obtain the number 2.

Before we move on to introducing another measure function that will prove useful for modeling multiplier phrases, let us discuss the mechanism of contextual conditioning which will allow us to account for proportional partitive words.

### 7.3.2 Contextual conditioning

The evidence presented in Chapter 2 shows that cross-linguistically partitive words can appear both in entity and mass partitives, on the one hand, and set partitives, on the other. In general, in the first two cases the partitive word quantifies

over portions of matter constituting either a particular individual or a quantity of substance, whereas in the third situation it quantifies over integrated wholes making up a plurality. To account for this double compatibility a procedure is required which will determine what is to be measured or counted when. For this purpose, I build on Bale & Barner's (2009) proposal that assumes a generalized context-dependent measure function  $\mu$ . Such an approach posits a mechanism of contextual conditioning along the lines defined in (24). The core of the idea is that particular measure functions are ordered and depending on a context those that are ranked higher in the series are favored over those that are ranked lower.

- (24) Contextual conditioning (Bale & Barner 2009: p. 245; adapted)  
 $\mu$  is interpreted as one of the measure functions  $m_z$  in the series  $\langle m_1, m_2, m_3 \dots m_n \rangle$  such that the argument for  $\mu$  is in the range of  $m_z$ ; furthermore, contextually  $m_z$  is preferred to  $m_y$  if  $z < y$

Bale & Barner use the mechanism in (24) to account for various meanings of *more* observed in comparative constructions such as *X has more NP than Y*. Specifically, depending on the NP comparison may be specified in terms of cardinality, volume, intensity etc. For the purpose of this study, I will make use of the very same mechanism for a procedure determining that partitive words can quantify over portions of matter in entity and mass partitives and over individuals in set partitives. In particular, I propose a partial ordering of measure functions, as provided in (25).

- (25) Partial ordering of measure functions  
 $m_1 = \#(P) < m_n \in \text{VOLUME}$   
 where VOLUME is a set of measure functions measuring entities in terms of volume including  $\text{M}^3$ , LITER, PINT etc.

The first measure function in the series, i.e., the one ranked highest, is the measure function  $\#(P)$  which is devised to count integrated wholes. I remain agnostic with respect to the exact position in the ranking other measure functions occupy, but for our purposes establishing the ordering between  $\#(P)$  and measure functions measuring in terms of volume is certainly sufficient.

To anticipate, the contextually conditioned generalized measure function  $\mu$  can cover the meanings of partitive words in entity and mass partitives, on the one hand, and set partitives, on the other. In particular,  $\mu$  is interpreted as a measure function quantifying over units of volume when the partitive word combines with a DP involving a singular count noun which refers to an individual as well as with a DP with a mass term referring to a quantity of substance. On

the other hand, when the partitive word combines with a DP comprising a regular plural noun,  $\mu$  is interpreted an operation counting individuated integrated wholes. This is because whenever the context allows for it,  $\#(P)$  is preferred over the functions from the set VOLUME, e.g.,  $\text{CM}^3$ . An additional positive consequence of the adopted mechanism of contextual conditioning is that it allows for quantification over individuals in partitives with object mass nouns in the embedded DP (see Barner & Snedeker 2005; Bale & Barner 2009).

### 7.3.3 Counting essential parts

The final component of the analysis related to measure functions has to do with modeling multipliers. As we saw in Chapter 4, multipliers quantify over cognitively salient parts of individuals. In order to capture this intuition, I propose an additional measure function for which I will use the  $\boxplus$  symbol.<sup>19</sup> This operation takes a property and yields an additive measure function  $\boxplus(P)$  which counts essential parts of a whole. The formal definition of  $\boxplus(P)$  is provided in (26).

$$(26) \quad \text{Measure function } \boxplus(P) \\ \forall P \forall x [\text{MSSC}(P)(x) \rightarrow \boxplus(P)(x) = \#(\lambda y [y \sqsubseteq x \wedge \text{ESSENTIAL}(P)(y)])]$$

Notice that the  $\boxplus(P)$  measure function quantifies only over parts of MSSC individuals as ensured by the antecedent in the requirement. Furthermore, the consequent imposes that  $\boxplus(P)$  employs  $\#$  in order to count the number of parts of  $x$  that are essential for an ascription of  $P$  to some entity. Then, since there are no other  $P$  objects overlapping with  $x$ , these must be parts that are essential for  $P$  to hold of  $x$ . The parthood relation captures the intuition that only entities within the part-whole structure of an object are subject to quantification and the use of improper parthood, i.e.,  $\sqsubseteq$ , rather than  $\sqsubset$  is to account for cases of homogeneous entities without any distinguishable salient parts such as individuated portions of coffee or martini. In particular, one might want to talk about a single portion as opposed to a double portion rather than to unrelated two portions, since there is a clear semantic contrast between *single coffee*  $\sim$  *double coffee*  $\sim$  *two coffees*.<sup>20</sup>

As witnessed by comparing (23) and (26), the main difference between  $\#(P)$  and  $\boxplus(P)$  lies in what type of objects they map onto numbers. The former simply

<sup>19</sup>There is a mnemonic here. The  $\boxplus$  symbol is a square constituted by four smaller squares each of which is a part of the whole with comparable properties. Hence,  $\boxplus$  represents a type of object multiplier phrases usually refer to.

<sup>20</sup>It is possible that (26) is too strong to account for examples like *double coffee* since it requires conceptualizing the referents of such expressions as MSSC individuals. However, I will leave this issue for future research.

associates any MSSC object with a number, whereas the latter counts only what I refer to as an essential part of an entity, i.e., a cognitively salient element. The notion ESSENTIAL in (26) is relativized to a property and can be defined as in (27).

(27) Essential parts

ESSENTIAL( $P$ ) is true of an MSSC part of an entity in the extension of  $P$  that is essential for that entity to be considered as having a property  $P$

I keep the definition in (27) somewhat vague on purpose since what is considered essential for an entity to be perceived as having a certain property is often not entirely clear and may differ with respect to a particular context. For instance, as we discussed in Chapter 4 multiplier phrases such as *double garage* can denote objects of a different internal structure as long as they can hold two vehicles. Nevertheless, one important feature of an essential part is that it is an integrated and recognizable entity within a whole that can be easily individuated against other parts.

An example of an essential part would be a patty in a hamburger. Intuitively, it makes the most important element of the whole sandwich. Out of the blue, it seems that the crucial part of a bed is an area covered with a mattress on which a person can sleep. Finally, in a natural context the most salient piece of, say, a shotgun is its barrel since it guarantees functionality as well as constitutes a significant portion of the weapon. However, notice that the broad definition in (27) also covers self-sufficient parts, i.e., parts that have a property comparable, i.e., very similar or identical, to the property of a whole. I argue that a self-sufficient part can be considered an extreme case of an essential part. If for some reason it is considered that what is essential cannot be reduced to one particular element, then ESSENTIAL( $P$ ) yields an MSSC part that resembles the object it is a part of. For instance, let us once again consider the case of *double crown* discussed in Chapter 4. Although there can be multiple cognitively salient parts within the make-up of a crown, e.g., jewels, orbs, crosses, or *fleurs-de-lis*, intuitively no such element is essential for a thing to be considered a crown. On the other hand, an object such as the Pschent or papal tiara counts as a double or triple crown, respectively, because it comprises parts with comparable properties as the whole. Similar cases arguably involve objects such as doors and layers, thus a double door involves two connected door leaves and a double layer is an entity consisting of two merged layers. For the reasons discussed above, I leave the issue concerning when an essential part is a self-sufficient part vague and dependent on how a particular artifact is conceptualized.

All things considered, given (26) and (27) the  $\boxplus(P)$  measure function returns a number of essential parts in each object being a member of a given set. The

properties of such a device might help us to account for the interpretation of multiplier phrases. With the set-up and all the relevant ingredients necessary to account for the numerical expressions I am interested here in place, let us now propose the semantics for cardinals and multipliers that will allow us to account for the observed phenomena in count explicit and proportional partitives as well as in multiplier phrases.

## 7.4 Numerical expressions

In the history of formal semantics spanning over almost half a century there were not that many expressions that received as much attention as numerals. Though a lot of revealing research has been done in this field (see, e.g., Horn 1972; Barwise & Cooper 1981; Scha 1981; Krifka 1999; Landman 2003; 2004; Hofweber 2005; Ionin & Matushansky 2006; Geurts 2006; Nouwen 2010; Kennedy 2013; Rothstein 2013; 2017 to name just a few influential studies), in my opinion there is a shared misconception concerning numerals since they are commonly treated as simplex, i.e., non-decomposable, expressions.<sup>21</sup> On the other hand, it has been observed that in a language such as English cardinals have multiple uses and therefore it is misleading to search for “the” meaning of numerals but rather it is more appropriate to talk about multiple meanings associated with such expressions (e.g., Bultinck 2005; Geurts 2006). The interplay of these two aspects results in treating cardinal numerals either as ambiguous or postulating some shifting mechanism to account for at least some of the uses. However, I believe there are good reasons to claim that the assumption that numerals are simplex is incorrect.

In my opinion, the prevailing view most probably stems from the limited scope of the mainstream research on numerals. In particular, most work on numerical quantification has been done on the basis of English data and since English lacks a rich morphology, certain semantic distinctions are not marked by means of different formal exponents. However, even in English there are complex numerals such as *twice*, *twofold*, *twosome*, and adjectival *two-time*, but this set of expressions for the most part has been surprisingly neglected in the study of numerical quantification. On the other hand, evidence from languages that have a broader repertoire of derivational means suggests that numerals are in fact compositional. For instance, recent research on cardinals as well as derivationally more complex numerical expressions in Slavic and Semitic indicates that different numerical affixes correspond to distinct semantic operations responsible for

---

<sup>21</sup>A notable exception is the theory of Kennedy (2013) who proposes that numerals are generalized quantifiers over degrees and discusses their possible semantic decomposition.

deriving various meanings (see, e.g., Dočekal 2012; 2013; Dočekal & Wągiel 2018b for Czech, Wągiel 2014; 2015b; to appear for Polish, Khrizman 2020 for Russian and Fassi Fehri 2016; 2018 for Arabic).

In the following sections, I posit a compositional account for numerical expressions in natural language. I assume that a prerequisite for such an approach is that it accounts for the three counting principles discussed in §5.2.2. In particular, it needs to be guaranteed that the numerical expression ignores overlapping, non-integrated, and non-maximal entities. In other words, it needs to be devised in such a way that it counts right.

#### 7.4.1 Numeral roots

Many numerical expressions in numerous languages are morphologically complex and can be sequenced into separate morphemes including numeral roots and various additional affixes. In this study, I follow my previous work in arguing that it is plausible to treat numeral roots as names of natural numbers, i.e., expressions referring to abstract objects of type  $n$ , see (28a) (Wągiel 2015b; 2020a,b; to appear). For instance, the English root  $\sqrt{tw}$  as in, e.g., *two* and *twenty*, simply names the integer 2, as specified in (28b).

- (28) Numeral root
- a.  $\llbracket \sqrt{\text{Numeral}} \rrbracket = n$
  - b.  $\llbracket \sqrt{tw} \rrbracket = 2$

Furthermore, I assume that virtually all meanings numerical expressions can have can be derived from this basic semantics by application of additional operations encoded by different types of classifiers. Those classifiers can be either introduced overtly by a particular morpheme or silent. For the sake of coherence and in order to stay as close to the main argument as possible, in the following sections I will focus on derivations of only two kinds of numerical expressions, namely cardinals and multipliers.<sup>22</sup>

#### 7.4.2 Cardinals

I propose that cardinals are born as singular terms, specifically as names of numbers at type  $n$ . This meaning is preserved in contexts clearly calling for numerical arguments such as the mathematical statements in (29) (see Rothstein 2017 for

<sup>22</sup>For some preliminary proposals of how to treat compositionally other complex numerical expressions in Slavic, see Wągiel (2015b; 2020a,b).

extensive discussion of such environments). However, the singular term semantics can also serve as a basis to derive expressions that are more abstract than number-denoting.

- (29) English (Rothstein 2013)
- a. Two plus two is four.
  - b. Two is the only even prime number.

Since this study concerns subatomic quantification, in the following part of this section I will restrict my proposal to the use of numerals as nominal modifiers. In particular, I posit that in attributive position the meaning associated with the numeral root is shifted to an expression of type  $\langle\langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle\rangle$ , i.e., the type of a predicate modifier (see Ionin & Matushansky 2006). I postulate that this shift is performed by a classifier element which I will refer to as  $CL_{\#}$  (see also Sudo 2016 for a similar proposal based on Japanese data). As suggested by the abbreviation and provided in (30),  $CL_{\#}$  is an expression of type  $\langle n, \langle\langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle\rangle\rangle$ , i.e., a function from numbers to predicate modifiers, that introduces the  $\#$  operation.

- (30) Classifier $_{\#}$
- $$\llbracket CL_{\#} \rrbracket = \lambda n \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [ *P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = n ]$$

Notice, however, that triggering  $\#$  is not the only thing  $CL_{\#}$  does. In order to ensure that counting goes right, the classifier imposes a particular constraint on predicates it can select, specifically via the individuation presupposition it selects only predicates that denote exclusively MSSC individuals. Consequently, the resulting cardinal will not be compatible with mass nouns or pluralia tantum since they do not fulfill this requirement. Notice also that a predicate  $P$  in the first conjunct is pluralized by the classical  $*$  operator. Such a semantics guarantees that an integer  $n$  will be associated with the number of MSSC individuals making up a plurality in the extension of  $P$ , see (21)–(23). The use of  $*$  rather than the strict pluralization operator  $^+$  postulated for semantic plurals, see (12), is motivated by the existence of the numeral *one* which requires singularities.

Given the semantics of  $CL_{\#}$  proposed above, it is straightforward how particular cardinals are derived. When the classifier combines with a numeral root, e.g.,  $\sqrt{tw}$ , the number variable in (30) is saturated by a particular integer and this gives rise to a full-fledged attributive numeral as exemplified in (31).

- (31) Cardinal numeral
- $$\llbracket \text{two} \rrbracket = \llbracket CL_{\#} \rrbracket (\llbracket \sqrt{tw} \rrbracket) = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [ *P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = 2 ]$$



Given the formula above, *two* in a phrase such as *two apples* takes a property of being an apple and yields a set of pairs of objects that are MSSC with respect to that property, i.e., a set of pairs of apples. Admittedly, the way it is ensured in (31) that cardinals do not combine with mass terms is by stipulating the individuation presupposition  $\text{PMSSC}(P)$ . Notice, however, that in Chapter 5 I argued extensively that a requirement like this stems from the general counting principles, which in turn arguably result from the way human cognition works. Therefore, the proposed denotation of cardinals seems to relate to more general facts regarding human mind, which I believe provides a valuable perspective.

In general, I take (31) to be a welcome result. However, an important comment is required. For the semantics in (31) to work, one needs to assume that the morphological plural on the noun that the cardinal modifies is not interpreted semantically since otherwise the pluralized property would fail to satisfy the individuation presupposition. In other words, the source of plurality is the \* operator introduced by  $\text{CL}_\#$ , whereas the number marker on the noun is a mere agreement plural triggered syntactically with no semantic contribution (see Krifka 1989; Ionin & Matushansky 2006). At first sight this might seem implausible, but there are well-documented cases of mismatches between the plural as a morpho-syntactic category and the semantic notion of plurality, as in (32) (see Nouwen 2016 for an overview). Furthermore, there are examples of languages such as Finnish, Hungarian, and Turkish that despite having plural morphology do not employ it in numeral phrases or employ it only with numerals higher than ‘four’, as in Russian and BCS.<sup>23</sup>

(32) English (Krifka 1989; adapted)

- a. zero {cows/\*cow}
- b. 1.0 {cows/\*cow}

However, it is important to emphasize that if it turned out that the assumption that cardinals combine with semantically singular nouns is untenable, this would not be a serious problem for the proposed account. An alternative would be to rework the semantics of  $\text{CL}_\#$  in (30) on the assumption of defining a function

<sup>23</sup>I simplify here for the sake of brevity since, e.g., Turkish was argued to have semantically number-neural singular count nouns (e.g., Görgülü 2012). For a general discussion on different strategies languages use to combine cardinals with nouns and a proposal of an alternative approach see Bale et al. (2011). One thing that should be mentioned as a potential problem for the proposed approach concerns collective modification below the numeral, e.g., *two parallel streets* and *two similar objects* (though see Ionin & Matushansky 2018 for a proposed solution). However, since this study does not focus on such expressions, I leave this issue for future research.

that applies to sets of pluralities and returns the set of mssc individuals relative to that set, which would be the mereotopological equivalent of Chierchia's (2010) approach. Without going into details, let us call such an operation OBJ. Applying it would give us an alternative denotation of  $CL_{\#}$ , as provided in (33), and consequently, no need for the number vacuousness assumption in numeral phrases.<sup>24</sup>

- (33) Classifier<sub>#</sub> (alternative)  
 $\llbracket CL_{\#} \rrbracket = \lambda n \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [P(x) \wedge \#(\text{OBJ}(P))(x) = n]$

The treatment postulated in (31) builds on a well-established way of thinking about cardinals since the idea that numerals are in fact names of numbers dates back to Frege (1884). An early formal semantic account for cardinals proposed by Scha (1981) assumes a complex syntactic structure for numerical determiners decomposing them into the bottom-most Number projection which is interpreted in terms of reference to an integer and the Numeral and Det projections above which transform a singular term into a predicate based upon that integer and generalized quantifier, respectively. Finally, in a recent theory of counting and measuring by Rothstein (2012; 2013; 2017) it has been acknowledged that when used as singular terms in examples such as (29) cardinals seem to refer to abstract objects rather than anything else and this meaning should be accounted for by a special shifting operation.

Apart from providing an explanation for why cardinals are incompatible with mass terms, an important advantage of the semantics developed here is that it also allows for a unified analysis of numerical expressions in classifier and non-classifier languages.<sup>25</sup> In the next section, I will extend the proposed classifier semantics for numerals to multipliers.

### 7.4.3 Multipliers

As we saw in Chapter 4, multipliers are similar to cardinals in that they both do what a counting expression does, i.e. establish a one-to-one correspondence between entities and natural numbers. On the other hand, the two expressions in question differ significantly in that the former do not count whole individuals but rather quantify over certain parts thereof. Furthermore, they appear to be merged with the modified noun before other quantifiers, and thus their scope is significantly limited since they allow for modification by numerals and by the universal quantifier. In other words, they do not infer a plurality of objects, instead they imply that an object involves a plurality of parts having particular fea-

<sup>24</sup>I would like to thank Peter Sutton for this suggestion.

<sup>25</sup>See, e.g., Kobuchi-Philip (2006) and Wągiel & Caha (2020) for some arguments why this is desirable.

tures. These facts suggest that the analysis of multipliers should resemble that of cardinals and at the same time differ in such a way that would capture the relevant distinctions.

The morphological evidence from Slavic presented in Chapter 4 strongly suggests that just like cardinals multipliers should be treated as complex compositional expressions. Just like in the previous section, I propose that multipliers are decomposable into two elements. In a language such as Polish, the first is the name of a number corresponding to a numeral root present in the morphological make-up of the multiplier, whereas the second is a special classifier introduced by the multiplicative affix. I will refer to that classifier as  $CL_{\boxplus}$ . As indicated by the superscript, this element introduces the  $\boxplus$  operation defined in (26) in §7.3.3 above, see (34).

$$(34) \quad \text{Classifier}_{\boxplus} \\ \llbracket CL_{\boxplus} \rrbracket = \lambda n \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [P(x) \wedge \boxplus(P)(x) = n]$$

As  $CL_{\#}$ ,  $CL_{\boxplus}$  is a function from numbers to predicate modifiers, i.e., an expression of type  $\langle n, \langle \langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle \rangle$ . It also involves the individuation presupposition which accounts for the fact that multipliers can only modify expressions denoting MSSC individuals such as count nouns and mass terms coerced by the Universal Packager. However, unlike  $CL_{\#}$  the element  $CL_{\boxplus}$  does not pluralize predicates it applies to. This is an important difference between the two classifiers since it explains why multiplier phrases do not denote pluralities and allow for numeral modification.

Again, it is straightforward how to get a multiplier by combining the meaning of a numeral root, see (28), with the semantics of  $CL_{\boxplus}$  in (34) above. For instance, consider the denotation of the Polish multiplier *podwójny* ‘double’ in (35).

$$(35) \quad \text{Polish multiplier} \\ \llbracket \text{podwójny} \rrbracket = \llbracket CL_{\boxplus} \rrbracket (\llbracket \sqrt{dw} \rrbracket) = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [P(x) \wedge \boxplus(P)(x) = 2]$$

The number referred to by the numeral root  $\sqrt{dw}$  simply saturates the first argument slot in (34) and as a result an expression of type  $\langle \langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle$  is obtained, see (35). The derived predicate modifier selects for a set that has only MSSC individuals in their extensions and returns a subset of such MSSC individuals that have two essential parts. Such a predicate can further serve as an argument for another quantificational expression, e.g., a cardinal numeral.

The proposed semantics appears to successfully account for the subset of data I focus on here, namely multiplier phrases involving concrete nouns. Furthermore, as indicated in §4.2 it also offers a way of thinking about examples I do not deal

with here. In particular, after extending the ontology with primitive semantic types for events and roles a very similar mechanism can be proposed to account for the meaning of NPs like *double murder* and *double president*. Such considerations, however, reach far beyond the main topic of this study and I will refrain from discussing an exact implementation of the idea. Instead, in the following section I will present a brief overview of how the proposed semantics fits into a bigger typological picture and how cross-linguistic data supports the treatment of cardinals and multipliers as complex expressions.

#### 7.4.4 Cross-linguistic support

The structure of cardinal numerals proposed above is further supported by several empirical findings made in linguistic typology. First, it has been observed that cross-linguistically numerals and classifiers are always adjacent (Greenberg 1972). Table 7.1 provides the four attested orderings of the numeral, the classifier, and the noun, out of six logically possible patterns. Notice that in the missing two the noun would separate the numeral and classifier.

Table 7.1: Attested relative orderings of numerals and classifiers (Greenberg 1972)

LANGUAGE	ORDERING
Vietnamese	[NUM-CLF]-N
Thai	N-[NUM-CLF]
Ibibio	[CLF-NUM]-N
Bodo	N-[CLF-NUM]

Second, in classifier languages classifiers are often suffixes on numerals as witnessed, e.g., in (36) and (37) (see Aikhenvald 2000 for more data).

- (36) Japanese (Sudo 2016)  
 ichi-rin-no hana  
 one-CLF-GEN flower  
 ‘one flower’
- (37) Yucuna (Aikhenvald 2000: p. 106)  
 pajluhua-na yahui  
 one-CLF dog  
 ‘one dog’

Furthermore, intriguing data from partly classifier languages such as Mi'gmaq and Chol show that it can be the case that in a single language some cardinals require classifiers in order to combine with nouns whereas others do not, see (38) (Bale & Coon 2014). This further suggests that the classifier makes a constituent with the numeral and compensates its semantic deficits.

- (38) Mi'gmaq (Bale & Coon 2014)
- a. na'n (\*te's)-ijig ji'nm-ug  
     five CLF-AGR man-PL  
     'five men'
  - b. asugom \*(te's)-ijig ji'nm-ug  
     six CLF-AGR man-PL  
     'six men'

Finally, it has been observed that in genetically and typologically diverse languages there exists an alternation between attributive and specialized so-called counting cardinals, i.e., referential expressions that cannot be used as modifiers, see Table 7.2 (Hurford 1998; 2001; see also Waęiel & Caha 2020). This fact demonstrates that in some cases an exponent of the name of a number can be formally distinct from a related attributive expression. All things considered, I take the data discussed here to indicate that the analysis postulated for cardinals is on the right track.

Table 7.2: Attributive and counting numerals across languages (Hurford 2001)

LANGUAGE	NUMBER	ATTRIBUTIVE	COUNTING
German	2	zwei	zwo
Maltese	2	żewg	tnejn
Chinese	2	liǎng	èr
Hungarian	2	két	kettő
Basque	2	bi	biga

Moreover, the semantics postulated in (35) can be further supported by the fact that in many languages the numeral root can be easily distinguished in the morphological make-up of multipliers. As we saw in Chapter 4, Slavic multipliers are morphologically complex expressions derived from numeral roots by means of affixation which I argue encodes the classifier element CL<sub>☐</sub>. Though many

European languages borrowed their multipliers from Latin, the existence of multiplicative affixes is by no means a Slavic idiosyncrasy since similar patterns can be observed in Baltic and Finnic, as witnessed by the correspondences given in Table 7.3.

Table 7.3: Multipliers across languages

LANGUAGE	NUMBER	CARDINAL	MULTIPLIER
Russian	2	dva	dvojnoj
Lithuanian	2	du	dvigubas
Finnish	2	kaksi	kaksinkertainen

I conclude that the proposed account is plausible both in terms of what multipliers mean, i.e., what kind of semantic effects they give rise to, and what they often look like, i.e., their morphological complexity in some languages suggests their semantic decomposability. The system developed here is advantageous in that the same compositional mechanism allows for accounting for different numerical expressions. Though in this study I focus only on cardinals and multipliers, after extending it with additional classifiers a number of other numerals can be derived by its means (see Dočekal 2012; 2013; Wağiel 2014; 2015b; 2020b; Dočekal & Wağiel 2018b for a discussion of other types of complex numerals in Slavic). This unified treatment also explains why only one ordering of cardinals and multipliers is possible. However, before we discuss how a multiplier phrase modified by a cardinal is composed step by step from the pieces defined here, let us introduce additional tools to account for explicit and set partitives.

## 7.5 Partitives

The main data set presented in Chapter 2 concerned different types of partitives in various languages. In this study, I do not attempt to provide a detailed analysis of the syntax-semantics interface regarding partitive constructions. Rather, based on the cross-linguistic evidence I focus on general issues concerning the interaction between partitivity, topological sensitivity and countability. In particular, I will postulate a minimal set of ingredients necessary for an attempt to explain what happens in count explicit partitives and different types of proportional partitives involving topology-neutral as well as topology-sensitive partitive words. However, before I propose particular denotations of selected expressions of that type, there are several semantic components to comment on.

### 7.5.1 Partitivity

An important component of partitive constructions considers what kind of DP can be combined with the partitive word. As already mentioned in §2.1, partitives are subject to the so-called Partitive Constraint which disallows certain expressions from the embedded DP (e.g., Jackendoff 1977; Selkirk 1977; Barwise & Cooper 1981; Ladusaw 1982). I will follow here the semantic reanalysis of the Partitive Constraint, as proposed by de Hoop (1997), see (39), which states that the whole downstairs DP is an expression of type  $e$ .

- (39) Partitive Constraint (de Hoop 1997; adapted)  
 In a partitive, the embedded DP must be entity-denoting, i.e., definite or specific.

The formulation in (39) means that the semantics of the element combining with the embedded DP needs to be devised in such a way that it does not take sets as its input but rather individual things. Consequently, since Barker (1998) it is commonly assumed that the preposition *of* in English partitives is a function from entities to sets of their parts, i.e., type  $\langle e, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle$ , expressing partialness by means of proper parthood.<sup>26</sup> Specifically, the semantics of partitive *of* establishes the  $\sqsubset$  relation between entities stating that each member of the output set is a proper part of the input entity.

However, as we saw in Chapter 2 and 3, there are languages that do not employ prepositions in partitive constructions. For instance, Russian, Hungarian, and Basque make use of case marking instead, whereas Japanese and Chinese can wield a number of strategies to express partitivity including classifier structures. Moreover, in German and Brazilian Portuguese NPs can be modified by adjectival half-words in order to yield proportional meaning. These facts seem to suggest that from a cross-linguistic perspective the mapping between semantics and morphology is not that obvious. After all, given that  $\sqsubset$  is introduced by some other element, it is not clear what the exact semantic contribution of part-words is since they seem to do precisely the same thing. Therefore, for convenience I incorporate the general partitive semantics into the meaning of partitive words themselves, see (40).

- (40) Partitivity  
 $[[\text{PART}]] = \lambda y \lambda x [x \sqsubset y]$

<sup>26</sup>But see Ionin et al. (2006) and Marty (2017) for a treatment based on improper parthood.

Since I will focus here on the composition of German and Polish partitives, the reason behind this move is mainly to avoid an unnecessary detour into the semantics of case.<sup>27</sup> However, if required the distribution of particular components to be discussed below could be rearranged so that, say, the genitive case in a language such as German and Polish is associated with the semantics in (40), whereas particular partitive words contribute additional meaning or are treated as void.

Notice that since I assume only one domain, i.e., the domain of entities, with one parthood relation  $\sqsubseteq$  defined over it, the partitivity semantics in (40) simply employs the basic mereological notion of proper parthood, which unlike  $\sqsubseteq$  is not reflexive. As a result, there is no need to distinguish between entity and set partitives in terms of different parthood relations. Consequently, it is straightforward to expect that in general partitive words are able to combine both with expressions referring to singularities and with those denoting pluralities. As witnessed in §2.2, this kind of behavior is exactly what is observed cross-linguistically.

As we saw, the semantic re-formulation of the Partitive Constraint in (39) urges us to ensure that the downstairs DP position in partitives is occupied by an expression of type  $e$ . Putting aside the straightforward case of proper names, in the next sections I will discuss two mechanisms how to guarantee adequate extensions of definites and specific indefinites, namely maximization and choice functions, respectively.

### 7.5.2 Maximization

In order to account for definite DPs, I assume the standard maximization operation  $\text{MAX}$ , see (41) (cf. Sharvy 1980; Link 1983), which yields the unique maximal entity in the denotation of a predicate.<sup>28</sup>

- (41) Maximization operator  
 $\text{MAX}(P) = \iota x [P(x) \wedge \forall y [P(y) \rightarrow y \sqsubseteq x]]$   
 defined if there is a unique  $x$  in  $P$  of which all other things are a part;  
 otherwise undefined  
 (If defined,  $\text{MAX}(P)$  is the element in  $P$  which all other things in  $P$  are part of.)

In other words,  $\text{MAX}$  maps any set which may include singularities, pluralities, or both onto the element that all other elements in that set are part of. In cases it

<sup>27</sup>See Kagan (2013) for a detailed discussion of some aspects of the meaning of genitive case in Russian.

<sup>28</sup>In the literature, the symbol  $\sigma$  is often used instead of  $\text{MAX}$ .



selects a pluralized predicate, it returns the supremum, i.e., the largest plurality in the set. On the other hand, if  $\text{MAX}$  is applied to a singular predicate, it returns a singularity, provided that that predicate denotes a singleton, i.e., there is only one relevant entity in a given context. Maximality thus allows for a unified account for both singular and plural definite DPs.

In article languages such as English and German, the  $\text{MAX}$  operator is introduced by the definite article, e.g., *the* and *der/die/das/die*, respectively. On the other hand, for article-less languages such as Polish I assume a DP projection over NP headed by a silent determiner that can be interpreted as a definite article (e.g., Veselovská 1995; Progovac 1998; Rutkowski 2002). The semantics for such an overt or covert definite DP head is given in (42).

- (42) Definite article  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{MAX}(P)]$

Let us now contemplate how the proposed semantics delivers the meaning of definite singulars and plurals. Assuming a model for (43) with a unique apple  $a$ , the noun *apple* denotes a singleton set involving  $a$ , see (43a). After the NP is merged with the determiner the resulting DP *the apple* in (43b) simply refers to  $a$ . On the other hand, in a model with three apples  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$  the pluralized noun *apples* denotes the set of all pluralities derived from  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$ , see (44a), whereas the definite *the apples* has only the maximal sum in its extension, see (44b). This shows that the mechanics of  $\text{MAX}$  captures the intuition that singular definites such as *the apple* are true of a unique apple, whereas a definite plural DP like *the apples* corresponds to a plurality consisting of all the apples.

- (43) Definite singular DP  
 a.  $\llbracket \text{apple} \rrbracket = \{a\}$   
 b.  $\llbracket \text{DEF apple} \rrbracket = a$
- (44) Definite plural DP  
 a.  $\llbracket \text{PL apple} \rrbracket = \{a \sqcup b, a \sqcup c, b \sqcup c, a \sqcup b \sqcup c\}$   
 b.  $\llbracket \text{DEF [PL apple]} \rrbracket = a \sqcup b \sqcup c$

The  $\text{MAX}$  operation allows us to model the meaning of both singular and plural definites in partitives in accordance with the Partitive Constraint. In order to account for specific indefinites, I assume choice functions which will be briefly described in the next section.

### 7.5.3 Choice functions

A choice function is an operator selecting a member from a set (Reinhart 1997; Kratzer 1998). On the adopted view, the choice function variable remains free at the level of semantic composition and its value is provided by the context, i.e., the choice of a particular member of a given set may vary depending on extra-linguistic circumstances. In general, choice functions can be applied to any kind of set. As a result, they have been widely used in cross-linguistic research on different types of specific indefinites (see, e.g., Matthewson 1998; Kratzer & Shimoyama 2002; Alonso-Ovalle & Menéndez-Benito 2003; Yanovich 2005; Wągiel 2020b). In this study, however, I will limit my focus to the domain of entities. In particular, I embrace an approach that a choice function  $\text{CH}$  over entities is an expression of type  $\langle\langle e, t \rangle, e\rangle$  such that when it is applied to a non-empty set of entities  $P$ , it yields a specific entity from  $P$  relative to a particular context, see (45).

(45) Choice function

For any  $\text{CH}_{\langle\langle e, t \rangle, e\rangle}$  and  $P_{\langle e, t \rangle}$ ,  $\text{CH}$  is a choice function if  $P(\text{CH}(P)) = \text{TRUE}$

I assume that choice functions are introduced by a specificity element which can either be expressed formally or be silent. For instance, in Russian it is encoded by a special suffix on indefinite pronouns (see, e.g., Yanovich 2005) but lack any exponent in case an indefinite DP including a common noun gets a specific interpretation. Either way, the specificity element takes a predicate as its input and applies  $\text{CH}$  on that predicate as specified in (46).

(46) Specificity element

$\llbracket \text{SPEC} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{CH}(P)]$

Provided a model with three apples  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$ , the denotations of singulars and plurals are exactly as such cases discussed above, see (47a) and (48a), whereas the extensions of specific indefinites can be as follows. For instance, in a given context *apple* can be interpreted as referring to a certain apple, say,  $b$  in (47b). Analogously, the plural *apples* can be understood to designate a specific though indefinite plurality of apples, e.g.,  $a \sqcup b$  in (47b).<sup>29</sup>

(47) Specific indefinite singular DP

- a.  $\llbracket \text{apple} \rrbracket = \{a, b, c\}$
- b.  $\llbracket \text{SPEC apple} \rrbracket = b$  (in a certain context)

<sup>29</sup>Of course, SPEC and DEF extend also to mass nouns.

- (48) Specific indefinite plural DP
- a.  $\llbracket \text{PL apple} \rrbracket = \{a \sqcup b, a \sqcup c, b \sqcup c, a \sqcup b \sqcup c\}$
  - b.  $\llbracket \text{SPEC [PL apple]} \rrbracket = a \sqcup b$  (in a certain context)

The discussed mechanism will allow us to account for specific DPs in partitives. However, for the sake of brevity, in the following sections I will focus only on constructions involving definite DPs downstairs. For the treatment of specific indefinites in the embedded DP, it is sufficient to substitute the choice function for the maximization operator.

#### 7.5.4 Topology-sensitive transitivity

Having provided means to ensure that the complement of the partitive component is of type  $e$ , let us return to the meaning of partitive words in different constructions. One of the observations discussed in Chapter 2 concerned the cross-linguistic analogy between entity and set partitives. In particular, in languages such as German and Polish the same partitive word can combine with both singular and plural DPs. In the first case, it gives rise to a part-of-a-singularity reading, whereas in the latter configuration a part-of-a-plurality interpretation is inferred. This suggests that either the meanings of partitive words are general enough to cover both readings or such expressions are ambiguous cross-linguistically.

Furthermore, in §2.2.1 I showed that at least in German it is implausible to postulate ambiguity since partitive words can give rise to both discussed readings simultaneously in partitives with coordinated structures involving singular and plural DPs. Therefore, the data suggest that the proper treatment should be formulated in terms of one general meaning. Given that no sorted domains are postulated and singular individuals are distinguished from plural entities in terms of the distinction between mereotopological as opposed to purely mereological configurations, respectively, the partitivity semantics introduced in (40) is exactly what we need. However, utilizing one unified parthood relation for singularities and pluralities in both entity and set partitives turns out to be problematic in one respect.

The issue is the following. If there is only one domain with one parthood relation, there is nothing that stops set partitives from referring to an arbitrary material part of any singular entity making up a plurality. For instance, given the plurality of apples  $a \sqcup b \sqcup c \sqcup d$  a part-word taking that plurality as an argument could return some part of, say,  $b$ . However, this is not how set partitives are interpreted. To the contrary, under ordinary circumstances they denote a set of individual parts of a plurality, e.g., in the above example the extension could

include  $a \sqsubset b$ ,  $b \sqsubset c$ ,  $a \sqsubset b \sqsubset c$  etc. In order to exclude material part interpretations, I postulate a special condition, which I call **TOPOLOGY-SENSITIVE TRANSITIVITY**, as formulated in (49), where  $\text{mSSC}(x)$  refers to mSSC individuals, see (50).<sup>30</sup>

- (49) Topology-sensitive transitivity  
 $\forall x \forall y \forall z [[x \sqsubset y \wedge y \sqsubset z] \rightarrow [x \sqsubset z \leftrightarrow \neg \text{mSSC}(y)]]$
- (50) mSSC individual  
 $\text{mSSC}(x) \leftrightarrow \exists P [\text{mSSC}(P)(x)]$

The condition in (49) has the following effect. If  $y$  is not an mSSC individual, then transitivity works as usual. However, if  $y$  is an mSSC individual, then transitivity is blocked. Hence, topology-sensitive transitivity ensures that an entity that is part of a plurality is either an mSSC individual or a sum of such individuals. In other words, (49) excludes all material parts from the denotations of set partitives.

It is worth noting that an important consequence of adopting (49) is that in a certain sense we have abandoned the unconditioned transitivity of parthood. Though it is definitely not a mainstream assumption, the behavior of explicit set partitives described above suggests that it is empirically correct as far as natural language is concerned (see also Moltmann 1997 for related arguments). Moreover, given the evidence for the significance of topological notions for grammar examined in Chapter 3 it would not be surprising that topological sensitivity applies also to some primitive notions governing linguistic part-whole structures.

I conclude that topology-sensitive transitivity guarantees the proper interpretation of partitives involving plural DPs. It seems that postulating this restriction is a necessary move for an analysis of partitive constructions building on the unified parthood relation. However, I believe that it is not a big price to pay compared to the gains such an approach can offer. In the next section, I will readdress the issue of partitioning discussed briefly in §7.1, in order to provide a background for the analysis of particular types of partitive words. The notion of partition will turn out useful in modeling continuous parts.

### 7.5.5 Partitions

As the evidence discussed in this study indicates, quantification over both wholes and parts can only operate on sets consisting of disjoint members, i.e., entities that do not share a part. However, since there are numerous ways how to divide a thing into parts, many of such divisions would yield multiple entities that do overlap. But such divisions are undesirable since only those sets can serve as the

<sup>30</sup>I would like to thank Adam Przepiórkowski and Peter Sutton for their suggestions concerning the formalization of the condition.

domain of subatomic quantification that comprise separate, i.e., non-overlapping, continuous parts. For instance, if one counted one half of a teddy bear as one, another half as two, and its head and right paw as three and four, one would count some things multiple times. By doing so they would violate one of the crucial counting principles and, as a result, fail to establish a one-to-one correspondence between discrete entities and numbers. In order to avoid that, a mechanism ruling out undesirable divisions is required. Such a mechanism is supposed to guarantee that the domain of quantification does not include overlapping parts. In other words, what we want is an operation that will be able to carve up a whole into distinct separate entities. For this purpose, I will make use of a device well-known in the study of pluralities, namely partitions (see, e.g. Schwarzschild 1996; Chierchia 2010).

The partitioning operation  $\pi$  is a function of type  $\langle\langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle\rangle$  which selects a set of entities, i.e., a predicate  $P$ , and yields its subset  $\pi(P)$ , i.e., a set of those elements in  $P$  that do not overlap. Given the standard mereological definition of overlap, see (5), partitioning imposes a condition that no two members of a partition  $\pi(P)$  share a part. The formal definition of the partitioning operation  $\pi$  is provided in (51).<sup>31</sup>

- (51) Partitioning function  $\pi$   
 For all properties  $P$ ,  $\pi(P)$  is a subset of  $P$  such that for any  $x$  and  $y$  in  $\pi(P)$  the following requirement is satisfied  
 $\neg\exists z[z \sqsubseteq x \wedge z \sqsubseteq y]$   
 (No two members of a partition overlap.)

To see how partitioning works let us consider what happens when  $\pi$  is applied to the set  $A$  in (52a). As a result, we get (52b) which includes only those members of  $A$  that do not share a part. On the other hand, the set  $B$  in (52c) does not satisfy the condition defined in (51) since  $a \sqcup b$  and  $a \sqcup c$  share a part, namely  $a$ . Therefore, although  $B$  is a subset of  $A$ , it is not its partition.

- (52) Partitioning in context
- a.  $A = \{a \sqcup b, a \sqcup c, a \sqcup d, b \sqcup c, b \sqcup d, c \sqcup d, a \sqcup b \sqcup c, a \sqcup b \sqcup d, a \sqcup c \sqcup d, b \sqcup c \sqcup d, a \sqcup b \sqcup c \sqcup d\}$
  - b.  $\pi(A) = \{a \sqcup b, c \sqcup d\}$
  - c.  $B = \{a \sqcup b, a \sqcup c\}$

---

<sup>31</sup>Notice that this definition diverges from what is usually expected from partitions, i.e., not only non-overlap but also complete cover. In that sense,  $\pi$  does not deliver proper partitions, as defined in set theory. However, for the sake of convenience I will continue to use the term following some other authors (e.g., Scontras 2014).

It is important to emphasize that (52b) represents only one of numerous possible partitions. For many sets there are multiple subsets that would satisfy the non-overlap requirement after applying  $\pi$ . Depending on the context some of those possible partitions may be considered more natural than others since a particular arrangement of parts making up an entity may suggest a particular division. For instance, a teddy bear consists of cognitively salient elements recognizable as legs, paws, a head, and a body. The fact that we perceive the whole in such a structured way may result in partitioning the set of material parts of the toy in question accordingly. However, different partitions are not excluded, e.g., into its left and right half or its brown and white part. Crucially, once a particular partition is established in a given context it is fixed. This seems to be a welcome result since it satisfies the intuition that, despite multiple possible divisions of a whole into parts, once a choice concerning a particular division has been made, it cannot be altered. Figuratively speaking, one cannot change what is being counted while already counting.

### 7.5.6 Individuation

The partitioning function  $\pi$  guarantees that a reference set is free of entities sharing a part. This is an important improvement since it accounts for the ban of overlap in the domain of quantification. However, as discussed in Chapter 5 there are two more principles that need to be accommodated within a theory of countability, namely the conditions of integrity and maximality. Since in this study I am primarily concerned with subatomic quantification, I will focus on what makes some part  $a$  part, i.e., on how to model the contrast between an arbitrary material portion of a whole and a stable integrated and recognizable entity within a whole. In order to do so, we need a more fine-grained device than mere partitioning. For this purpose, I assume an additional semantic element which I will refer to as the individuating element (IND). This operation is a function of type  $\langle\langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle\rangle$  which selects a set of entities and returns a subset of the input consisting of non-overlapping integrated objects. This can be achieved by incorporating into the semantics of IND two components, specifically the partitioning function  $\pi$  and the mereotopological mssc relation. To be precise, I propose that IND introduces the mssc restriction relative to a partitioned property, as defined in (53). Consequently, IND turns a set consisting of different types of entities into a set including only mssc individuals.<sup>32</sup>

---

<sup>32</sup>One might wonder whether the combination of contextual partitioning would suffice with a weaker notion of ssc, recall (26) in §6.2.1. There are two reasons why I use mssc instead.

- (53) Individuating element  
 $[[\text{IND}]] = \lambda P \lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\pi(P))(x)]$

In general, an idea of an individuating operation is by no means new. In fact, theories postulating similar operators in order to account for the mass/count distinction date back at least to Sharvy (1979). For instance, one of the most prominent and innovative systems was developed by Borer (2005a) who proposes that count syntax involves a classifier element, which is absent in mass expressions. It is introduced by a null head merged in the region between the NP and DP and expresses division by partitioning the domain of reference encoded by the nominal stem. In a similar vein, Bale & Barner (2009) posit a count noun functional head interpreted as a function from unindividuated denotations to individuated denotations. Admittedly, a closely related idea to IND was proposed by Scontras (2014: p. 97) for atomizers such as *grain* in, e.g., *grain of rice*. On his view, partitioning is defined in such a way that it applies to a kind and the result is a set of mssc instantiations of that kind. However, what is new about the notion I propose is that, as we will see, it allows for the individuation of material parts of individuals, something that Scontras's system fails to account for, unless postulating kinds corresponding to denotations of particular partitive words, which seems both conceptually undesirable and empirically inappropriate. Given the linguistic relevance of subatomic quantification discussed in Chapters 2, 3, and 4 I argue that the semantics proposed in (53) proves to be more advantageous.

Despite the fact that in many cases the individuating element is silent, postulating it is well motivated by the restricted meaning of partitive words in count explicit and proportional partitives, as we saw from the contrasts provided in Chapter 2. Though bare topology-neutral expressions of that kind can denote both contiguous and discontinuous entities such as scattered portions of matter and arbitrary sums of individuals, the moment they combine with the cardinal numeral they can refer exclusively to entities perceived as integrated objects. Furthermore, as discussed in Chapter 3, Polish and German provide evidence that there are expressions that encode the individuating element formally. In particular, as witnessed by the morphological complexity of Polish topology-sensitive partitive words such as *połówka* and *ćwiartka* as opposed to topology-neutral

---

First, the aim of this study is to provide a unified account for both quantification over wholes and subatomic quantification. More importantly, however, though in fact partitioning plus ssc yields a set of disjoint entities, i.e., non-overlapping parts of the whole, it does not guarantee that that one cannot count ssc parts of those entities, i.e., parts of those non-overlapping parts, as one. Arguably, in many cases it would not matter, but there are some cases where it would, see §5.2.2.

*połowa* and *ćwierć* there are good reasons to postulate that the suffix *-k-* is the exponent of IND. Similarly, German stacked *eine* in proportional partitives of the type *die eine Hälfte* DP also appears to express the semantics in (53).

The next section will provide the semantics of some of the various types of partitive words discussed in Chapters 2 and 3.

### 7.5.7 Partitive words

Having defined the generalized contextually conditioned measure functions  $\mu$  in (24) as well as the individuating element IND in (53), we are ready to propose the semantics of both topology-neutral and topology-sensitive partitive words. Let us start with German *Teil*. As discussed in §7.5.1, for convenience I assume that parthood or, more precisely, proper parthood is encoded in the semantics of partitive words. Thus, the meaning of *Teil* is given in (54).

- (54) German topology-neutral part-word *Teil*  
 $\llbracket \text{Teil} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x [x \sqsubset y]$

The purely mereological nature of  $\sqsubset$  makes it a topology-neutral expression which can denote a set of scattered entities, arbitrary sums, or integrated individuals. This characteristic corresponds to the compatibility of *Teil* with explicit entity, set, and mass partitives reported in §2.2. On the other hand, the constraint on set partitives postulated in (49) guarantees that when it selects a plural genitive DP, it does not yield an arbitrary material part or parts of an MSSC individual making up a plurality. However, when *Teil* combines with a count singular DP, the resulting set can consist of various parts of the relevant object since the proposed semantics bears no topological commitments with respect to the spatial arrangement of portions of matter the whole phrase denotes. In other words, explicit entity partitives can refer to continuous as well as discontinuous parts.

However, as we saw in §2.2.3, in count explicit partitives the numeral in accordance with the counting principle of integrity can quantify only over contiguous portions of matter. This means that in such a syntactic configuration the possible denotation of *Teil* is significantly restricted. In other words, the part-word that is normally topology-neutral is shifted into a topologically sensitive expression that yields a set of those parts of the relevant whole that are spatially integrated. I propose that this shift is performed by a silent IND element. As specified in (53), IND applies MSSC to a partition of the set denoted by the input predicate. As a result, all of those parts denoted by the phrase combining with *Teil* that are overlapping as well as discontinuous are excluded from the extension of the shifted expression. All the details concerning composition will be discussed in §7.6.



Let us now turn to different types of Polish half-words. In general, the semantics of topology-neutral *połowa* given in (55) is quite similar to the one of *Teil*.

- (55) Polish topology-neutral half-word *połowa*  
 $\llbracket \text{połowa} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x [x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]$

Both *Teil* and *połowa* are expressions of type  $\langle e, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle$ , i.e., functions that take an entity and yield a set of its parts. Furthermore, as in the case of *Teil* nothing restricts *połowa* from selecting any particular type of thing, i.e., it is perfectly compatible with individuals, scattered entities, and pluralities of objects. Finally, the resulting set involves both continuous and discontinuous halves. The main difference between the two is that *połowa* is a proportional expression which denotes only those parts that constitute a certain portion of a whole. This is captured by the generalized measure function  $\mu$ . Given the mechanism of contextual conditioning defined in (24),  $\mu$  returns an integer corresponding to a number of individuals if its argument is a plurality, whereas when applied to a singular individual or scattered entity, it yields a value corresponding to the measure of its volume in some contextually salient units, e.g.,  $\text{cm}^3$ . Since as discussed in §3.1.2 half-words are inherently vague and can indicate parts that are either smaller or greater than an exact half, the approximately equal relation  $\approx$  is preferred over  $=$  in the formula in (55). Overall, what *połowa* does is that it selects an entity of any sort and returns a set of its continuous and discontinuous parts such that they constitute approximately 50% of the total cardinality or volume of that entity.

Compared to *połowa*, its topology-sensitive counterpart *pól* fails to combine with predicates denoting scattered entities and arbitrary sums of individuals. Given the framework developed here, it is possible to account for its distributional restrictions discussed in §3.1.1 in terms of mereotopological distinctions. In particular, I propose that the semantics of *pól*, see (56), is almost identical to (55) with the exception that it involves a special selectional requirement which I refer to as the INTEGRATED INDIVIDUAL PRESUPPOSITION. Specifically, (56) presupposes that the first argument, i.e.,  $y$ , is an individual that is MSSC relative to some property, recall (50).

- (56) Polish topology-sensitive half-word *pól*  
 $\llbracket \text{pól} \rrbracket = \lambda y : \text{IMSSC}(y) \lambda x [x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]$

The integrated individual presupposition in (56) explains why *pól* does not combine with plural and mass DPs, since these expressions do not refer to MSSC individuals in their extensions. Therefore, *pól* can only head proportional entity partitives and after it takes an integrated object, it yields a set that consists of various continuous as well as discontinuous halves of that object.

Finally, it is time to account for the most formally as well as semantically complex of the Polish half-words, namely *połówka*. As we saw in §3.1.1, it is a morphologically complex expression involving a special suffix *-k-* shared with a number of derived partitive words in Polish such as *ćwiartka* ‘quarter’ and *cząstka* ‘part’. All of those expressions are similar to *pół* in that they require MSSC individuals as their inputs. However, they differ in that their denotation consist only of continuous parts. Therefore, I propose that the suffix *-k-* in fact introduces the semantics of the IND element specified in (53), see (57). Thus, the half-word *połówka* is a complex expression derived from the meaning encoded in a simpler topology-sensitive partitive word.

- (57) Polish individuating suffix *-k-*  
 $[[\text{-k-}]] = [[\text{IND}]] = \lambda P \lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\pi(P))(x)]$

Given both the morphological complexity as well as semantic behavior of *połówka* discussed in detail in §3.1, I postulate that proportional partitive constructions headed by *połówka* are derived from partitives headed by *pół* via the derivational suffix *-k-*.<sup>33</sup> The resulting expression is a topology-sensitive half-word with the semantics in (58).

- (58) Polish topology-sensitive half-word *połówka*  
 $[[\text{połówka DP}]] = [[\text{-k-}]]([[pół \text{ DP}]])$

The meaning defined above ensures that *połówka* not only selects entities that are MSSC individuals but also denotes only parts that are spatially continuous. The first aspect is ensured by the integrated individual presupposition encoded in *pół*, whereas the semantics of *-k-* guarantees the latter. In particular, the partitioning function  $\pi$  provides a contextually salient partition of the set delivered by the partitive headed by *pół*. Thus, the MSSC operation is relativized to a property from whose denotation all overlapping parts have been eliminated as a result of partitioning. Ultimately, the resulting set involves only disjoint integrated parts, exactly as desired.

At first blush, it might seem odd to propose that the suffix *-k-* combines with the entire proportional partitive DP rather than with the sole half-word to which it linearly attaches. However, there is an independent reason suggesting that such

<sup>33</sup>More precisely, I assume that in terms of morphology *połówka* is derived from *pół* rather than from *połowa* and that the element *-ów-* in *połówka* is semantically vacuous. Such an analysis seems to be corroborated by the fact that the morpheme *-ów-* appears sometimes as a linking element in Polish deadjectival nominalizations such as *złoty* ‘golden; złoty (Polish currency)’ ~ *złotówka* ‘1-złoty coin’. Notice the ungrammaticality of *\*złotowy*.

an analysis is on the right track. The suffix *-k-* in Polish is polyfunctional and appears also in a number of other morphological environments. Among others, it is used to derive group numerals, see (59) (see Wągiel 2015b).<sup>34</sup>

- (59) Polish
- a. pięć dziewczyn  
five girls.GEN  
'five girls'
  - b. piątka dziewczyn  
five.GROUP girls.GEN  
'(group of) five girls'

The form *pięć* in (59a) is a basic cardinal numeral meaning simply 'five'. Attaching the suffix *-k-* in (59b) changes it to *piątka*, which is an obligatorily collective numerical expression probably best paraphrased as 'group of five'. Slavic collectivizers of this type are typically analyzed via some sort of group-forming operation, e.g., Landman's (1989a)  $\uparrow$  operator (see, e.g. Dočekal 2012; 2013; Wągiel 2015b). In particular,  $\uparrow$  applies to a sum of entities and returns a group, i.e., a plural individual consisting of those entities that behaves as a unit in its own right. This, however, requires the meaning of the suffix *-k-* to take the entire NP as its argument rather than the numeral, contrary to what the linear morpheme ordering suggests. In other words, in order to interpret (59b) as 'group of five girls', *-k-* needs to be interpreted above 'five girls'.

For the reason described above, in the next section I will follow the account in (58). However, it is important to emphasize that having the suffix *-k-* interpreted above the partitive DP is not a crucial assumption of the proposed analysis. Rather its key component is the association of *-k-* with the semantics of the individuating element IND, as defined in (53). For instance, an alternative to the treatment in (57) would be to make the semantics of *-k-* more complex so that it can take *pól* as its argument. For instance, consider (60).<sup>35</sup>

- (60) Polish individuating suffix *-k-* (alternative)
- $$\begin{aligned} \llbracket -k- \rrbracket &= \lambda R \lambda y : \text{MSSC}(y) \lambda x [\llbracket \text{IND} \rrbracket (R(y))(x)] = \\ &= \lambda R \lambda y : \text{MSSC}(y) \lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\pi(R(y)))(x)] \end{aligned}$$

The semantics in (60) enables the meaning of IND to compose with a function from entities to predicates. If *R* is an expression of type  $\langle e, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle$ , we obtain an al-

<sup>34</sup>Notice that the attachment of *-k-* triggers standard Polish morphophonological alternations represented orthographically in (59) as *ę* : *q* and *ć* : *t*.

<sup>35</sup>I would like to thank Peter Sutton for suggesting this.

ternative analysis of *połówka* in (61), which does not rely on *-k-* being interpreted above the partitive DP and allows it to combine with *pól* directly.

- (61) Polish topology-sensitive half-word *połówka* (alternative)  
 $\llbracket \text{połówka} \rrbracket = \llbracket -k- \rrbracket (\llbracket \text{pól} \rrbracket) =$   
 $= \lambda y : \text{MSSC}(y) [\text{MSSC}(\pi([x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]))]$

Yet another approach would be to combine *-k-* with *pól* via Function Composition, rather than in terms of the perhaps more familiar Function Application rule. Though I leave this option unexplored here, I believe that in principle it would not be a problem to pursue such an alternative.

Having developed all the machinery necessary to account for subatomic quantification in natural language, let us see how the pieces fit together. In the next section, I will walk through the derivation of different types of partitives including German explicit and set partitives and Polish proportional partitives as well as multiplier phrases. The section will be concluded by a proposal how the system developed here could be extended to Italian count explicit partitives involving irregular plurals.

## 7.6 Composition

In the previous sections, I provided all the ingredients necessary for an analysis of natural language expressions utilizing subatomic quantification. Now, let us see how those elements interact. I will start with the simplest cases of explicit entity and set partitives. Next, I will walk through the most complex case of count explicit partitives, which involves the interplay of almost all postulated components. Subsequently, I will discuss the difference between topology-neutral and topology-sensitive proportional partitives. Finally, I will present the derivation of multiplier phrases modified by numerals. As in the previous sections, I will illustrate how the proposed system works on the German and Polish data. For all partitives, I provide examples involving embedded definite DPs. Though for the sake of brevity I do not provide explicit derivations, I assume that for specific DPs nothing changes except from the use of a choice function, see (45), instead of the maximization operator.

### 7.6.1 Explicit entity partitives

I begin with a relatively simple example of a German explicit entity partitive as the one provided in (62). The analysis of this case will allow us to see how the

essential components introduced in previous sections interact with each other and as such it will serve as a reference point for other more complex cases.

- (62) Explicit entity partitive  
 Teil des Apfel  
 part the.GEN apple.GEN  
 ‘part of the apple’

All things considered, I assume that what gets interpreted at the level of semantic composition is the structure in Figure 7.1.<sup>36</sup> The whole phrase is an expression of type  $\langle e, t \rangle$  which gets a part-of-a-singularity reading. The description of the whole derivation is provided in (63).

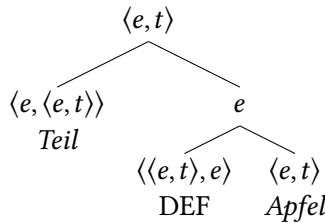


Figure 7.1: Structure of (62)

- (63) Interpretation
- $\llbracket \text{Apfel} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$
  - $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{MAX}(P)]$
  - Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{Apfel} \rrbracket) =$   
 $= \text{MAX}(\lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)])$
  - $\llbracket \text{Teil} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x[x \sqsubset y]$
  - Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{Teil} [\text{DEF Apfel}] \rrbracket = \lambda x[x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket] =$   
 $= \lambda x[x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])]$

The predicate *Apfel* in (63a) denotes a set of MSSC individuals that have a property of being an apple. If in a given context this set is a singleton, the maximization operation *MAX* introduced by the definite article in (63b) selects the unique maximal element from that set, e.g., it turns  $\{a\}$  into  $a$ , see (63c). Subsequently, the part-word *Teil* with the semantics specified in (63d) selects that entity and returns a

<sup>36</sup>For the sake of simplicity, I ignore the genitive case marking here.

set of its material parts. Since there are no additional restrictions, the resulting phrase represented in (63e) denotes all possible divisions of the apple in question including various overlapping continuous as well as discontinuous parts. This is exactly what we expect from the extension of a topology-neutral explicit entity partitive.

### 7.6.2 Explicit set partitives

The next example to be discussed is the German explicit set partitive (64). An analysis of such a construction should account for the fact that it can get only a part-of-a-plurality interpretation.

- (64) Explicit set partitive  
 Teil der Äpfel  
 part the.GEN apples.GEN  
 ‘some of the apples’

I assume the semantic structure in Figure 7.2 for the phrase in question. The only difference between Figure 7.2 and 7.1 from the previous section is that the set partitive tree involves the PL node which introduces the pluralization of the predicate whereas the entity partitive tree does not. How the structure corresponding to the phrase in (64) is interpreted is demonstrated in (65).

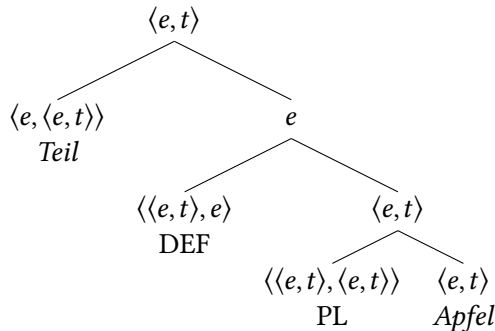


Figure 7.2: Structure of (64)

- (65) Interpretation
- $\llbracket \text{Apfel} \rrbracket = \lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$
  - $\llbracket \text{PL} \rrbracket = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [{}^+P(x)]$

- c. Function Application: presupposition satisfied  
 $\llbracket \text{PL Apfel} \rrbracket = \lambda x [^+ \llbracket \text{Apfel} \rrbracket (x)] =$   
 $= \lambda x [^+ (\lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y))](x)]$
- d.  $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P [\text{MAX}(P)]$
- e. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF} [\text{PL Apfel}] \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{PL Apfel} \rrbracket) =$   
 $= \text{MAX}(\lambda x [^+ (\lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y))](x)])$
- f.  $\llbracket \text{Teil} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x [x \sqsubset y]$
- g. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{Teil} [\text{DEF} [\text{PL Apfel}]] \rrbracket = \lambda x [x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF} [\text{PL Apfel}] \rrbracket] =$   
 $= \lambda x [x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y [^+ (\lambda z [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(z))](y))]]$

As in (63), the noun in (65a) denotes a set of individuals that are *MSSC* relative to the property *APPLE*. Since the plural NP in (64) is semantically interpreted, the plural marker contributes the meaning in (65b). Specifically, it takes the predicate *APFEL* and applies the strict pluralization operation  $^+$ . As a result, the extension of (65c) consists of sums of apples. Next, the definite article yields the maximal sum plurality from the set which will serve as the argument of *Teil*, see (65d)–(65f). Finally, after the entity variable is saturated as in (65g), the explicit set partitive denotes a set of overlapping parts of the largest plurality of apples in a given context. Topology-sensitive transitivity defined in (49) ensures that this set consists only of parts that are either *MSSC* entities or sums thereof, i.e., material proper parts of particular individuals are not included. This is a welcome result.

### 7.6.3 Count explicit partitives

The last type of explicit partitive construction to be considered here concerns the significantly more complex example in (66).

- (66) Count explicit partitive  
 zwei Teile des Apfels  
 two parts the.GEN apple.GEN  
 ‘two parts of the apple’

In general, I assume the structure for count explicit partitives along the lines in Figure 7.3. Notice that in accordance with the semantics of cardinals proposed in §7.4.2, the numeral root and  $\text{CL}_\#$  form a constituent. Furthermore, unlike in the explicit partitive examples in Figure 7.1 and 7.2 in order to ensure that counting is possible, I postulate that there is a special *IND* node present in the tree

representing semantic composition, see §7.5.6. In the discussed German example, IND has no formal exponent. However, I argue that the semantic evidence implies that though null it is interpreted. In particular, depending on the context, explicit entity partitives can designate either contiguous or discontinuous parts. On the other hand, count explicit partitives refer only to pluralities of integrated parts. Thus, the presence of the numeral licenses the obligatory occurrence of IND. This of course is in accordance with the counting principles discussed in Chapter 5 and requires a formal account. The exact step-by-step derivation is given in (67).

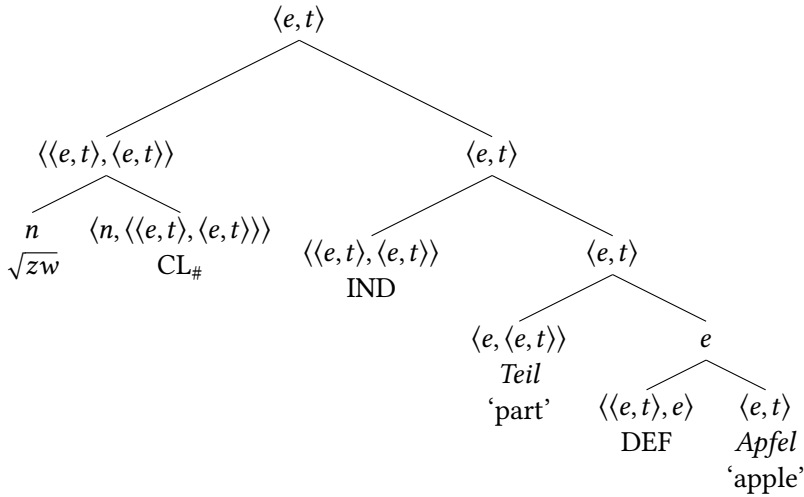


Figure 7.3: Structure of (66)

(67) Interpretation of (66)

- a.  $\llbracket \text{Apfel} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$
- b.  $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{MAX}(P)]$
- c. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{Apfel} \rrbracket) = \text{MAX}(\lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)])$
- d.  $\llbracket \text{Teil} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x[x \sqsubset y]$
- e. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{Teil} [\text{DEF Apfel}] \rrbracket = \lambda x[x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket] =$   
 $= \lambda x[x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])]$
- f.  $\llbracket \text{IND} \rrbracket = \lambda P \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\pi(P))(x)]$
- g. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{IND} [\text{Teil} [\text{DEF Apfel}]] \rrbracket =$



$$\begin{aligned}
&= \lambda x \left[ \text{MSSC} \left( \pi \left( \llbracket \text{Teil} \llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket \rrbracket \right) \right) (x) \right] = \\
&= \lambda x \left[ \text{MSSC} \left( \pi \left( \lambda z \left[ z \sqsubset \text{MAX} \left( \lambda y \left[ \text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y) \right] \right) (z) \right] \right) \right) (x) \right] \\
\text{h. } & \llbracket \sqrt{z\bar{w}} \rrbracket = 2 \\
\text{i. } & \llbracket \text{CL}_{\#} \rrbracket = \lambda n \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x \left[ *P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = n \right] \\
\text{j. } & \text{Function Application} \\
& \llbracket \sqrt{z\bar{w}} \text{ CL}_{\#} \rrbracket = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x \left[ *P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = \llbracket \sqrt{z\bar{w}} \rrbracket \right] = \\
& = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x \left[ *P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = 2 \right] \\
\text{k. } & \text{Function Application: presupposition satisfied} \\
& \llbracket \llbracket \sqrt{z\bar{w}} \text{ CL}_{\#} \rrbracket \llbracket \text{IND} \llbracket \text{Teil} \llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket \rrbracket \rrbracket = \\
& = \lambda x \left[ * \llbracket \llbracket \text{IND} \llbracket \text{Teil} \llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket \rrbracket \rrbracket (x) \right. \\
& \left. \wedge \# \left( \llbracket \llbracket \text{IND} \llbracket \text{Teil} \llbracket \text{DEF Apfel} \rrbracket \rrbracket \rrbracket \right) (x) = 2 \right] = \\
& \lambda x \left[ * \left( \lambda w \left[ \text{MSSC} \left( \pi \left( \lambda z \left[ z \sqsubset \text{MAX} \left( \lambda y \left[ \text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y) \right] \right) (z) \right] \right) \right) \right) (w) \right) (x) \right. \\
& \left. \wedge \# \left( \lambda w \left[ \text{MSSC} \left( \pi \left( \lambda z \left[ z \sqsubset \text{MAX} \left( \lambda y \left[ \text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y) \right] \right) (z) \right] \right) \right) \right) (w) \right) (x) = \right. \\
& \left. 2 \right]
\end{aligned}$$

The steps in (67a)–(67e) are exactly the same as in the case of the explicit entity partitive derived in (63), i.e., starting from the predicate of *MSSC* individuals we end up with the node denoting a set of overlapping continuous and discontinuous parts of a contextually unique apple. Given the counting principles of non-overlap, integrity, and maximality, that expression cannot serve as the domain of quantification since its extension resembles those of mass terms. In particular, it includes both scattered entities and entities that are not disjoint. In Chapter 5, I argued that the deeply rooted mechanism of counting is based upon an algorithm that establishes a one-to-one correspondence with numbers only for discrete objects, i.e., non-overlapping integrated entities in their mereological maximality, and that the same applies to subatomic quantification. Therefore, if parts are to be counted, it needs to be ensured that they constitute entities of that sort. This is what the individuating element *IND* introduced in (67f) is for. *IND* combines with the set of overlapping parts and partitions it in such a way that the new set consists only of disjoint parts. However, non-overlap itself does not guarantee that parts are integrated. This is why *IND* restricts the denotation of (67e) even further by applying the *MSSC* constraint. As a result, the expression in (67g) denotes a set of objects that are *MSSC* with respect to the property of being a disjoint proper part of a contextually unique apple. In other words, (67g) refers to a set of integrated parts that can be put in a one-to-one-correspondence with numbers.

As proposed in §7.4.2, the cardinal numeral *zwei* is a complex expression consisting of a numeral root simply naming the integer 2, see (67h), which serves as an argument for the classifier element  $\text{CL}_{\#}$ , see (67i). As indicated in (67j), the

whole cardinal is a predicate modifier that for a predicate of MSSC entities returns a set of two-element sums of such individuals. This is ensured by the following elements. The individuation presupposition restricts the predicate arguments to those that denote only MSSC entities. On the other hand, the first conjunct of the assertion of  $CL_{\#}$  pluralizes the predicate by means of the classical \* operator, and thus provides sums for the  $\#(P)$  measure function which yields the number of individuals that are MSSC relative to the property the whole cardinal modifies. After the predicate variable gets saturated by the entity partitive individuated by IND, the resulting count explicit partitive in (67k) returns a set of pairs of non-overlapping integrated parts of a contextually unique apple. And that is exactly what we want.

Though the computation in (67) gets quite complex, I believe that the underlying mechanism deriving count explicit partitives is quite simple. Its great advantage is that it allows us to account for the semantic subtleties concerning topological issues highlighted by the novel data I presented in Chapters 2 and 3 via the interplay of the semantics of partitives, the individuating element, and cardinals. In the following sections, I will go in detail through the proposed account for the contrast between Polish topology-neutral and topology-sensitive half-words discussed in §7.5.7.

#### 7.6.4 Topology-neutral proportional partitives

Let us now turn to Polish proportional partitives. First, I will discuss the step-by-step derivation of the least complex case, i.e., entity partitives involving the topology-neutral half-word *połowa* exemplified by the phrase in (68).

- (68) Topology-neutral proportional entity partitive  
 połowa jabłko  
 half<sub>2</sub> apple.GEN  
 ‘half of the apple’

In general, such expressions are very similar to German explicit entity partitives such as those discussed in §7.6.1. The semantic tree corresponding to (68) is provided in Figure 7.4 and (69) demonstrates how the structure is interpreted.<sup>37</sup>

- (69) Interpretation of (68)  
 a.  $\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$   
 b.  $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{MAX}(P)]$

<sup>37</sup>As in German explicit partitives, I ignore case marking at the level of semantic composition.

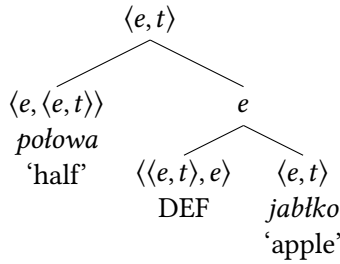


Figure 7.4: Structure of (68)

## c. Function Application

$$\llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket) = \text{MAX}(\lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)])$$

d.  $\llbracket \text{połowa} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x [x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]$ 

## e. Function Application

$$\begin{aligned} \llbracket \text{połowa} [\text{DEF jabłko}] \rrbracket &= \lambda x [x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket \\ &\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket) \times 0.5] = \\ &= \lambda x [x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)]) \\ &\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])) \times 0.5] \end{aligned}$$

Analogously to German *Apfel*, the predicate *jabłko* in (69a) is true of entities that are MSSC with respect to the property *APPLE*. Though Polish lacks articles, as indicated in §7.5.2 I assume the silent definite element *DEF* specified in (69b) which applies the maximization operator *MAX* to the set denoted by *jabłko*. If it is a singleton, then the definite DP refers to the unique individual from that set, see (69c). The denotation of the half-word *połowa* is very similar to that of a part-word with the exception that it indicates how big the parts it denotes are, see (69d). It takes the MSSC entity denoted by the definite DP as its first argument, and the resulting proportional partitive denotes a set of parts of a contextually unique apple. The mechanism of contextual conditioning accounts for the fact that the generalized measure function  $\mu$  measures its argument in terms of volume. Thus, each part in the denotation of the whole proportional partitive constitutes approximately 50% of the volume of that apple. Notice that among the members of the set there are continuous as well as discontinuous halves, many of which overlap. Such a denotation is incompatible with cardinal numerals. In order to deliver countable entities, the individuating element *IND* needs to be applied similarly as in count explicit partitives discussed in §7.6.3.

Since the half-word *połowa* is topologically neutral, there are no restrictions concerning its distribution. Hence, it can also combine with plurals as in (70).

- (70) Topology-neutral proportional set partitive  
 połowa jabłek  
 half<sub>2</sub> apples.GEN  
 ‘half of the apples’

I assume the semantic structure of the phrase in Figure 7.5 and the interpretation in (71).

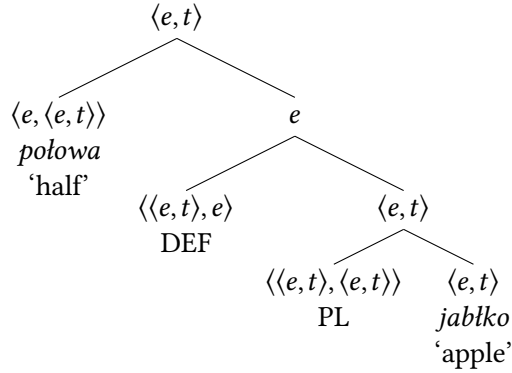


Figure 7.5: Structure of (70)

- (71) Interpretation of (70)
- $\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$
  - $\llbracket \text{PL} \rrbracket = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x[{}^+P(x)]$
  - Function Application: presupposition satisfied  
 $\llbracket \text{PL jabłko} \rrbracket = \lambda x[{}^+\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket(x)] =$   
 $= \lambda x[{}^+(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])(x)]$
  - $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{MAX}(P)]$
  - Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF [PL jabłko]} \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{PL jabłko} \rrbracket) =$   
 $= \text{MAX}(\lambda x[{}^+(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])(x)])$
  - $\llbracket \text{połowa} \rrbracket = \lambda y \lambda x[x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]$
  - Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{połowa [DEF [PL jabłko]} \rrbracket = \lambda x[x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF [PL jabłko]} \rrbracket$   
 $\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\llbracket \text{DEF [PL jabłko]} \rrbracket) \times 0.5] =$   
 $= \lambda x[x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y[{}^+(\lambda z[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(z)])(y))]$   
 $\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\text{MAX}(\lambda x[{}^+(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])(x)])) \times 0.5]$

The sole difference between topology-neutral proportional entity and set partitives is that in the case of the latter the noun is pluralized. The plural marker in (71b) applies to the predicate of MSSC individuals in (71a) and yields a set consisting of sums formed from those singularities. Subsequently, given topology-sensitive transitivity and the mechanism of contextual conditioning the measure function  $\mu$  in (71g) is interpreted as #, i.e., counts the number of MSSC parts of its arguments. As a result, the whole construction denotes plural entities whose cardinality corresponds to approximately 50% of the total number of individuals of the maximal sum of apples.

Despite the straightforward differences resulting from the distinct semantics of part- and half-words, the denotations of topology-neutral explicit and proportional partitives are very much alike. If not modified by a cardinal, both types of expressions can refer to overlapping continuous and discontinuous parts of a singularity as well as to overlapping parts of a plurality. On the other hand, topology-sensitive partitives are significantly more restricted. In the following section, I focus on demonstrating how exactly.

### 7.6.5 Topology-sensitive proportional partitives

An important insight concerning the Polish topology-sensitive half-word *pól* presented in §3.1.1 is that it does not appear in set and mass partitives. It is not a weird property of one partitive word since the same behavior is shared, e.g., with the quarter-word *ćwierć*. In any case, I argue that this distributional constraint results from a particular topological restriction imposed on the arguments of *pól*. An example of a topology-sensitive proportional partitive is provided in (72).

- (72) Topology-sensitive proportional entity partitive  
 pół jabłka  
 half<sub>1</sub> apple.GEN  
 ‘half of the apple’

The structure of (72) I assume at the level of semantic composition is given in Figure 7.6. The complete derivation is presented in (73).

- (73) Interpretation of (72)
- a.  $\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket = \lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$
  - b.  $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P [\text{MAX}(P)]$
  - c. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket) =$   
 $= \text{MAX}(\lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)])$

7 Mereotopological account for subatomic quantification

- d.  $\llbracket \text{pól} \rrbracket = \lambda y : \text{MSSC}(y) \lambda x [x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]$   
 e. Function Application: presupposition satisfied  
 $\llbracket \text{pól} [\text{DEF jabłko}] \rrbracket = \lambda x [x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket$   
 $\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket) \times 0.5] =$   
 $= \lambda x [x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])]$   
 $\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\text{MAX}(\lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])) \times 0.5]$

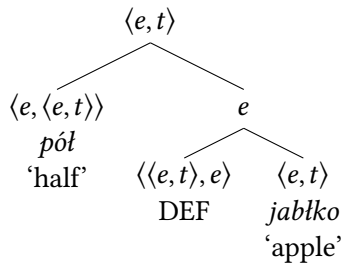


Figure 7.6: Structure of (72)

The derivation in (73) is almost identical to its twin counterpart in (69). However, notice that in (73d) there is a tiny but crucial difference in the semantics of *pól* as proposed in (56). Specifically, *pól* incorporates the integrated individual presupposition, which requires the first argument to be an integrated entity. This constrains the distribution of *pól* to count singulars since plurals and mass terms denote arbitrary sums and scattered entities, respectively, i.e., things distinct from *mssc* objects. However, *pól* does not impose any topological restriction on parts of the relevant individual it yields. The semantics of the whole partitive in (73e) thus states that the denoted set includes both continuous and discontinuous halves. However, as we saw in Chapter 3 there are also partitive words that are restrictive with respect to the topological properties of entities they deliver.

This brings us finally to the most intriguing case of Polish proportional partitives headed by the topology-sensitive half-word *połówka* such as the one in (74).

- (74) Topology-sensitive individuating proportional partitive  
 połówka jabłka  
 half<sub>3</sub> apple.GEN  
 ‘half of the apple’

Though I restrict my focus here to the structure and the interpretation of this example, see Figure 7.7 and (75), respectively, as we saw in §3.2 there are also

other expressions that behave similarly, e.g., the part-word *cząstka* and quarter-word *ćwiartka*.

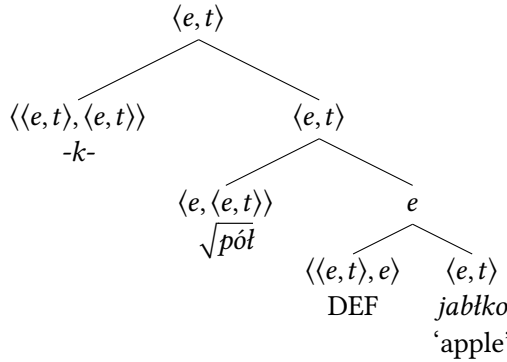


Figure 7.7: Structure of (74)

(75) Interpretation of (74)

- a.  $\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)]$
- b.  $\llbracket \text{DEF} \rrbracket = \lambda P[\text{MAX}(P)]$
- c. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket = \text{MAX}(\llbracket \text{jabłko} \rrbracket) = \text{MAX}(\lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(x)])$
- d.  $\llbracket \sqrt{pół} \rrbracket = \lambda y : \text{IMSSC}(y) \lambda x[x \sqsubset y \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(y) \times 0.5]$
- e. Function Application: presupposition satisfied  
 $\llbracket \sqrt{pół} [\text{DEF jabłko}] \rrbracket =$   
 $= \lambda x[x \sqsubset \llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket \wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\llbracket \text{DEF jabłko} \rrbracket) \times 0.5] =$   
 $\lambda x[x \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])$   
 $\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])) \times 0.5]$
- f.  $\llbracket \text{-k-} \rrbracket = \llbracket \text{IND} \rrbracket = \lambda P \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\pi(P))(x)]$
- g. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \text{IND} [\sqrt{pół} [\text{DEF jabłko}]] \rrbracket =$   
 $= \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\pi(\llbracket \sqrt{pół} [\text{DEF jabłko}] \rrbracket))(x)] =$   
 $= \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\pi(\lambda z[z \sqsubset \text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])$   
 $\wedge \mu(x) \approx \mu(\text{MAX}(\lambda y[\text{MSSC}(\text{APPLE})(y)])) \times 0.5]))(x)]$

The only difference between (73) and (75) lies in that in the former the half-word *pół* is used whereas the latter involves the derivationally complex *połowka*. Thus, the composition in (75a)–(75c) remains unchanged and I will start the discussion

from the step in (75d). As proposed in (58), the morphological complexity of *połówka* translates into its semantic complexity. In particular, I assume that the root  $\sqrt{\text{pól}}$  is a topologically sensitive expression introducing the integrated individual presupposition, see (75d), which ensures that that the half-word combines only with MSSC individuals. On the other hand, the suffix *-k-* is interpreted as the individuating element IND, see (75e), i.e., it restricts the denotation of the partitive to non-overlapping continuous parts. As a result, the whole phrase refers to integrated halves of a contextually unique apple that can be subject to counting.

This concludes the analysis of distinct types of partitive constructions. The relevance of Polish topology-sensitive individuating proportional partitives is that they show that IND can be formally expressed. As demonstrated in §3.4, there are more constructions in different natural languages that can be considered as involving formal exponents of IND. Though I will refrain here from further investigation, if the analysis proposed here is on the right track, I expect to find even more such expressions cross-linguistically. In the next section, I will move on to another type of construction involving subatomic quantification, namely multiplier phrases.

### 7.6.6 Multiplier phrases

In the previous sections, I discussed the composition of different kinds of partitives. The only construction involving numerical expressions discussed so far was the German count explicit partitive in (66) where the cardinal modified an entity partitive headed by the part-word *Teil*. In this section, I will discuss in detail the semantics of constructions involving derived numerical expressions specialized precisely for subatomic quantification, namely multipliers. In order to present the overall picture, I will consider multiplier phrases modified by cardinals exemplified by (76).

- (76) Multiplier phrase modified by a cardinal  
 trzy podwójne hamburgery  
 three double.PL hamburgers  
 ‘three double hamburgers’

I posit that the semantic structure underlying such expressions is essentially as in Figure 7.8, whereas in (77) I provide an exact step-by-step derivation of the main example.

- (77) Interpretation of (76)  
 a.  $\llbracket \text{hamburger} \rrbracket = \lambda x[\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER})(x)]$



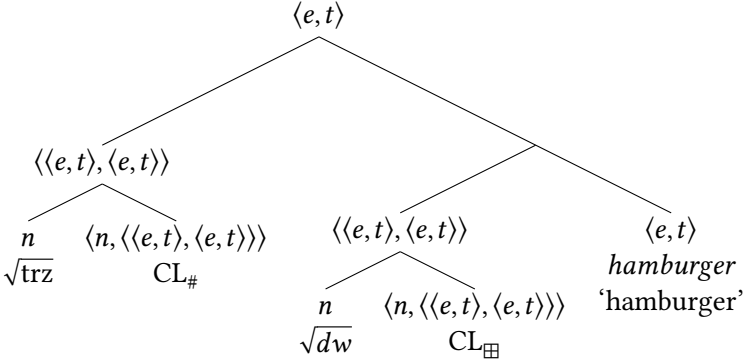


Figure 7.8: Structure of (76)

- b.  $\llbracket \sqrt{dw} \rrbracket = 2$
- c.  $\llbracket \text{CL}_{\boxplus} \rrbracket = \lambda n \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [P(x) \wedge \boxplus(P)(x) = n]$
- d. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \sqrt{dw} \text{CL}_{\boxplus} \rrbracket = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [P(x) \wedge \boxplus(P)(x) = \llbracket \sqrt{dw} \rrbracket] =$   
 $= \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [P(x) \wedge \boxplus(P)(x) = 2]$
- e. Function Application: presupposition satisfied  
 $\llbracket [\sqrt{dw} \text{CL}_{\boxplus}] \text{hamburger} \rrbracket =$   
 $= \lambda x [\llbracket \text{hamburger} \rrbracket(x) \wedge \boxplus(\llbracket \text{hamburger} \rrbracket)(x) = 2] =$   
 $= \lambda x [\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER})(x) \wedge \boxplus(\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER}))(x) = 2]$
- f.  $\llbracket \sqrt{\text{tr}z} \rrbracket = 3$
- g.  $\llbracket \text{CL}_{\#} \rrbracket = \lambda n \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [*P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = n]$
- h. Function Application  
 $\llbracket \sqrt{\text{tr}z} \text{CL}_{\#} \rrbracket = \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [*P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = \llbracket \sqrt{\text{tr}z} \rrbracket] =$   
 $= \lambda P : \text{PMSSC}(P) \lambda x [*P(x) \wedge \#(P)(x) = 3]$
- i. Function Application: presupposition satisfied  
 $\llbracket [\sqrt{\text{tr}z} \text{CL}_{\#}] [\sqrt{dw} \text{CL}_{\boxplus}] \text{hamburger} \rrbracket =$   
 $= \lambda x [* \llbracket [\sqrt{dw} \text{CL}_{\boxplus}] \text{hamburger} \rrbracket(x)$   
 $\wedge \#(\llbracket [\sqrt{dw} \text{CL}_{\boxplus}] \text{hamburger} \rrbracket)(x) = 3] = \lambda x [* \left( \right.$   
 $\left. \lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER})(y) \wedge \boxplus(\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER}))(y) = 2] \right)(x) \wedge$   
 $\# \left( \lambda y [\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER})(y) \wedge \boxplus(\text{MSSC}(\text{HAMBURGER}))(y) = 2] \right)(x)$   
 $= 3]$

In analogy to the previous cases, the noun *hamburger* is a predicate of type  $\langle e, t \rangle$  denoting a set of entities that are MSSC with respect to the property HAMBURGER, i.e., singular hamburgers. On the other hand, as suggested by morphology the

multiplier in (77d) consists of the classifier element  $CL_{\boxplus}$  of type  $\langle n, \langle \langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle \rangle$ , whose number argument, see (77c), is saturated by the number 2 referred to by the numeral root in (77b). Due to the individuation presupposition in the semantics of  $CL_{\boxplus}$  the resulting numerical expression is a predicate modifier selecting only predicates of *MSSC* individuals. Since the noun *hamburger* satisfies this requirement, it can serve as the argument for the multiplier. After the two combine in (77e), the resulting multiplier phrase, i.e., a function from entities to truth values, denotes a set of singular hamburgers such that each includes two patties. This meaning stems from the fact that the  $\boxplus(P)$  measure function defined in (26) returns 2 as the number of parts that are essential for the property *HAMBURGER*, and given the relevant extra-linguistic factors such a part happens to be a patty. Notice also that the fact that the first conjunct in (77e) is not pluralized, unlike in cardinals, results in that the multiplier phrase is a predicate of *MSSC* entities, i.e., it denotes singular double hamburgers. As such it can be modified by the cardinal numeral.

Given the compatible expression, the cardinal in (77h) is ready for the saturation of the predicate variable. It itself is a complex expression of type  $\langle \langle e, t \rangle, \langle e, t \rangle \rangle$  consisting of the numeral root in (77f), whose denotation, i.e., the number 3, serves as the argument for the classifier element  $CL_{\#}$ . After the cardinal composes with the multiplier phrase in (77i), what we obtain is a set of triples of hamburgers with two essential parts each. Counting is done by the measure function  $\#(P)$  which puts *MSSC* individuals in a one-to-one correspondence with numbers and yields the integer corresponding to the total number of objects in a plurality delivered by the \* operator introduced in the first conjunct. The result is exactly what we wanted to derive, i.e., a set of pluralities consisting of three double hamburgers.

This concludes the analysis of some of the expressions involving subatomic quantification. In this study, I focused on several different types of partitives as well as multiplier phrases. I proposed that though both types of constructions quantify over parts of entities, they employ different means to achieve the goal. While partitives employ the proper parthood relation  $\sqsubset$  and in more complicated cases also the individuating element *IND* and cardinals, multipliers utilize a special measure function  $\boxplus(P)$  dedicated to counting essential parts of integrated wholes. In the next section, I will briefly suggest how the analysis I proposed could be extended to cover more peculiar examples such as Italian partitives involving irregular plurals.

## 7.7 Possible extensions

The last part of this chapter concerns a brief informal discussion of possible extensions of the system developed here to other types of constructions in different languages. Though mereotopological structures proposed in this book could interact with other semantic phenomena making the empirical landscape even more complex, I believe that the perspective argued for in this chapter offers an inspiring perspective for the study of such possible interactions.

### 7.7.1 Topology-sensitive partitives in other languages

In principle, a number of distinct kinds of topology-sensitive proportional partitives discussed in §3.4 could be accounted for by incorporating the meaning of the individuating element IND into the semantics of some morpheme. For instance, if the approach proposed here is on the right track and there are no additional facts I have not reported here concerning phrases such as (78), a straightforward application of the analysis appears to be plausible. Recall that the phrase is reported to felicitously refer only to a half of the flag that constitutes a continuous part of the whole, see §3.4. It seems that the morpheme *eine* is what encodes IND, which accounts for the reported results of the flag test.

- (78) German topology-sensitive proportional partitive  
 die eine Hälfte der Fahne  
 the one half the.GEN flag  
 ‘the half of the flag’

Similar, in principle the account developed here could be extended to English constructions such as (79). However, most probably this case would be more challenging since it might be necessary to capture interactions between the partitive word and the determiner, on the one hand, as well as with the preposition *of*, on the other.

- (79) English topology-sensitive proportional partitive  
 a half of the flag

Furthermore, it might turn out that a similar analysis is appropriate for the Mandarin classifier construction in (80). Here, the classifier *miàn* is arguably responsible for introducing IND.

- (80) Mandarin topology-sensitive proportional partitive  
bàn-miàn guó qí  
half-CLF national flag  
'a half of the national flag'

Of course, much more work needs to be done to verify whether what I proposed in fact accounts for the data from German, Mandarin, and other languages displaying a similar pattern. However, I believe that at this stage of the research it is a plausible hypothesis to postulate that what makes topology-sensitive partitives different from their topology-neutral counterparts is the fact that the former involve a formal exponent of IND.

The next section will be dedicated to the discussion of how the proposed analysis could be applied to yet another type of expression.

### 7.7.2 Italian partitives with irregular plurals

The last case of a possible extension of the developed system to be discussed here concerns count explicit partitives involving irregular plurals in Italian, such as those in (81).

- (81) Italian partitive with irregular plurals  
due parti delle mura  
two parts of-the wall.COLL  
'two parts of the walled complex'

In Chapter 2, a considerable amount of attention was dedicated to the intriguing effect these expressions give rise to. We saw that at least a subset of Italian irregular plurals does not merely encode plurality but also implies a certain spatial configuration that the individual entities making up a sum remain in. Arguably, this kind of behavior can be captured in terms of the topological notion of connection. The Italian data served as a crucial source of evidence for the role of integrity in quantification over parts. In particular, the evidence strongly suggests that entities are countable as long as they are conceptualized as spatially continuous regardless whether they are singularities or pluralities.

Given the arguments in favor of the connected nature of pluralities denoted by the relevant class of Italian irregular plurals, I postulate that it is plausible to model them in terms of clusters (see Grimm 2012b: p. 144). As discussed in §6.2.2, a cluster is a special type of plural individual that consists of a number of topologically arranged objects. It is defined in terms of the  $\tau_C$  relation formulated in (35) in §6.2.2, repeated here as (82). Specifically, the definition in (36) in §6.2.2,

repeated here as (83), states that an entity is a cluster if it involves a plurality of individuals that are transitively connected, i.e., form a connected sequence.

(82) Transitively connected (revised)

$$\tau C(x, y, P, C, Z) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} z_1 = x \wedge z_n = y \wedge \forall i[1 \leq i < n \rightarrow C(z_i, z_{i+1})] \\ \wedge \forall i[1 \leq i \leq n \rightarrow P(z_i)], \text{ where } Z = \langle z_1, \dots, z_n \rangle$$

(Entities  $x$  and  $y$  are transitively connected relative to a property  $P$ , a connection relation  $C$ , and a finite sequence of entities  $Z$ , when all members of  $Z$  satisfy  $P$  and  $x$  and  $y$  are connected through the sequence of  $z_i$ s in  $Z$ .)

(83) Cluster (revised)

$$\text{CLSTR}(x, P, C) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \exists Z[x = \sqcup Z \wedge \forall z \forall z' \in Z \exists Y \subseteq Z[\tau C(z, z', P, C, Y)]]$$

(An entity  $x$  is a cluster relative to a property  $P$  and a connection relation  $C$  iff  $x$  is a sum of entities falling under the same property which are all transitively connected relative to  $Y$  which is a subset of a sequence  $Z$  under the same property and connection relation.)

Intuitively, clusters are entities that are conceptualized as bundled pluralities whose minimal units are cognitively not salient enough or insignificant to be considered objects in their own rights. For instance, a pile of rice or a heap of gravel constitute clusters since each minimal unit, i.e., a grain or a pebble, in a pile or a heap is connected to another minimal unit. Since  $\tau C$  is relativized to a connection, clusters can involve bundled pluralities of entities that are externally or even proximately connected.<sup>38</sup> In the case of Italian irregular plurals, the former would correspond, e.g., to the referents of *mura* ‘walls (in a complex)’, whereas the latter might be useful to model the denotation of, e.g., *ossa* ‘bones (in a skeleton)’.

If the proposed analysis of Italian irregular plurals in terms of clusters is correct, one would probably need to elaborate on the meaning of cardinal numerals. Notice that clusters can consist of parts that are MSSC entities, e.g., individual bones, as well as sequences of individuals, e.g., pluralities of transitively connected bones. This might require to develop a more general device able to capture more fine-grained shades of integrity than the current formulation of the individuation presupposition. Though such an enterprise lies beyond the scope of this study and I leave it for future research, I believe that the account proposed here provides an inspiring background for such an attempt.

<sup>38</sup>Those connection can be formally captured by the notions of EC and PC introduced in (30) and (37), respectively.

## 7.8 Summary

In this chapter, I presented a formal account for subatomic quantification in natural language grounded in the conceptual framework described in Chapter 5. I rejected atomicity as a useful concept for that purpose and instead proposed an analysis based on notions developed within mereotopology, i.e., the theory of wholes extending standard mereology with topological distinctions, introduced in Chapter 6. The mereotopological account for nominal semantics allows us to get rid of atomicity as an undesirable notion as well as to distinguish between singularities and pluralities in terms of the distinction between part-whole structures that either involve or do not involve the topological notion of connectedness. In particular, I adopted a view on which singular count nouns denote sets of integrated objects modeled in terms of *mssc* individuals that can be pluralized in order to yield sets of pluralities of such entities. On the other hand, I postulated a compositional semantics for numerical expressions such as cardinals and multipliers that involves numeral roots treated here as names of numbers as well as classifiers that turn expressions of type *n* into predicate modifiers. In particular, I proposed that those classifier elements employ measure functions, i.e., operations that relate entities with integers. While cardinals utilize a measure function that simply counts *mssc* entities, multipliers involve quantification over essential parts of an individual. Compatibility of the numerical expressions in question is ensured by the individuation presupposition that requires the nodes cardinals and multipliers combine with to be predicates of *mssc* objects.

Another component of the analysis regarded the semantics of partitive words. Given the advantages of mereotopology, it was possible to model subatomic quantification without postulating sorted domain with different parthood relations defined over them. Instead, particular partitive words were treated as expressions employing the unified parthood relation. Specifically, what they do is that they select an entity and return a set of its parts. Different types of partitive words differ with respect to the nature of those parts. For instance, part-words denote sets of any proper parts, whereas half-words refer to parts that constitute approximately 50% of the cardinality of a plurality or the volume of an *mssc* individual or a scattered entity such as substance. On the other hand, topology-neutral partitive words denote all kinds of overlapping continuous as well as discontinuous parts, and thus are compatible with singular count nouns, mass terms, and plurals, whereas denotations of topology-sensitive partitive words are more restricted. For instance, the Polish half-word *pól* introduces the integrated individual presupposition, which imposes a constraint that it can only select *mssc* entities. This fact explains why it does not combine with mass and plural comple-

ments. On the other hand, morphologically complex *połówka* is a compositional expression involving the suffix *-k-*, which I argue is a formal exponent of the individuating element that partitions the set of parts so that overlapping halves are excluded as well as removes those parts that are discontinuous. As a result, the extension of a partitive headed by *połówka* involves only a set of disjoint integrated halves that could serve as an argument for cardinals.

Though the individuating element is formally expressed in the morphology of some Polish partitive words, it can also be silent. I argued that that is the case in, e.g., German count explicit partitives since, given the counting principles postulated in Chapter 5, one can only count non-overlapping continuous parts as one. The chapter was concluded by considerations how the proposed system could be extended to some of the other expressions discussed in this study including Italian partitives involving irregular plurals, which could be analyzed as clusters, i.e., bundled pluralities of transitively connected entities. However, the precise implementation of the suggested ideas is left for future research.





## 8 Conclusion

The research on different aspects of quantification and part-whole structures in natural language is abundant and since the early days of formal semantics it has continually led to a better understanding of certain properties of the language faculty. Nevertheless, one perspective seems to be somewhat neglected, namely to what extent the way in which the relationships between parts within a whole are conceptualized is relevant for grammar. The main aim of this book was to contribute to our understanding of quantification in natural language by exploring the so far understudied domain of subatomic quantification, i.e., quantification over parts of singular individuals. The mainstream perspective is that singular individuals are atomic building blocks of the denotations of singular count nouns. The consequence of such an atomicity-based approach is that such entities are also assumed to lack linguistically relevant internal structure. I provided what I believe is compelling evidence for an alternative view.

The relevance of the phenomenon of subatomic quantification for natural language semantics suggests that the material part-whole structure of singular individuals is linguistically accessible. Therefore, the denotations of nouns such as *cat* and *apple* are treated as consisting of mereological atoms, i.e., entities with no proper parts. Instead, I argued for an approach which allows us to distinguish between different types of part-whole structures based on the way in which parts are arranged with respect to each other. In order to support this view, I explored various aspects of meaning of a broad range of linguistic expressions, such as different types of partitive constructions, certain types of adjectives, as well as multipliers, from a cross-linguistic perspective.

One of the key findings presented in this book is the significance of the topological notion of integrity with respect to part-whole structures encoded in nominal semantics. Non-trivial properties of different types of expressions investigated in this book suggest that there is one unified parthood relation for various types of entities. At the same time, different part-whole structures result from distinct topological relations holding between particular elements. Entities conceptualized as integrated wholes, i.e., objects whose parts stick together, differ from those whose parts are not bound by any topological constraints or, alternatively, are arranged in some other type of spatial configuration. This concerns

both wholes, e.g., the prototypical referents of singular count nouns and regular plurals, and parts, e.g., spatially continuous pieces as opposed to arbitrary discontinuous portions of matter.

The major claim of the book is that subatomic quantification is subject to the very same constraints as quantification over wholes. Specifically, only entities that are conceptualized as non-overlapping integrated contiguous objects can be counted as one, be it either wholes or parts. In order to capture this generalization, I proposed a universal mechanism which allows for counting of both entire objects and their parts. Its formal implementation is based on the theory of wholes called mereotopology, which extends standard mereological parthood with topological notions such as connectedness. Building on this framework, I developed a system which derives the predicted semantics of representative constructions discussed in the empirical part of the book. Different aspects of their meaning arise as a result of the interaction between topology, partitivity, and numerical quantification. An important advantage of the proposed approach is that it does not define countability in terms of atomicity, since devising counting as quantification over mereological atoms, i.e., entities that have no proper parts, is very problematic for subatomic quantification.

This chapter concludes the book by summarizing its empirical insights as well as theoretical contributions to the study of quantification in natural language. First, I will provide an overall summary, then I will discuss some of the open questions and possible topics for future investigations.

### 8.1 Overall summary

As outlined in Chapter 1, this book was intended to contribute to the field of formal semantics by exploring subatomic quantification. Throughout its pages, I provided a broad range of novel evidence indicating its significance in natural language and developed a mereotopological approach accounting for the observed phenomena. The book is divided into two conceptual parts. In the first part comprising Chapters 2, 3, and 4, I provided a broad range of evidence indicating that natural language involves elaborate means to express subatomic quantification. The second part involving Chapters 5, 6, and 7 was dedicated to developing a conceptual framework that would provide means to model quantification over both wholes and parts, and a formal approach based on it that would account for a representative subset of the observed phenomena.

The data discussed in Chapter 2 provide cross-linguistic evidence that the same partitive word, e.g., *part*, *half*, and *most*, can simultaneously appear both

in entity and set partitives, i.e., constructions that refer to parts of singularities and pluralities and typically combine with singular and plural DPs, respectively. This fact indicates that such expressions are able to operate both at the atomic and subatomic level depending on what structure is provided by the embedded DP (see Moltmann 1997; 1998). On the other hand, explicit partitives modified by cardinal numerals can only quantify over material parts of singular individuals, irrespective of whether the complement DP is singular or plural, see Table 8.1, where ‘bare’ and ‘count’ refer to bare explicit and count explicit partitives, respectively. This might suggest that since partitive words have distinct properties in different structures, they differ significantly after all (Schwarzschild 1996).

Table 8.1: Properties of partitive words in explicit partitives

	SINGULARS		PLURALS	
	bare	count	bare	count
subatomic quantification	✓	✓	*	✓
quantification over wholes	*	*	✓	*

Nonetheless, the crucial piece of data coming from Italian partitives involving irregular plurals, i.e., expressions that imply not only plurality, but also cohesion or integrity of parts (Ojeda 1995; Acquaviva 2008), provides evidence to the contrary. In particular, when such a partitive is modified by the cardinal numeral, the whole phrase can get either a part-of-a-singularity reading or a part-of-a-plurality interpretation as long as the parts making up the plurality constitute an integrated entity. Therefore, countability results from the interplay between the meaning of a particular partitive word and the semantic properties of a singular or plural DP it combines with. If a plural expression denotes a plural entity constituted by a cohesive, i.e., spatially related, sum of parts, quantification over continuous parts of such a sum is possible, see Table 8.2.

Table 8.2: Properties of Italian *parte* ‘part’ in explicit partitives

	SINGULARS		REGULAR PL		IRREGULAR PL	
	bare	count	bare	count	bare	count
subatomic quantification	✓	✓	*	✓	✓	✓
quantification over wholes	*	*	✓	*	✓	✓

Furthermore, I showed that at least in some languages the parallelism between entity and set partitives cannot be explained in terms of semantic ambiguity of partitive words. Instead, I argued that what allows for the cross-linguistically widely attested distribution of those expressions is the fact that singulars and plurals actually involve part-whole structures that are based on the same unified parthood relation. Crucially, what distinguishes the two is an additional notion that is responsible for how parts are topologically arranged with respect to each other. In other words, I posited that the intuitive distinction between integrated wholes and arbitrary sums of parts is reflected in grammar by the syntactic distinction between count singulars and regular plurals, respectively. In addition, the evidence from Italian irregular plurals shows that there are natural language expressions designating entities that are similar to plurals in that they comprise a number of integrated objects, but at the same time their sum is arranged in such a way that it constitutes a cluster.

Chapter 3 was dedicated to the systematic exploration of the role the topological notion of integrity plays with respect to part-whole structures and subatomic quantification in particular. I provided evidence that shows that the distinction between topology-neutral and topology-sensitive partitive words is lexicalized in Polish. Specifically, Polish has three morphologically distinct half-words, i.e., *połowa*, *pół*, and *połówka*, all ‘half’. When applied to a DP denoting an entity, they all yield its part constituting approximately 50% of the whole. However, where they differ is the type of entity they select for as well as the type of part they return. Given different distributional and referential properties of each expression in question, I interpreted the alternation in terms of topological sensitivity. While the half-word *połowa* is topology-neutral, i.e., it simply measures halves of any type of entity and yields a topologically indeterminate portion of a whole, *pół* and *połówka* are semantically more complex. Similarly to its topology-neutral counterpart, in the case of *pół* the outcome of quantification is either a continuous or a discontinuous half. However, unlike *połowa* it selects only for integrated wholes, i.e., individuated entities that come in one piece. On the other hand, the meaning of the morphologically most complex *połówka* is even more restricted. While it shares selectional restrictions with *pół*, in addition it imposes topological constraints on the extension of the resulting partitive construction. As a result, the whole partitive can only be true of a continuous integrated part constituting approximately 50% of the volume of an individuated object, see Table 8.3.

Similar alternations are attested in different classes of other partitive expressions in Polish, e.g., piece-words and quarter-words. In each of the examined cases, the notion of integrity played a crucial role in predicting possible denotations of distinct types of partitives. Even more interestingly, cross-linguistic in-

Table 8.3: Denotations of Polish half-words

	CONTINUOUS PART	DISCONTINUOUS PART
połowa	✓	✓
pół	✓	✓
połówka	✓	*

vestigation revealed that the phenomenon observed is not a Polish idiosyncrasy. Instead, it appears in several other languages. Though the means particular languages employ to express certain spatial configurations differ, e.g., English utilizes determiners whereas Mandarin uses classifier semantics, the resulting effect is similar and demonstrates the relevance of the topological notion of integrity in subatomic quantification.

In addition, I discussed the contrast between two types of Polish whole-adjectives (see Moltmann 1997; Morzycki 2002), i.e., *cały* ‘whole’ and *kompletny* ‘complete’, which emphasizes two distinct aspects of wholeness, namely maximality and integrity. While the former involves both, the latter does imply that no part is missing but does not indicate that they remain in a particular topological configuration, see 8.4. The significance of the presented data lies primarily in revealing the relevance of topological relations holding between parts of individuals forcing us to recognize that natural language semantics is sensitive to whether parts come in one piece or constitute discontinuous entities.

Table 8.4: Interpretations of Polish whole-adjectives

	MAXIMALITY	INTEGRITY
cały	✓	✓
kompletny	✓	*

The final piece of data was discussed in Chapter 4. It concerns a neglected class of numerical expressions, namely multipliers such as English *double*, that display non-trivial quantificational properties. Specifically, I provided evidence demonstrating that multipliers are specialized for subatomic quantification, i.e., they count cognitively salient parts that are essential for a whole to be considered having a certain property. In many cases, those parts are self-sufficient, i.e., have themselves a property comparable to that of the whole, but sometimes they are

## 8 Conclusion

just intuitively the most salient elements. Though the distribution of multipliers involves also abstract entities denoted by event nominals as well as role nouns, I argued that the semantic behavior observed in combination with singular count nouns constitutes the basic quantificational mechanism that can be further extended to other types of entities. Interestingly, when the multiplier combines with the mass term, it forces a portion, i.e., count interpretation of the modified noun.

Furthermore, I discussed Slavic multipliers that display morphological complexity suggesting semantic compositionality. For instance, the Russian multiplier *dvojnój* ‘double’ consists of the numeral root corresponding to the number 2 as well as some additional morphology including a special multiplicative affix. This fact indicates that multipliers share with cardinals reference to integers, but differ in that they are devised to count entities of a different type, see Table 8.5. In particular, cardinals are semantically equipped to count wholes. Though they can be used in subatomic quantification, e.g., in count explicit partitives, this is only possible when they combine with a partitive word. In such a case, however, entities designated by the whole partitive phrase are treated as objects in their own right. Hence, the source of subatomic quantification is the partitive, and the cardinal simply counts provided entities in their relative entirety. On the other hand, multipliers always quantify over parts of objects referred to by a modified nominal. Given the cross-linguistically widespread appearance of multipliers, the examined data set shows that analogously to cardinals, whose purpose is to count wholes, natural language developed expressions dedicated to numerical subatomic quantification.

Table 8.5: Properties of cardinals and multipliers

	CARDINALS	MULTIPLIERS
subatomic quantification	*	✓
quantification over wholes	✓	*

In Chapter 5, I provided a general conceptual framework intended as a basis for developing a formal account for subatomic quantification in natural language. I suggested how the linguistic evidence discussed in Chapters 2, 3, and 4 could be linked with insights provided by cognitive psychology. Specifically, extensive research on perception and cognitive development indicates that since early childhood we conceptualize objects, i.e., integrated wholes, in a different way

than other types of entities. Furthermore, even young children possess the ability to simultaneously perceive a whole as an object in its own right, as well as a collection of parts, and this capacity guides their linguistic development. Finally, human number sense seems to be sensitive to the intuitive notion of integrity. Specifically, young children always count each separate integrated physical entity as one.

Based on both linguistic and psychological evidence, I presented three claims constituting the conceptual core of the book. I postulated that natural language is sensitive to the topological notion of integrity, which manifests itself in how nominal lexicon is classified into different grammatical categories. For instance, count singular nouns designate entities conceptualized as integrated wholes. On the other hand, plural nominals presuppose parts of their referents to be integrated wholes but impose no topological constraints on them, i.e., denote arbitrary sums of individuals. The second claim concerns the general counting principles, i.e., a set of rules constraining what can be counted. Specifically, the principle of non-overlap ensures that enumerated entities are disjoint, i.e., each thing can be counted once and once only. The principle of maximality demands that counting involves entities in their mereological entirety, i.e., no part is left out. Finally, the principle of integrity guarantees that an entity that can be put in a one-to-one correspondence with numbers needs to be conceptualized as an object that comes in one piece. All things considered, the general counting principles ensure that only sets consisting exclusively of elements that are conceptualized as discrete integrated objects can be enumerated. Importantly, there is no reference to atomicity in the postulated quantificational mechanism. Finally, the third claim extends the general counting principles to subatomic quantification. I posit that the set of constraints described above is a universal mechanism applicable both at the level of wholes and at the level of parts.

In Chapter 6, I introduced a theory of wholes called mereotopology which enhances standard mereology based on the parthood relation with additional topological features (Casati & Varzi 1999; for linguistic application, see Grimm 2012a,b). Within this framework, the primitive notion of connectedness enables us to derive complex notions capturing distinct configurations of parts within a part-whole structure. One such notion is a property of being maximally strongly self-connected (mssc), which allows us to capture an intuition on what it means to be an integrated whole. Specifically, an mssc entity is an object whose every part overlaps the whole, and anything else that has a relevant property and overlaps it is part of it. Such a perspective seems to correspond neatly to the intuitive view on individuals as configurations of parts arranged in a certain manner

## 8 Conclusion

rather than atomic elements with no proper parts, and thus constitutes an advantageous alternative for accounts based on atomicity. This alternative view turns out to be of significant value in modeling quantification over both wholes and parts.

Finally, in Chapter 7 I developed a formal account for subatomic quantification based on the conceptual background and mereotopological notion of *MSSC* discussed above. In particular, I argued that an approach building on *MSSC* entities instead of atoms is more auspicious in modeling quantification over parts. For instance, a significant advantage of a mereotopological account is that it does not require postulating sorted domains with different parthood relations defined over them (Link 1983). The distinction between part-whole structures associated with singular count nouns and regular plurals can be recast in terms of connectedness. While the former encode that the elements of their denotations are *MSSC* entities, the latter require parts of their referents to be such individuals but impose no topological constraints on pluralities thereof. Furthermore, I proposed that numerical expressions including cardinals and multipliers are complex semantic expressions derived from names of numbers via different overt or covert classifiers specialized in counting distinct types of objects, e.g., *MSSC* entities and cognitively salient parts thereof, respectively. The last piece of the puzzle concerned how to capture different semantic interpretations of distinct types of topology-neutral and topology-sensitive partitive words. For this purpose, I proposed a special individuating element that can be either expressed formally, e.g., as a special suffix on Polish topology-sensitive partitive words, or remain null. In any case, what this individuating element does is that it partitions the set of entities denoted by a partitive and introduces the *MSSC* constraint relative to a given partition. This guarantees that the extension of a whole partitive involves only non-overlapping continuous parts. Such integrated parts are conceptualized as objects in their own right within a part-whole structure of an individual, and thus can be quantified over, similarly to other *MSSC* entities. With these components in place, I provided step-by-step derivations of multiplier phrases as well as different types of partitives that account for distinct interpretations of constructions involving topology-neutral and topology-sensitive partitive words. In the proposed system, distinct semantic effects arise as a result of different interactions between partitivity, topology, and quantification. Its great advantage is that it provides an explanation for the topological phenomena concerning reference to continuous and discontinuous parts in different types of partitives, an issue that previous approaches failed not only to account for but even to acknowledge (e.g., Chierchia 2010).



## 8.2 Open questions and future research

The account developed in this book provides an explanation for a number of phenomena in natural language. I believe its contribution is valuable both from a theoretical perspective and in terms of data it covers. However, some questions remain and many issues require further investigation. One of the most serious challenges concerns the interpretation of count explicit partitives with the embedded plural DP, as discussed in §2.2.3. Unlike standard explicit set partitives, such expressions only get a part-of-a-singularity reading. I argued that this effect is due to the general counting principles which require that a counted entity constitutes an integrated whole. Since pluralities fail to satisfy this condition, the only possibility how a relevant phrase could be interpreted involves quantification over material parts. Nonetheless, the issue concerning the interpretation of the morpho-syntactic plural on the downstairs nominal remains open. The question of what the exact semantic contribution of number in such a structure is (if any) requires further investigation. It might be the case that in such constructions the plural is semantically void. However, there is the intuition that within a set of parts denoted by a count explicit partitive each element is part of a different object. At this point, I can only hypothesize that the mechanism deriving this effect is pragmatic in nature. However, it might also be the case that the plural is interpreted as a distributive operator, analogously to what has been postulated to account for covariational uses of *different* (see, e.g., Beck 2000; Brasoveanu 2008; Dotlačil 2010). Before a detailed analysis could be proposed, definitely more research is required.

As indicated in §7.7, the proposed account can be easily extended to topology-sensitive partitives in other languages than Polish and German as well as to other types of constructions involving subatomic quantification. However, the question whether such an extension is empirically appropriate will in each case require careful consideration. After examining the cross-linguistic data presented in §3.4, at first sight it seems plausible that, e.g., in English explicit and proportional partitives it is the determiner that introduces the individuating element. It appears that the same semantics is associated with a special classifier that follows a partitive word in Mandarin. However, more tests need to be applied to reveal the real nature of the interaction between topology, partitivity, and the determiner or classifier semantics, respectively.

A further issue concerns a detailed analysis of Italian irregular plurals (Ojeda 1995; Acquaviva 2008). Though the data from count explicit partitives involving such expressions were of great significance for capturing the nature of the interaction between partitivity and numerical quantification, the proper semantic

## 8 Conclusion

treatment of such constructions would require accommodating more complex topological notions. Although this task calls for another enterprise, I believe this study provides a neat framework for pursuing it, see §7.7.2. A potentially interesting topic concerns the investigation into partitives in languages displaying the collective-singulative number alternation (Grimm 2012a,b). Moreover, if the proposed analysis is on the right track, effects similar to what we have observed in partitives with irregular plurals in Italian should also be detectable in Slavic partitives with topologically sensitive derived mass nouns that denote a plurality of discrete objects forming a cluster (Grimm & Dočekal 2021) as well as swarm nouns (Henderson 2017). A pilot study concerning Czech and Polish suggests that this is in fact the case, yet more work needs to be done before a conclusion can be drawn.

So far, whole-adjectives have not received a lot of attention in the semantic literature. In this book, I argued that different types of Polish expressions of this kind provide evidence for distinguishing between maximality and integrity, see §3.5.2. However, a detailed analysis of the meaning of whole-adjectives awaits to be developed. As a starting point, one could consider an interaction between universal quantification at the subatomic level and the individuating element encoding topological integrity or some similar component. The idea that whole-adjectives could be interpreted as universal quantifiers over parts has already been proposed (Moltmann 1997). Nevertheless, careful investigations into scope dependencies and related factors are required in order to test whether such treatment is empirically plausible (see Morzycki 2002 for potentially problematic data).

Another area where the proposed perspective could be applied concerns adverbials quantifying over parts of a singularity such as *mostly*, *wholly*, *largely* (see Morzycki 2002) as well as *all wet* (see Schwarzschild 1996: pp. 162–170). Such explorations would most probably require extending the account advocated here with the insights of the prolific research on scale structures (e.g., Kennedy & McNally 1999; 2005). If both approaches turn out to be compatible, it potentially opens up a new perspective on the opposition between partial and total predicates, e.g., *dirty*, *wet*, and *touch*, as opposed to *clean*, *dry*, and *eat* (e.g., Yoon 1996; Rotstein & Winter 2004).

A separate subject concerns the interpretation of multipliers with event nominals, role and abstract nouns as well as collectives. In §4.2, I suggested that extending ontology with additional types for events as well as social roles will allow us to extend the basic mechanism proposed to account for the semantic behavior of multipliers modifying concrete nouns to more abstract types of objects. However, the exact implementation of the idea requires careful consideration

and rigorous study. It might turn out that a more general notion is necessary or, alternatively, that several derived concepts will prove more advantageous in tackling the distribution of multipliers across the board. In any case, figuring this out seems to be an intriguing challenge that would almost certainly provide a novel perspective on quantification in natural language.

If the approach I have argued for is correct, I expect that scrupulous cross-linguistic investigation will reveal even more types of constructions indicating the relevance of topological relations within part-whole structures. Though a number of directions worth examining has already been indicated, e.g., adjectival half-words in German and Romance, I believe that there are even more parts of the lexicon that are sensitive to topological relations at the subatomic level. One potential example is a class of expressions I refer to as verbs of separation such as *separate*, *dismantle*, and *dissolve*, mentioned briefly in §2.3.1. At first blush, their meaning seems to affect the topological component of part-whole structures. Examining them from the perspective developed here might be a promising enterprise that would shed light on subatomic quantification in the verbal domain. It seems that an especially auspicious area of research concerns Slavic verbal morphology with its various prefixes and aspectual distinctions (e.g., Filip 1999).

Furthermore, I believe that rigorous experimental investigation could also shed new light on subatomic quantification, as it did in other areas of the field. For instance, what would be of significant interest is the exploration of the relative strength of topological inferences in different types of constructions cross-linguistically. It might be informative to compare structures that encode the individuating element formally such as Polish and German topology-sensitive proportional partitives with constructions where a similar effect arises pragmatically.

To conclude, I hope that this study provides a valuable perspective on previously neglected semantic phenomena in natural language. Though I presented a number of novel observations concerning distinct types of relatively well-studied constructions as well as genuine insights concerning expressions that so far have not received attention in the study of meaning, I expect that many more obscure regions await to be explored. I believe that a detailed map of the phenomena related to subatomic quantification in natural language can only emerge as a result of careful systematic typological as well as experimental research. This is, however, where other journeys are to begin.



# References

- Abbott, Barbara. 1996. Doing without a Partitive Constraint. In Jacob Hoeksema (ed.), *Partitives: Studies on the syntax and semantics of partitive and related constructions*, 25–56. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter. DOI: 10.1515/9783110908985.25.
- Acquaviva, Paolo. 2008. *Lexical plurals: A morphosemantic approach*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Agrillo, Christian, Laura Piffer, Angelo Bisazza & Brian Butterworth. 2012. Evidence for two numerical systems that are similar in humans and guppies. *PLoS ONE* 7(2). e31923. DOI: 10.1371/journal.pone.0031923.
- Aikhenvald, Alexandra Y. 2000. *Classifiers: A typology of noun categorization devices*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Alexiadou, Artemis. 2011. Plural mass nouns and the morpho-syntax of number. In Mary Byram Washburn, Katherine McKinney-Bock, Erika Varis, Ann Sawyer & Barbara Tomaszewicz (eds.), *WCCFL: Proceedings of the 28th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics*, 33–41. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.
- Allan, Keith. 1980. Nouns and countability. *Language* 56(3). 541–567. DOI: 10.2307/414449.
- Alonso-Ovalle, Luis & Paula Menéndez-Benito. 2003. Some epistemic indefinites. In Makoto Kadowaki & Shigeto Kawahara (eds.), *Proceedings of the North East Linguistic Society* 33, 1–12. Amherst, MA: GLSA.
- Anttila, Arto & Vivienne Fong. 2000. The partitive constraint in Optimality Theory. *Journal of Semantics* 17(4). 281–314. DOI: 10.1093/jos/17.4.281.
- Apresjan, Juri, Igor Boguslavsky, Boris Iomdin, Leonid Iomdin, Andrei Sannikov & Victor Sizov. 2006. A syntactically and semantically tagged corpus of Russian: State of the art and prospects. In Nicoletta Calzolari, Khalid Choukri, Aldo Gangemi, Bente Maegaard, Joseph Mariani, Jan Odijk & Daniel Tapias (eds.), *Proceedings of the Fifth International Conference on Language Resources and Evaluation (LREC'06)*, 1378–1381. Genoa: European Language Resources Association.
- Arsenijević, Boban. 2017. Gender, like classifiers, specifies the type of partition: Evidence from Serbo-Croatian. In Jessica Kantarovich, Tran Truong & Orest

## References

- Xherija (eds.), *Proceedings from the Annual Meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society 52*, vol. 52, 21–37. Chicago, IL: CLS.
- Artstein, Ron & Nissim Francez. 2003. Plural times and temporal modification. In Paul Dekker & Robert van Rooy (eds.), *Proceedings of the 14th Amsterdam Colloquium*, 63–68. Amsterdam: ILLC. <https://hdl.handle.net/11245/1.220817>.
- Asbury, Anna. 2007. Towards a typology of morphological case. *Nordlyd* 33(1). 120–148.
- Asher, Nicholas. 1993. *Reference to abstract objects in discourse: A philosophical semantics for natural language metaphysics*. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Asher, Nicholas. 2011. *Lexical meaning in context: A web of words*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Bach, Emmon. 1986a. Natural language metaphysics. In Ruth Barcan Marcus, Georg J. W. Dorn & Paul Weingartner (eds.), *Logic, Methodology and Philosophy of Science VII: Proceedings of the Seventh International Congress of Logic, Methodology and Philosophy of Science*, 573–595. Amsterdam: Elsevier.
- Bach, Emmon. 1986b. The algebra of events. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 9(1). 5–16. DOI: 10.1007/BF00627432.
- Bach, Emmon & Wynn Chao. 2012. The metaphysics of natural language(s). In Ruth Kempson, Tim Fernando & Nicholas Asher (eds.), *Philosophy of linguistics*, 175–196. Amsterdam: Elsevier.
- Bale, Alan & David Barner. 2009. The interpretation of functional heads: Using comparatives to explore the mass/count distinction. *Journal of Semantics* 26(3). 217–252. DOI: 10.1093/jos/ffp003.
- Bale, Alan & Jessica Coon. 2014. Classifiers are for numerals, not for nouns: Consequences for the mass/count distinction. *Linguistic Inquiry* 45(4). 695–707. DOI: 10.1162/LING\_a\_00170.
- Bale, Alan, Michaël Gagnon & Hrayr Khanjian. 2011. Cross-linguistic representations of numerals and number marking. In Nan Li & David Lutz (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 20*, 582–598. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v20i0.2552.
- Barker, Chris. 1992. Group terms in English: Representing groups as atoms. *Journal of Semantics* 9(1). 69–93. DOI: 10.1093/jos/9.1.69.
- Barker, Chris. 1998. Partitives, double genitives and anti-uniqueness. *Natural Language & Linguistic Theory* 16(4). 679–717. DOI: 10.1023/A:1005917421076.
- Barner, David & Jesse Snedeker. 2005. Quantity judgments and individuation: Evidence that mass nouns count. *Cognition* 97(1). 41–66. DOI: 10.1016/j.cognition.2004.06.009.
- Barwise, Jon & Robin Cooper. 1981. Generalized quantifiers and natural language. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 4(2). 159–219. DOI: 10.1007/BF00350139.

- Beck, Sigrid. 2000. The semantics of ‘different’: Comparison operator and relational adjective. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 23(2). 101–139. DOI: 10.1023/A:1005566722022.
- Beck, Sigrid. 2001. Reciprocals are definites. *Natural Language Semantics* 9(1). 69–138. DOI: 10.1023/A:1012203407127.
- Beck, Sigrid & Uli Sauerland. 2000. Cumulation is needed: A reply to Winter (2000). *Natural Language Semantics* 8(4). 349–371. DOI: 10.1023/A:1011240827230.
- Bennet, Michael R. 1974. *Some extensions of a Montague fragment of English*. Los Angeles, CA: University of California. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Bierwisch, Manfred. 1990. Event nominalizations: Proposals and problems. *Acta Linguistica Hungarica* 40(1/2). 19–84. <https://www.jstor.org/stable/44306682>.
- Böhm, Jennifer, Sönke Scherzer, Elzbieta Krol, Ines Kreuzer, Katharina von Meyer, Christian Lorey, Thomas D. Mueller, Lana Shabala, Isabel Monte, Roberto Solano, Khaled A.S. Al-Rasheid, Heinz Rennenberg, Sergey Shabala, Erwin Neher & Rainer Hedrich. 2016. The Venus flytrap *Dionaea muscipula* counts prey-induced action potentials to induce sodium uptake. *Current Biology* 26(3). 286–295. DOI: 10.1016/j.cub.2015.11.057.
- Boisvert, Martine, Lionel Standing & Lora Moller. 1999. Successful part-whole perception in young children using multiple-choice tests. *The Journal of Genetic Psychology* 160(2). 167–180. DOI: 10.1080/00221329909595390.
- Borer, Hagit. 2005a. *Structuring sense I: In name only*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Borer, Hagit. 2005b. *Structuring sense II: The normal course of events*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Bosnić, Ana. 2016. Distributivity and agreement mismatches in Serbian. In Sabina Halupka-Rešetar & Silvia Martínez-Ferreiro (eds.), *Studies in language and mind*, 77–101. Novi Sad: Faculty of Philosophy.
- Boysen, Sarah T., Gary G. Berntson, Michelle B. Hannan & John T. Cacioppo. 1996. Quantity-based interference and symbolic representations in chimpanzees (Pan troglodytes). *Journal of Experimental Psychology: Animal Behavior Processes* 22(1). 76–86. DOI: 10.1037/0097-7403.22.1.76.
- Brasoveanu, Adrian. 2008. Sentence-internal readings of ‘same’/‘different’ as quantifier-internal anaphora. In Natasha Abner & Jason Bishop (eds.), *WCCFL 27: Proceedings of the 27th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics*, 72–80. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.
- Brasoveanu, Adrian. 2012. Modified numerals as post-suppositions. *Journal of Semantics* 30(2). 155–209. DOI: 10.1093/jos/ffs003.

## References

- Breheeny, Richard. 2005. Some scalar implicatures really aren't quantity implicatures—but 'some's are. In Emar Maier, Corien Bary & Janneke Huitink (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 9*, 57–71. Nijmegen: Nijmegen Centre of Semantics. DOI: 10.18148/sub/2005.v9i0.718.
- Brisson, Christine. 1998. *Distributivity, maximality, and floating quantifiers*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Brunet, Jacqueline. 1978. *Grammaire critique de l'italien*. Saint-Denis: Presses universitaires de Vincennes.
- Bultinck, Bert. 2005. *Numerous meanings: The meaning of English cardinals and the legacy of Paul Grice*. Amsterdam: Elsevier.
- Bunt, Harry C. 1985. *Mass terms and model-theoretic semantics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Cable, Seth. 2014. Distributive numerals and distance distributivity in Tlingit (and beyond). *Language* 90(3). 562–606. DOI: 10.1353/lan.2014.0055.
- Cantlon, Jessica F., Elizabeth M. Brannon, Elizabeth J. Carter & Kevin A. Pelphrey. 2006. Functional imaging of numerical processing in adults and 4-y-old children. *PLoS BIOLOGY* 4(5). e125. DOI: 10.1371/journal.pbio.0040125.
- Capaldi, E. John & Daniel J. Miller. 1988. Counting in rats: Its functional significance and the independent cognitive processes that constitute it. *Journal of Experimental Psychology: Animal Behavior Processes* 14(1). 3–17. DOI: 10.1037/0097-7403.14.1.3.
- Carey, Susan. 1985. *Conceptual change in childhood*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Carey, Susan. 1998. Knowledge of number: Its evolution and ontogeny. *Science* 282(5389). 641–642. DOI: 10.1126/science.282.5389.641.
- Carey, Susan. 2009. *The origin of concepts*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
- Carey, Susan & Elizabeth Spelke. 1996. Science and core knowledge. *Philosophy of Science* 63(4). 515–533. DOI: 10.1086/289971.
- Carlson, Gregory N. 1977. *Reference to kinds in English*. Amherst, MA: University of Massachusetts. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Carlson, Gregory N. 1980. *Reference to kinds in English*. New York, NY: Garland Publishing.
- Carlson, Gregory N. 1984. Thematic roles and their role in semantic interpretation. *Linguistics* 22(3). 259–279. DOI: 10.1515/ling.1984.22.3.259.
- Carlson, Gregory N. 1987. Same and different: Some consequences for syntax and semantics. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 10(4). 531–565. DOI: 10.1007/BF00628069.
- Casati, Roberto & Achille C. Varzi. 1999. *Parts and places: The structures of spatial representation*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.



- Champollion, Lucas. 2010. *Parts of a whole: Distributivity as a bridge between aspect and measurement*. Philadelphia, PA: University of Pennsylvania. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Champollion, Lucas. 2012a. 'Each' vs. 'jewels': A cover-based view on distance distributivity. In Maria Aloni, Vadim Kimmelman, Floris Roelofsen, Galit W. Sassoon, Katrin Schulz & Matthijs Westera (eds.), *Logic, language and meaning*, 251–260. Berlin: Springer.
- Champollion, Lucas. 2012b. *Linguistic applications of mereology*. Script to the 24th European Summer School in Logic, Language and Information ESSLI 2012 course. 13th–17th August 2012. Opole, Poland. [http://champollion.com/wp-content/uploads/2018/07/champollion\\_essli2012.pdf](http://champollion.com/wp-content/uploads/2018/07/champollion_essli2012.pdf).
- Champollion, Lucas. 2017. *Parts of a whole: Distributivity as a bridge between aspect and measurement*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Champollion, Lucas & Manfred Krifka. 2016. Mereology. In Maria Aloni & Paul Dekker (eds.), *Cambridge handbook of formal semantics*, 369–388. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Cheng, Chung-Ying. 1973. Comments on Moravcsik's paper. In Jaakko Hintikka, Julius Moravcsik & Patrick Suppes (eds.), *Approaches to natural language*, 286–288. Dordrecht: Reidel.
- Chierchia, Gennaro. 1998a. Plurality of mass nouns and the notion of 'semantic parameter'. In Susan Rothstein (ed.), *Events and grammar*, 53–103. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Chierchia, Gennaro. 1998b. Reference to kinds across languages. *Natural Language Semantics* 6(4). 339–405. DOI: 10.1023/A:1008324218506.
- Chierchia, Gennaro. 2010. Mass nouns, vagueness and semantic variation. *Synthese* 174(1). 99–149. DOI: 10.1007/s11229-009-9686-6.
- Chierchia, Gennaro. 2015. How universal is the mass/count distinction? Three grammars of counting. In Yen-hui Audrey Li, Andrew Simpson & Wei-Tien Dylan Tsai (eds.), *Chinese syntax: A cross-linguistic perspective*, 147–177. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Chomsky, Noam. 2000. *New horizons in the study of language and mind*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Clark, Herbert H. 1973. Space, time, semantics, and the child. In Timothy E. Moore (ed.), *Cognitive development and acquisition of language*, 27–63. New York, NY: Academic Press.
- Clarke, Bowman L. 1981. A calculus of individuals based on 'connection'. *Notre Dame Journal of Formal Logic* 22. 204–218. DOI: 10.1305/ndjfl/1093883455.
- Cleven, Cyril. 2013. *Syntax and semantics of the faded partitive construction in Dutch*. Nijmegen: Radboud University. (Doctoral dissertation).

## References

- Corbett, Greville G. 2000. *Number*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Cresswell, Max. 1985. Review of Landman and Veltman (eds.), 1984, 'Varieties of formal semantics'. *Linguistics* 23(4). 626–634. DOI: 10.1515/ling.1985.23.4.625.
- Cruse, D. Alan. 1986. *Lexical semantics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Dalrymple, Mary, Makoto Kanazawa, Yookyung Kim, Sam Mchombo & Stanley Peters. 1998. Reciprocal expressions and the concept of reciprocity. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 21(2). 159–210. DOI: 10.1023/A:1005330227480.
- Davidson, Donald. 1967. The logical form of action sentences. In Nicholas Rescher (ed.), *The logic of decision and action*, 81–95. Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press.
- Davidson, Donald. 1987. Knowing one's own mind. *Proceedings and Addresses of the American Philosophical Association* 60(3). 441–458. DOI: 10.2307/3131782.
- Davies, Mark. 2009. The 385+ million word Corpus of Contemporary American English (1990–2008+): Design, architecture, and linguistic insights. *International Journal of Corpus Linguistics* 14(2). 159–190. DOI: 10.1075/ijcl.14.2.02dav.
- Davis, Hank & Rachelle Pérusse. 1988. Numerical competence in animals: Definitional issues, current evidence, and a new research agenda. *Behavioral and Brain Sciences* 11(4). 561–579. DOI: 10.1017/S0140525X00053437.
- Deal, Amy Rose. 2017. Countability distinctions and semantic variation. *Natural Language Semantics* 25(2). 125–171. DOI: 10.1007/s11050-017-9132-0.
- Dehaene, Stanislas. 1997. *The number sense: How the mind creates mathematics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- de Hoop, Helen. 1997. A semantic reanalysis of the partitive constraint. *Lingua* 103(2-3). 151–174. DOI: 10.1016/S0024-3841(97)00018-1.
- de Hoop, Helen. 2003. Partitivity. In Lisa Cheng & Rint Sybesma (eds.), *The second Glot international state-of-the-article book: The latest in linguistics*, 179–212. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.
- de Vries, Hannah. 2015. *Shifting sets, hidden atoms: The semantics of distributivity, plurality and animacy*. Utrecht: Utrecht University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Dočekal, Mojmir. 2012. Atoms, groups and kinds in Czech. *Acta Linguistica Hungarica: An International Journal of Linguistics* 59(1–2). 109–126. DOI: 10.1556/aling.59.2012.1-2.5.
- Dočekal, Mojmir. 2013. What do we count with numerals? Semantic analysis of Czech group-denoting and kind-denoting NPs. In Uwe Junghanns, Dorothee Fehrmann, Denisa Lenertová & Hagen Pitsch (eds.), *Formal Description of Slavic Languages: The ninth conference. Proceedings of FDSL 9, Göttingen 2011*, 87–105. Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang.

- Dočekal, Mojmir & Marcin Wağiel. 2018a. *Decomposing derived collectives in West Slavic: Experimental evidence from Czech and Polish*. Paper presented at Co-distributivity Workshop. 22nd–23rd February 2018. CNRS, Paris.
- Dočekal, Mojmir & Marcin Wağiel. 2018b. Event and degree numerals: Evidence from Czech. In Denisa Lenertová, Roland Meyer, Radek Šimik & Luka Szucsich (eds.), *Advances in formal Slavic linguistics 2016*, 77–108. Berlin: Language Science Press. DOI: 10.5281/zenodo.2554021.
- Dotlačil, Jakub. 2010. *Anaphora and distributivity: A study of 'same', 'different', reciprocals and 'others'*. Utrecht: LOT.
- Dotlačil, Jakub. 2012. Binominal 'each' as an anaphoric determiner: Compositional analysis. In Ana Aguilar Guevara, Anna Chernilovskaya & Rick Nouwen (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 16*, 211–224. Cambridge, MA: MIT Working Papers in Linguistics. <http://mitwpl.mit.edu/open/sub16/Dotlacil.pdf>.
- Dotlačil, Jakub & Rick Nouwen. 2016. The comparative and degree pluralities. *Natural Language Semantics* 24(1). 45–78. DOI: 10.1007/s11050-015-9119-7.
- Dougherty, Ray C. 1970. A grammar of coordinate conjoined structures: I. *Language* 46(4). 850–898. DOI: 10.2307/412260.
- Dowty, David. 1987. Collective predicates, distributive predicates and 'all'. In Fred Marshall (ed.), *Proceedings of the 1986 Eastern States Conference on Linguistics*, 97–115. Columbus: Ohio State University Ohio.
- Dowty, David. 1989. On the semantic content of the notion of 'thematic role'. In Barbara Partee, Gennaro Chierchia & Raymond Turner (eds.), *Properties, types and meaning*, 69–129. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Dowty, David. 1991. Thematic proto-roles and argument selection. *Language* 67(3). 547–619. DOI: 10.2307/415037.
- Durrell, Martin. 1996. *Hammer's German grammar and usage*. London: Arnold.
- Eberle, Rolf A. 1970. *Nominalistic systems*. Dordrecht: Reidel.
- Elkind, David, Ronald R. Kogler & Elsie Go. 1964. Studies in perceptual development: II. Part-whole perception. *Child Development* 35(1). 81–90. DOI: 10.2307/1126573.
- Fassi Fehri, Abdelkader. 2016. Semantic gender diversity and its architecture in the grammar of Arabic. *Brill's Journal of Afroasiatic Languages and Linguistics* 8(1). 154–199. DOI: 10.1163/18776930-00801007.
- Fassi Fehri, Abdelkader. 2018. *Constructing feminine to mean: Gender, number, numeral, and quantifier extensions in Arabic*. Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield.
- Feigenson, Lisa, Stanislas Dehaene & Elizabeth Spelke. 2004. Core systems of number. *Trends in Cognitive Sciences* 8(7). 307–314. DOI: 10.1016/j.tics.2004.05.002.

## References

- Fiengo, Robert & Howard Lasnik. 1973. The logical structure of reciprocal sentences in English. *Foundations of Language* 9(4). 447–468. DOI: 10.1007/978-94-009-2542-7\_2.
- Filip, Hana. 1999. *Aspect, eventuality types, and nominal reference*. New York, NY: Garland Press.
- Franks, Steven. 1994. Parametric properties of numeral phrases in Slavic. *Natural Language & Linguistic Theory* 12(4). 597–674. DOI: 10.1007/BF00992929.
- Franks, Steven. 1995. *Parameters of Slavic morphosyntax*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Fréchet, Maurice. 1906. Sur quelques points du calcul fonctionnel. *Rendiconti del Circolo Matematico di Palermo* 22(1). 1–72.
- Frege, Gottlob. 1884. *Die Grundlagen der Arithmetik*. Breslau: Wilhelm Koebner.
- Fuson, Karen C. 1988. *Children's counting and concepts of number*. New York, NY: Springer-Verlag.
- Gallistel, Charles R. 1989. Animal cognition: The representation of space, time and number. *Annual Review of Psychology* 40(1). 155–189. DOI: 10.1146/annurev.ps.40.020189.001103.
- Gelman, Rochel & Charles R. Gallistel. 1978. *The child's understanding of number*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Gelman, Rochel & Elizabeth Meck. 1983. Preschoolers' counting: Principles before skill. *Cognition* 13(3). 343–359. DOI: 10.1016/0010-0277(83)90014-8.
- Gelman, Rochel, Elizabeth Meck & Susan Merkin. 1986. Young children's numerical competence. *Cognitive Development* 1(1). 1–29. DOI: 10.1016/S0885-2014(86)80021-1.
- Geurts, Bart. 1998. Scalars. In Petra Ludewig & Bart Geurts (eds.), *Lexikalische Semantik aus kognitiver Sicht*, 85–117. Tübingen: Gunter Narr.
- Geurts, Bart. 2006. Take 'five': The meaning and use of a number word. In Svetlana Vogeleer & Liliane Tasmowski (eds.), *Non-definiteness and plurality*, 311–329. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Gil, David. 2002. *Distributive numerals*. Los Angeles, CA: University of California. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Gil, David. 2013. Numeral classifiers. In Matthew S. Dryer & Martin Haspelmath (eds.), *The World Atlas of Language Structures online*. Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology. <http://wals.info/chapter/55>.
- Gillon, Brendan S. 1987. The readings of plural noun phrases in English. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 10(2). 199–219. DOI: 10.1007/BF00584318.
- Gillon, Brendan S. 1992. Towards a common semantics for English count and mass nouns. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 15(6). 597–639. DOI: 10.1007/BF00628112.

- Goodman, Nelson. 1951. *The structure of appearance*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Görgülü, Emrah. 2012. *Semantics of nouns and the specification of number in Turkish*. Burnaby: Simon Fraser University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Greenberg, Joseph H. 1972. Numeral classifiers and substantival number: Problems in the genesis of a linguistic type. *Working Papers on Language Universals* 9. 1–39.
- Grimm, Scott. 2012a. Degrees of countability: A mereotopological approach to the mass/count distinction. In Anca Chereches (ed.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 22*, 584–603. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v22i0.2633.
- Grimm, Scott. 2012b. *Number and individuation*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Grimm, Scott. 2013. Plurality is distinct from number neutrality. In Lena Fainleib, Nick LaCara & Yangsook Park (eds.), *Proceedings of the 41st Annual Meeting of the North East Linguistic Society*, 247–258. Amherst, MA: University of Massachusetts.
- Grimm, Scott. 2014. Individuating the abstract. In Urtzi Etxeberria, Anamaria Fălăuș, Aritz Irurtzun & Bryan Leferman (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 18*, 182–200. Vitoria-Gasteiz: University of the Basque Country. <https://semanticsarchive.net/sub2013/SeparateArticles/Grimm.pdf>.
- Grimm, Scott & Mojmír Dočekal. 2021. Counting aggregates, groups and kinds: Countability from the perspective of a morphologically complex language. In Hana Filip (ed.), *Countability in natural language*, 85–102. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Grimm, Scott & Beth Levin. 2017. Artifact nouns: Reference and countability. In Andrew Lamont & Katerina Tetzloff (eds.), *Proceedings of the 47th Annual Meeting of North East Linguistic Society (NELS 47)*, vol. 2, 55–64. Amherst, MA: GLSA.
- Grimshaw, Jane. 1990. *Argument structure*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Grimshaw, Jane. 2011. Deverbal nominalization. In Claudia Maienborn, Klaus von Heusinger & Paul Portner (eds.), *Semantics: An international handbook of natural language meaning*, vol. 2, 1292–1313. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Hall, Robert A. 1956. Il plurale italiano in ‘-a’: un duale mancato? *Italica* 33(2). 140–142.
- Hansen, Mikkel B. & Ellen M. Markman. 2009. Children’s use of mutual exclusivity to learn labels for parts of objects. *Developmental Psychology* 45(2). 592–596. DOI: 10.1037/a0014838.

## References

- Harves, Stephanie. 2003. Getting impersonal: Case, agreement, and distributive *po*-phrases in Russian. In Wayles Browne (ed.), *Formal Approaches to Slavic Linguistics 11: The Amherst meeting 2002*, 235–254. Ann Arbor, MI: Michigan Slavic Publications.
- Haslinger, Nina & Viola Schmitt. 2021. Distinguishing belief objects. In Mojmir Dočekal & Marcin Wągiel (eds.), *Formal approaches to number in Slavic and beyond*, 251–274. Berlin: Language Science Press. DOI: 10.5281/zenodo.5082470.
- Hausdorff, Felix. 1914. *Grundzüge der Mengenlehre*. Leipzig: Veit & Comp.
- Hauser, Marc D. & Susan Carey. 2003. Spontaneous representations of small numbers of objects by rhesus macaques: Examinations of content and format. *Cognitive Psychology* 47(4). 367–401. DOI: 10.1016/s0010-0285(03)00050-1.
- Hauser, Marc D. & Bailey Spaulding. 2006. Wild rhesus monkeys generate causal inferences about possible and impossible physical transformations in the absence of experience. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 103(18). 7181–7185. DOI: 10.1073/pnas.0601247103.
- Hausser, Roland. 1974. *Quantification in an extended Montague grammar*. Austin, TX: University of Texas. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Heim, Irene. 1985. *Notes on comparatives and related matters*. Unpublished manuscript. University of Texas, Austin, TX. <https://semanticsarchive.net/Archive/zc0ZjY0M/Comparatives%2085.pdf>.
- Henderson, Robert. 2017. Swarms: Spatiotemporal grouping across domains. *Natural Language & Linguistic Theory* 35(1). 161–203. DOI: 10.1007/s11049-016-9334-z.
- Herskovits, Annette. 1985. Semantics and pragmatics of locative expressions. *Cognitive Science* 9(3). 341–378. DOI: 10.1207/s15516709cog0903\_3.
- Heycock, Caroline & Roberto Zamparelli. 2003. Coordinated bare definites. *Linguistic Inquiry* 34(3). 443–469. DOI: 10.1162/002438903322247551.
- Hoeing, Robert G. 1997. The phrase structure of partitives in High German. In Irmengard Rauch & Gerald F. Carr (eds.), *Insights in Germanic linguistics: Classic and contemporary*, 87–98. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Hoeksema, Jack. 1983. Plurality and conjunction. In Alice G.B. ter Meulen (ed.), *Studies in modeltheoretic semantics*, 63–83. Dordrecht: Foris Publications.
- Hoeksema, Jacob. 1996. Introduction. In Jacob Hoeksema (ed.), *Partitives: Studies on the syntax and semantics of partitive and related constructions*, 1–24. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter.
- Hofherr, Patricia Cabredo & Urtzi Etxeberria. 2017. Distributive numerals in Basque. In Alexandre Cremers, Thom van Gessel & Floris Roelofsen (eds.), *Proceedings of the 21st Amsterdam Colloquium*, 185–194. Amsterdam: ILLC. <https://semanticsarchive.net/Archive/jZiM2FhZ/AC2017-Proceedings.pdf>.

- Hofweber, Thomas. 2005. Number determiners, numbers, and arithmetic. *The Philosophical Review* 114(2). 179–225. DOI: 10.1215/00318108-114-2-179.
- Hollich, George, Roberta M. Golinkoff & Kathy Hirsh-Pasek. 2007. Young children associate novel words with complex objects rather than salient parts. *Developmental Psychology* 43(5). 1051–1061. DOI: 10.1037/0012-1649.43.5.1051.
- Horn, Laurence R. 1972. *On the semantic properties of the logical operators in English*. Los Angeles, CA: University of California. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Horn, Laurence R. 1992. The said and the unsaid. In Chris Barker & David Dowty (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 2*, 163–192. Columbus, OH: Ohio State University. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v2i0.3039.
- Hovda, Paul. 2009. What is classical mereology? *Journal of Philosophical Logic* 38(1). 55–82. DOI: 10.1007/s10992-008-9092-4.
- Hsieh, Miao-Ling. 2008. *The internal structure of noun phrases in Chinese*. Taipei: Crane Publishing Company.
- Huddleston, Rodney & Geoffrey K. Pullum. 2002. *The Cambridge grammar of the English language*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Hurford, James R. 1998. The interaction between numerals and nouns. In Frans Plank (ed.), *Noun phrase structure in the languages of Europe*, 561–620. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Hurford, James R. 2001. Languages treat 1–4 specially. *Mind & Language* 16(1). 69–75. DOI: 10.1111/1468-0017.00157.
- Hyde, Daniel C. 2011. Two systems of non-symbolic numerical cognition. *Frontiers in Human Neuroscience* 5. 1–8. DOI: 10.3389/fnhum.2011.00150.
- Igel, Moritz. to appear. Part-whole-modifiers and the \*-operator. In Luisa Marti, Hazel Pearson & Yasutada Sudo (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 25*. London: University College London & Queen Mary University of London.
- Imai, Mutsumi & Dedre Gentner. 1997. A cross-linguistic study of early word meaning: Universal ontology and linguistic influence. *Cognition* 62(2). 169–200. DOI: 10.1016/s0010-0277(96)00784-6.
- Ionin, Tania & Ora Matushansky. 2004. A singular plural. In Benjamin Schmeiser, Vineeta Chand, Ann Kelleher & Angelo J. Rodríguez (eds.), *WCCFL 23: Proceedings of the 23rd West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics*, 399–412. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.
- Ionin, Tania & Ora Matushansky. 2006. The composition of complex cardinals. *Journal of Semantics* 23(4). 315–360. DOI: 10.1093/jos/ffl006.
- Ionin, Tania & Ora Matushansky. 2018. *Cardinals: The syntax and semantics of cardinal-containing expressions*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

## References

- Ionin, Tania, Ora Matushansky & Eddy G. Ruys. 2006. Parts of speech: Toward a unified semantics for partitives. In Christopher Davis, Amy Rose Deal & Youri Zabbal (eds.), *Proceedings of the North East Linguistic Society 36*, 357–370. Amherst, MA: GLSA.
- Jackendoff, Ray. 1977. *X-bar syntax: A theory of phrase structure*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Jackendoff, Ray. 1991. Parts and boundaries. *Cognition* 41(1). 9–45. DOI: 10.1016/0010-0277(91)90031-X.
- Jennings, Sean Lastone Michael. 2010. *Against organicism: A defence of an ontology of everyday objects*. London: University College London. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Jin, Jing. 2018. *Partition and quantity: Numeral classifiers, measurement, and partitive constructions in Mandarin Chinese*. London: Routledge.
- Jing-Schmidt, Zhuo. 2005. *Dramatized discourse: The Mandarin Chinese ba-construction*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Kagan, Olga. 2013. *Semantics of genitive objects in Russian: A study of genitive of negation and intensional genitive case*. Dordrecht: Springer.
- Karlsson, Fred. 1999. *Finnish: An essential grammar*. London: Routledge.
- Kennedy, Christopher. 2013. A scalar semantics for scalar readings of number words. In Ivano Caponigro & Carlo Cecchetto (eds.), *From grammar to meaning: The spontaneous logicity of language*, 172–200. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Kennedy, Christopher & Louise McNally. 1999. From event structure to scale structure: Degree modification in deverbal adjectives. In Tanya Matthews & Devon Strolovitch (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 9*, 163–180. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v9i0.2820.
- Kennedy, Christopher & Louise McNally. 2005. Scale structure, degree modification, and the semantics of gradable predicates. *Language*. 345–381. DOI: 10.1353/lan.2005.0071.
- Khrizman, Keren. 2020. The cardinal/collective alternation in Russian numerals. In Teodora Radeva-Bork & Peter Kosta (eds.), *Current developments in Slavic linguistics: Twenty years after*, 325–338. Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang.
- Khrizman, Keren, Fred Landman, Suzi Lima, Susan Rothstein & Brigitta R. Schvarcz. 2015. Portion readings are count readings, not measure readings. In Thomas Brochhagen, Floris Roelofsen & Nadine Theiler (eds.), *Proceedings of the 20th Amsterdam Colloquium*, 197–206. Amsterdam: ILLC. <https://semanticsarchive.net/Archive/mVkOTk2N/AC2015-proceedings.pdf>.
- Kimchi, Ruth. 1993. Basic-level categorization and part-whole perception in children. *Bulletin of the Psychonomic Society* 31(1). 23–26. DOI: 10.3758/BF03334129.



- Kitcher, Philip. 1984. *The nature of mathematical knowledge*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
- Knežević, Nataša. 2015. *Numerals and distributivity in Serbian: At the syntax-semantics-acquisition interface*. Nantes: University of Nantes. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Kobuchi-Philip, Mana. 2006. Identity of the domain of quantification for numerals. In Svetlana Vogeleer & Liliane Tasmowski (eds.), *Non-definiteness and plurality*, 267–290. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Koptjevskaja-Tamm, Maria. 2001. ‘A piece of the cake’ and ‘a cup of tea’: Partitive and pseudo-partitive nominal constructions in the Circum-Baltic languages. In Maria Koptjevskaja-Tamm & Östen Dahl (eds.), *Circum-Baltic languages: Grammar and typology*, vol. 2, 523–568. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Koptjevskaja-Tamm, Maria & Bernhard Wälchli. 2001. The Circum-Baltic languages: An areal-typological approach. In Maria Koptjevskaja-Tamm & Östen Dahl (eds.), *Circum-Baltic languages: Grammar and typology*, vol. 2, 615–750. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Korat, Omer. 2016. Singular quantified terms. In Mira Grubic & Anne Mucha (eds.), *Proceedings of The Semantics of African, Asian and Austronesian Languages 2*, 36–51. Potsdam: Universitätsverlag Potsdam.
- Kracht, Marcus. 2002. On the semantics of locatives. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 25(2). 157–232. DOI: 10.1023/A:1014646826099.
- Kratzer, Angelika. 1989. An investigation of the lumps of thought. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 12(5). 607–653. DOI: 10.1007/BF00627775.
- Kratzer, Angelika. 1998. Scope or pseudoscope? Are there wide-scope indefinites? In Susan Rothstein (ed.), *Events and grammar*, 163–196. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Kratzer, Angelika & Junko Shimoyama. 2002. Indeterminate pronouns: The view from Japanese. In Yokio Otsu (ed.), *The proceedings of the Third Tokyo Conference on Psycholinguistics*, 1–25. Tokyo: Hituzi Syobo.
- Krecz, Charles A. 1986. Parts and pieces. *Philosophy and Phenomenological Research* 46(3). 381–400. DOI: 10.2307/2107311.
- Křen, Michal, Václav Cvrček, Jan Henyš, Milena Hnátková, Tomáš Jelínek, Jan Koček, Dominika Kovářiková, Jan Křivan, Jiří Milička, Vladimír Petkevič, Pavel Procházka, Hana Skoumalová, Jana Šindlerová & Michal Škrabal. 2012. *SYN2020: reprezentativní korpus psané češtiny*. Praha: FF UK.
- Krifka, Manfred. 1989. Nominal reference, temporal constitution and quantification in event semantics. In Renate Bartsch, Johan van Benthem & Peter van Emde Boas (eds.), *Semantics and contextual expression*, 75–115. Dordrecht: Foris.

## References

- Krifka, Manfred. 1995. Common nouns: A contrastive analysis of Chinese and English. In Gregory N. Carlson & Francis J. Pelletier (eds.), *The generic book*, 398–411. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
- Krifka, Manfred. 1996. Parametrized sum individuals for plural reference and partitive quantification. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 19(6). 555–598. <https://www.jstor.org/stable/25001645>.
- Krifka, Manfred. 1998. The origins of telicity. In Susan Rothstein (ed.), *Events and grammar*, 197–235. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Krifka, Manfred. 1999. At least some determiners aren't determiners. In Ken Turner (ed.), *The semantics/pragmatics interface from different points of view*, 257–291. Oxford: Elsevier.
- Krifka, Manfred. 2007. *Masses and countables: Cognitive and linguistic factors*. Paper presented at CASTL Workshop on the Syntax and Semantics of Measurement. 17th–18th September 2007. University of Tromsø. <http://citeseerx.ist.psu.edu/viewdoc/download?doi=10.1.1.473.7505&rep=rep1&type=pdf>.
- Krifka, Manfred. 2009. Counting configurations. In Arndt Riester & Torgrim Solstad (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 13*, 291–306. Stuttgart: University of Stuttgart. DOI: 10.18148/sub/2009.v13i2.552.
- Krifka, Manfred. 2021. Individuating matter over time. In Hana Filip (ed.), *Countability in natural language*, 121–144. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Kučerová, Ivona. 2015. *On two sources of  $\phi$ -feature valuation and its consequences for syntactic computation: A case study of nominal-inflection at the syntax-semantics interface*. Unpublished manuscript, June 2015, McMaster University, Hamilton. <http://ling.auf.net/lingbuzz/002518>.
- Kupietz, Marc & Holger Keibel. 2009. The Mannheim German Reference Corpus (DeReKo) as a basis for empirical linguistic research. In Makoto Minegishi & Yuji Kawaguchi (eds.), 53–59. Tokyo: Tokyo University of Foreign Studies.
- Kuratowski, Kazimierz. 1922. Sur l'opération  $\bar{a}$  de l'analysis situs. *Fundamenta Mathematicae* 3(1). 182–199. DOI: 10.4064/fm-3-1-182-199.
- Ladusaw, William. 1982. Semantic constraints on the English partitive construction. In Daniel Flickinger, Marlys Macken & Nancy Wiegand (eds.), *Proceedings of the West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics 1*, 231–242. Stanford, CA: Stanford University.
- Lahiri, Utpal. 2002. *Questions and answers in embedded contexts*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Landau, Barbara, Linda B. Smith & Susan S. Jones. 1988. The importance of shape in early lexical learning. *Cognitive Development* 3(3). 299–321. DOI: 10.1016/0885-2014(88)90014-7.

- Landman, Fred. 1989a. Groups, I. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 12(5). 559–605. DOI: 10.1007/BF00627774.
- Landman, Fred. 1989b. Groups, II. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 12(6). 723–744. DOI: 10.1007/BF00632603.
- Landman, Fred. 1991. *Structures for semantics*. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Landman, Fred. 2000. *Events and plurality: The Jerusalem lectures*. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Landman, Fred. 2003. Predicate-argument mismatches and the adjectival theory of indefinites. In *From NP to DP. Volume 1: The syntax and semantics of noun phrases*, 211–237. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Landman, Fred. 2004. *Indefinites and the type of sets*. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Landman, Fred. 2011. Count nouns – mass nouns, neat nouns – mess nouns. *Baltic International Yearbook of Cognition, Logic and Communication* 6(1). 1–67. DOI: 10.4148/biyclc.v6i0.1579.
- Landman, Fred. 2016. Iceberg semantics for count nouns and mass nouns: Classifiers, measures and portions. *Baltic International Yearbook of Cognition, Logic and Communication* 11(1). 1–48. DOI: 10.4148/1944-3676.1107.
- Laserson, Peter. 1995. *Plurality, conjunction and events*. Boston, MA: Kluwer.
- Lausberg, Heinrich. 1963. *Romanische Sprachwissenschaft*. Berlin: De Gruyter.
- Lavine, James E. 2005. The morphosyntax of Polish and Ukrainian *-no/-to*. *Journal of Slavic Linguistics* 13(1). 75–117. <https://www.jstor.org/stable/24599548>.
- Leonard, Henry S. & Nelson Goodman. 1940. The calculus of individuals and its uses. *The Journal of Symbolic Logic* 5(2). 45–55. DOI: 10.2307/2266169.
- Leśniewski, Stanisław. 1916. *Podstawy ogólnej teorii mnogości*. Moscow: Prace Polskiego Koła Naukowego w Moskwie, Sekcja Matematyczno-Przyrodnicza.
- Lima, Suzi. 2014. All notional mass nouns are count nouns in Yudja. In Todd Snider, Sarah D’Antonio & Mia Weigand (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 24*, 534–554. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v24i0.2419.
- Link, Godehard. 1983. The logical analysis of plural and mass nouns: A lattice-theoretical approach. In Rainer Bäuerle, Christoph Schwarze & Arnim von Stechow (eds.), *Meaning, use, and interpretation of language*, 302–323. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Link, Godehard. 1984. Hydras: On the logic of relative constructions with multiple heads. In Fred Landman & Frank Veltman (eds.), *Varieties of formal semantics*, 245–257. Dordrecht: Foris.
- Link, Godehard. 1998. *Algebraic semantics in language and philosophy*. Stanford, CA: CSLI Publications.
- Löfstedt, Einar. 1956. *Syntactica*. Lund: Gleerup.

## References

- Lønning, Jan Tore. 1987. Mass terms and quantification. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 10(1). 1–52. DOI: 10.1007/BF00603391.
- Lyons, John. 1977. *Semantics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Markman, Ellen M. 1990. Constraints children place on word meanings. *Cognitive Science* 14(1). 57–77. DOI: 10.1016/0364-0213(90)90026-S.
- Markosian, Ned. 1998. Brutal composition. *Philosophical Studies* 92(3). 211–249. DOI: 10.1023/a:1004267523392.
- Martí i Girbau, Núria. 2010. *The Syntax of Partitives*. Barcelona: Universitat Autònoma de Barcelona. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Marty, Paul. 2017. *Implicatures in the DP domain*. Cambridge, MA: Massachusetts Institute of Technology. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Matsuzawa, Tetsuro. 1985. Use of numbers by a chimpanzee. *Nature* 315(6014). 57–59. DOI: 10.1038/315057a0.
- Matthewson, Lisa. 1998. On the interpretation of wide-scope indefinites. *Natural Language Semantics* 7(1). 79–134. DOI: 10.1023/A:1008376601708.
- Meili-Dworetzki, Gertrude. 1956. The development of perception in the Rorschach. In Bruno Klopfer (ed.), *Development in the rorschach technique*. New York, NY: World Book.
- Melgoza, Vicente, Amanda Pogue & David Barner. 2008. A broken fork in the hand is worth two in the grammar: A spatio-temporal bias in children's interpretation of quantifiers and plural nouns. In Bradley C. Love, Kelly McRae & Vladimir M. Sloutsky (eds.), *Proceedings of the 30th Annual Conference of the Cognitive Science Society*, 1580–1585. Austin, TX: Cognitive Science Society.
- Mitchell, Robert W., Pearl Yao, Peter T. Sherman & Mary O'regan. 1985. Discriminative responding of a dolphin (*Tursiops truncatus*) to differentially rewarded stimuli. *Journal of Comparative Psychology* 99(2). 218–225. DOI: 10.1037/0735-7036.99.2.218.
- Moltmann, Friederike. 1997. *Parts and wholes in semantics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Moltmann, Friederike. 1998. Part structures, integrity, and the mass-count distinction. *Synthese* 116(1). 75–111. DOI: 10.1023/A:1005046308299.
- Moltmann, Friederike. 2013. *Abstract objects and the semantics of natural language*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Moltmann, Friederike. 2017. Natural language ontology. In *Oxford research encyclopedia of linguistics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: 10.1093/acrefore/9780199384655.013.330.
- Montague, Richard. 1973. The proper treatment of quantification in ordinary English. In Jaakko Hintikka, Julius Moravcsik & Patrick Suppes (eds.), *Approaches to natural language*, 221–242. Reidel: Dordrecht.

- Morzycki, Marcin. 2002. Wholes and their covers. In Brendan Jackson (ed.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 12*, 184–203. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v12i0.2875.
- Morzycki, Marcin. 2009. Degree modification of gradable nouns: Size adjectives and adnominal degree morphemes. *Natural Language Semantics* 17(2). 175–203. DOI: 10.1007/s11050-009-9045-7.
- Mueller-Reichau, Olav. 2006. *Sorting the world: On the relevance of the kind/object-distinctions to referential semantics*. Leipzig: Leipzig University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Nicolas, David. 2002. Do mass nouns constitute a semantically uniform class? In Stacey Stowers & Nathan Poell (eds.), *Kansas working papers in linguistics*, 113–121. Lawrence, KS: Linguistics Graduate Student Association of the University of Kansas.
- Nieder, Andreas & Stanislas Dehaene. 2009. Representation of number in the brain. *Annual Review of Neuroscience* 32. 185–208. DOI: 10.1146/annurev.neuro.051508.135550.
- Nouwen, Rick. 2010. Two kinds of modified numerals. *Semantics and Pragmatics* 3. 1–41. DOI: 10.3765/sp.3.3.
- Nouwen, Rick. 2016. Plurality. In Maria Aloni & Paul Dekker (eds.), *The Cambridge handbook of formal semantics*, 267–284. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Oh, Sei-Rang. 2005. *Plurality markers across languages*. Storrs, CT: University of Connecticut. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Ojeda, Almerindo E. 1993. *Linguistic individuals*. Stanford, CA: Center for the Study of Language & Information.
- Ojeda, Almerindo E. 1995. The semantics of the Italian double plural. *Journal of Semantics* 12(3). 213–237. DOI: 10.1093/jos/12.3.213.
- Parsons, Terence. 1990. *Events in the semantics of English: A study in subatomic semantics*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Partee, Barbara H. 2018. Changing notions of linguistic competence in the history of formal semantics. In Derek Ball & Brian Rabern (eds.), *The science of meaning: Essays on the metatheory of natural language semantics*, 172–196. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Partee, Barbara H. & Vladimir Borschev. 2012. Sortal, relational, and functional interpretations of nouns and Russian container constructions. *Journal of Semantics* 29(4). 445–486. DOI: 10.1093/jos/ffs009.
- Pearson, Hazel. 2011. A new semantics for group nouns. In Mary Byram Washburn, Katherine McKinney-Bock, Erika Varis, Ann Sawyer & Barbara

## References

- Tomaszewicz (eds.), *WCCFL 28: Proceedings of the 28th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics*, 160–168. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.
- Pelletier, Francis J. 1975. Non-singular reference: Some preliminaries. *Philosophia* 5(4). 451–465. DOI: 10.1007/BF02379268.
- Pelletier, Francis J. 2011. Descriptive metaphysics, natural language metaphysics, Sapir–Whorf, and all that stuff: Evidence from the mass-count distinction. *The Baltic International Yearbook of Cognition, Logic and Communication* 6. 1–46. DOI: 10.4148/biyclc.v6i0.1570.
- Pelletier, Francis J. & Lenhart K. Schubert. 1989. Mass expressions. In Dov M. Gabbay & Franz Guenther (eds.), *Handbook of philosophical logic*, vol. 4, 327–407. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Pepperberg, Irene M. 1987. Evidence for conceptual quantitative abilities in the African grey parrot: Labeling of cardinal sets. *Ethology* 75(1). 37–61. DOI: 10.1111/j.1439-0310.1987.tb00641.x.
- Piaget, Jean & Albert Morf. 1958. Les isomorphismes partiels entre les structures logiques et les structures perceptives. In Jérôme S. Bruner, François Bresson, Albert Morf & Jean Piaget (eds.), *Logique et perception*, vol. 6, 49–116. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France.
- Piazza, Manuela. 2010. Neurocognitive start-up tools for symbolic number representations. *Trends in Cognitive Sciences* 14. 542–551. DOI: 10.1016/j.tics.2010.09.008.
- Pontow, Carsten & Rainer Schubert. 2006. A mathematical analysis of theories of parthood. *Data & Knowledge Engineering* 59(1). 107–138. DOI: 10.1016/j.datak.2005.07.010.
- Prasada, Sandeep, Krag Ferenz & Todd Haskell. 2002. Conceiving of entities as objects and as stuff. *Cognition* 83(2). 141–165. DOI: 10.1016/S0010-0277(01)00173-1.
- Priest, Graham. 2014. *One: Being an investigation into the unity of reality and of its parts, including the singular object which is nothingness*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Progovac, Ljiljana. 1998. Determiner phrase in a language without determiners. *Journal of Linguistics* 34(1). 165–179. DOI: 10.1017/S0022226797006865.
- Przepiórkowski, Adam. 2006. O inherentnej liczbie mnogiej liczebników ‘ćwierć’, ‘pół’ i ‘półtora’. *Poradnik Językowy* 9. 78–87. <https://www.ceeol.com/search/article-detail?id=63437>.
- Przepiórkowski, Adam. 2008. Generalised quantifier restrictions on the arguments of the Polish distributive preposition ‘po’. *Études Cognitives* 8. 159–177.

- Przepiórkowski, Adam. 2010. Towards a construction grammar account of the distributive ‘po’ in Polish. *Études Cognitives* 10. 163–176. DOI: 10.11649/cs.2010.010.
- Przepiórkowski, Adam. 2014. Distance distributivity in Polish: Towards a Glue Semantics approach. In Chris Piñón (ed.), *Empirical Issues in Syntax and Semantics 10*, 107–124. Paris: CNRS. <http://www.cssp.cnrs.fr/eiss10/>.
- Przepiórkowski, Adam, Mirosław Bańko, Rafał Górski & Barbara Lewandowska-Tomaszczyk. 2012. *Narodowy Korpus Języka Polskiego*. Warszawa: PWN.
- Przepiórkowski, Adam & Agnieszka Patejuk. 2013. The syntax of distance distributivity in Polish: Weak heads in LFG via restriction. In Miriam Butt & Tracy Holloway King (eds.), *Proceedings of the HPSG 2013 Conference*, 482–502. Stanford, CA: CSLI Publications.
- Putnam, Hillary. 1975. The meaning of ‘meaning’. *Minnesota Studies in the Philosophy of Science* 7. 131–193. <https://hdl.handle.net/11299/185225>.
- Quine, Willard van Orman. 1960. *Word and object*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Quinn, Paul C., Sherry Burke & Amy Rush. 1993. Part–whole perception in early infancy: Evidence for perceptual grouping produced by lightness similarity. *Infant Behavior and Development* 16(1). 19–42. DOI: 10.1016/0163-6383(93)80026-5.
- Quirk, Randolph, Sidney Greenbaum, Geoffrey Leech & Jan Svartvik. 1985. *A comprehensive grammar of the English language*. London: Longman.
- Reinhart, Tanya. 1997. Quantifier scope: How labor is divided between QR and choice functions. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 20(4). 335–397. DOI: 10.1023/A:1005349801431.
- Rescher, Nicholas. 1955. Axioms for the part relation. *Philosophical Studies* 6(1). 8–11. DOI: 10.1007/BF02341057.
- Ritter, Elizabeth. 1991. Two functional categories in noun phrases. In Susan Rothstein (ed.), *Syntax and Semantics 25: Perspectives on phrase structure*, 37–62. San Diego: Academic Press.
- Ritter, Elizabeth. 1992. Cross-linguistic evidence for number phrase. *Canadian Journal of Linguistics* 37(2). 197–218. DOI: 10.1017/S0008413100021952.
- Roeper, Peter. 1997. Region-based topology. *Journal of Philosophical Logic* 26(3). 251–309. DOI: 10.1023/A:1017904631349.
- Rohlf, Gerhard. 1968. *Grammatica storica della lingua italiana e dei suoi dialetti: Morfologia*. Torino: Einaudi.
- Rothstein, Susan. 2003. *Structuring events: A study in the semantics of lexical aspect*. Oxford: Blackwell.

## References

- Rothstein, Susan. 2009. Individuating and measure readings of classifier constructions: Evidence from Modern Hebrew. *Brill's Journal of Afroasiatic Languages and Linguistics* 1(1). 106–145. DOI: 10.1163/187666309X12491131130783.
- Rothstein, Susan. 2010. Counting and the mass/count distinction. *Journal of Semantics* 27(3). 343–397. DOI: 10.1093/jos/ffq007.
- Rothstein, Susan. 2011. Counting, measuring and the semantics of classifiers. *The Baltic International Yearbook of Cognition, Logic and Communication* 6. 1–42. DOI: 10.4148/biyclc.v6i0.1582.
- Rothstein, Susan. 2012. Numericals: Counting, measuring and classifying. In Ana Aguilar Guevara, Anna Chernilovskaya & Rick Nouwen (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung* 16, 527–543. Cambridge, MA: MIT Working Papers in Linguistics. <http://mitwpl.mit.edu/open/sub16/Rothstein.pdf>.
- Rothstein, Susan. 2013. A Fregean semantics for number words. In Maria Aloni, Michael Franke & Floris Roelofsen (eds.), *Proceedings of the 19th Amsterdam Colloquium*, 179–186. Amsterdam: ILLC. [http://www.illc.uva.nl/AC/AC2013/uploaded\\_files/inlineitem/23\\_Rothstein.pdf](http://www.illc.uva.nl/AC/AC2013/uploaded_files/inlineitem/23_Rothstein.pdf).
- Rothstein, Susan. 2017. *Semantics for counting and measuring*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Rotstein, Carmen & Yoad Winter. 2004. Total adjectives vs. partial adjectives: Scale structure and higher-order modifiers. *Natural Language Semantics* 12(3). 259–288. DOI: 10.1023/B:NALS.0000034517.56898.9a.
- Ruda, Marta. 2014. The impersonal subject *-n/t* construction in Polish and the typology of Voice heads. *Studies in Polish Linguistics* 9(4). 203–243. DOI: 10.4467/23005920SPL.14.009.3136.
- Rumbaugh, Duane M., Sue Savage-Rumbaugh & Mark T. Hegel. 1987. Summation in the chimpanzee (*Pan troglodytes*). *Journal of Experimental Psychology: Animal Behavior Processes* 13(2). 107–115. DOI: 10.1037/0097-7403.13.2.107.
- Rutkowski, Paweł. 2002. Noun/Pronoun asymmetries: Evidence in support of the DP hypothesis in Polish. *Jezikoslovlje* 3(1-2). 159–170. DOI: <https://hrcak.srce.hr/31350>.
- Rutkowski, Paweł. 2007. The syntactic structure of grammaticalized partitives (pseudo-partitives). *University of Pennsylvania Working Papers in Linguistics* 13(1). 337–350. <https://repository.upenn.edu/pwpl/vol13/iss1/26>.
- Safir, Ken & Tim Stowell. 1988. Binominal 'each'. In James Blevins & Juli Carter (eds.), *Proceedings of the North East Linguistic Society* 18, 426–450. Amherst, MA: GLSA.
- Samuelson, Larissa K. & Linda B. Smith. 1999. Early noun vocabularies: Do ontology, category structure and syntax correspond? *Cognition* 73(1). 1–33. DOI: 10.1016/s0010-0277(99)00034-7.



- Santangelo, Annamaria. 1981. I plurali italiani del tipo 'le braccia': Abbreviazioni bibliografiche. *Archivio Glottologico Italiano Firenze* 66. 95–153.
- Sauerland, Uli, Jan Anderssen & Kazuko Yatsushiro. 2005. The plural is semantically unmarked. In Stephan Kepser & Marga Reis (eds.), *Linguistic evidence: Empirical, theoretical, and computational perspectives*, 413–434. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.
- Sauerland, Uli & Kazuko Yatsushiro. 2004. A silent noun in partitives. In Keir Moulton & Matthew Wolf (eds.), *Proceedings of the North East Linguistic Society* 34, 505–516. Amherst, MA: GLSA.
- Scha, Remko. 1981. Distributive, collective and cumulative quantification. In Jeroen A.G. Groenendijk, Theo M.V. Janssen & Martin B.J. Stokhof (eds.), *Formal methods in the study of language*, 483–512. Amsterdam: Mathematisch Centrum.
- Schein, Barry. 1993. *Plurals and events*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Schmitt, Viola. 2013. *More pluralities*. Vienna: University of Vienna. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Schmitt, Viola. 2019. Pluralities across categories and plural projection. *Semantics and Pragmatics* 12. 17. DOI: 10.3765/sp.12.17.
- Schwarzschild, Roger. 1991. *On the meaning of definitive plural noun phrases*. Amherst, MA: University of Massachusetts. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Schwarzschild, Roger. 1996. *Pluralities*. Dordrecht: Kluwer.
- Schwarzschild, Roger. 2002. The grammar of measurement. In Brendan Jackson (ed.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 12*, 225–245. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v12i0.2870.
- Scontras, Gregory. 2014. *The semantics of measurement*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Scontras, Gregory. 2017. A new kind of degree. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 40(2). 165–205. DOI: 10.1007/s10988-016-9200-9.
- Selkirk, Elisabeth O. 1977. Some remarks on noun phrase structure. In Peter Culicover, Thomas Wasow & Adrian Akmajian (eds.), *Formal syntax*, 285–316. New York, NY: Academic Press.
- Sharvy, Richard. 1979. The indeterminacy of mass predication. In Francis J. Pelletier (ed.), *Mass terms: Philosophical problems*, 249–277. Dordrecht: Reidel.
- Sharvy, Richard. 1980. A more general theory of definite descriptions. *The Philosophical Review* 89(4). 607–624. DOI: 10.2307/2184738.
- Shipley, Elizabeth F. & Barbara Shepperson. 1990. Countable entities: Developmental changes. *Cognition* 34(2). 109–136. DOI: 10.1016/0010-0277(90)90041-H.
- Simons, Peter M. 1987. *Parts: A study in ontology*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

## References

- Smith, Barry. 1996. Mereotopology: A theory of parts and boundaries. *Data & Knowledge Engineering* 20(3). 287–303. DOI: 10.1016/S0169-023X(96)00015-8.
- Smith, Peter W. 2015. *Feature mismatches: Consequences for syntax, morphology and semantics*. Storrs, CN: University of Connecticut. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Smith, Peter W. 2017. Lexical plurals in Telugu: Mass nouns in disguise. *Linguisticae Investigationes* 39(2). 234–252. DOI: 10.1075/li.39.2.02smi.
- Soja, Nancy N., Susan Carey & Elizabeth Spelke. 1991. Ontological categories guide young children's inductions of word meaning: Object terms and substance terms. *Cognition* 38(2). 179–211. DOI: 10.1016/0010-0277(91)90051-5.
- Sowa, John F. 1984. *Conceptual structures: Information processing in mind and machine*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
- Spector, Benjamin. 2007. Aspects of the pragmatics of plural morphology: On higher-order implicatures. In *Presupposition and implicature in compositional semantics*, 243–281. New York, NY: Palgrave/MacMillan.
- Spelke, Elizabeth. 1990. Principles of object perception. *Cognitive Science* 14(1). 29–56. DOI: 10.1016/0364-0213(90)90025-R.
- Steimann, Friedrich. 2000. On the representation of roles in object-oriented and conceptual modelling. *Data & Knowledge Engineering* 35(1). 83–106. DOI: 10.1016/S0169-023X(00)00023-9.
- Sudo, Yasutada. 2016. The semantic role of classifiers in Japanese. *Baltic International Yearbook of Cognition, Logic and Communication* 11(1). 1–15. DOI: 10.4148/1944-3676.1108.
- Sutton, Peter R. & Hana Filip. 2016a. Counting in context: Count/mass variation and restrictions on coercion in collective artifact nouns. In Mary Moroney, Carol-Rose Little, Jacob Collard & Dan Burgdorf (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory* 26, 350–370. Washington, DC: LSA. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v26i0.3796.
- Sutton, Peter R. & Hana Filip. 2016b. Mass/count variation: A mereological, two-dimensional semantics. *Baltic International Yearbook of Cognition, Logic and Communication* 11(1). 11. DOI: 10.4148/1944-3676.1110.
- Sutton, Peter R. & Hana Filip. 2017a. A probabilistic, mereological account of the mass/count distinction. In Helle Hvid Hansen, Sarah E. Murray, Mehrnoosh Sadrzadeh & Henk Zeevat (eds.), *Logic, language, and computation: 11th international Tbilisi symposium on logic, language, and computation, TbiLLC 2015, Tbilisi, Georgia, September 21-26, 2015*, 146–170. Berlin: Springer.
- Sutton, Peter R. & Hana Filip. 2017b. Individuation, reliability, and the mass/count distinction. *Journal of Language Modelling* 5(2). 303–356. DOI: 10.15398/jlm.v5i2.144.

- Sutton, Peter R. & Hana Filip. 2020. Informational object nouns and the mass/count distinction. In Michael Franke, Nikola Kompa, Mingya Liu, Jutta L. Mueller & Juliane Schwab (eds.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 24*, vol. 2, 319–335. Osnabrück: Osnabrück University. DOI: 10.18148/sub/2020.v24i2.900.
- Tadić, Marko. 2009. New version of the Croatian National Corpus. In Dana Hlaváčková, Aleš Horák, Klára Osolsobě & Pavel Rychlý (eds.), 219–228. Brno: Masaryk University.
- Tarski, Alfred. 1929. Les fondements de la géométrie des corps. In *Księga pamiątkowa pierwszego polskiego zjazdu matematycznego*, 29–33. Kraków: Uniwersytet Jagielloński.
- Tarski, Alfred. 1935. Zur Grundlegung der Booleschen Algebra I. *Fundamenta Mathematicae* 1(24). 177–198. DOI: 10.4064/fm-24-1-177-198.
- ter Meulen, Alice G.B. 1980. *Substances, quantities and individuals: A study in the formal semantics of mass terms*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Thompson, Richard F., Kathleen S. Mayers, Richard T. Robertson & Charlotte J. Patterson. 1970. Number coding in association cortex of the cat. *Science* 168(3928). 271–273. DOI: 10.1126/science.168.3928.271.
- Tovena, Lucia. 2001. Between mass and count. In Karine Megerdooian & Leora Anne Bar-el (eds.), *WCCFL 20: Proceedings of the 20th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics*, 565–578. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.
- Tsoulas, George. 2009. On the grammar of number and mass terms in Greek. In Claire Halpert, Jeremy Hartman & David Hill (eds.), *Proceedings of the 2007 Workshop in Greek Syntax and Semantics at MIT*, 131–146. Cambridge, MA: MIT Working Papers in Linguistics.
- Unger, Peter. 1975. *Ignorance*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.
- Vaillette, Nathan. 2001. Flexible summativity: A type-logical approach to plural semantics. In Michael W. Daniels, David Dowty, Anna Feldman & Vanessa Metcalf (eds.), *OSU working papers in linguistics*, 135–157. Columbus, OH: Ohio State University.
- Valkova, Zoya. 1999. *Semantics of case: The partitive genitive in Russian*. Edmonton: University of Alberta. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Vannestål, Maria Estling. 2004. *Syntactic variation in English quantified noun phrases with 'all', 'whole', 'both' and 'half'*. Växjö: Växjö University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Varzi, Achille C. 2007. Spatial reasoning and ontology: Parts, wholes, and locations. In Marco Aiello, Ian E. Pratt-Hartmann & Johan van Benthem (eds.), *Handbook of spatial logics*, 945–1038. Berlin: Springer.

## References

- Varzi, Achille C. 2016. Mereology. In Edward N. Zalta (ed.), *The Stanford encyclopedia of philosophy*. Metaphysics Research Lab, Stanford University. <https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/win2016/entries/mereology/>.
- Veselovská, Ludmila. 1995. *Phrasal movement and X-morphology: Word order parallels in Czech and English nominal and verbal projections*. Olomouc: Palacký University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- von Stechow, Arnim. 1984. Comparing semantic theories of comparison. *Journal of Semantics* 3(1). 1–77. DOI: 10.1093/jos/3.1-2.1.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2014. Boys, girls, and scissors: A semantic analysis of Polish NPs headed by the numeral ‘dwoje’. In Ludmila Veselovská & Markéta Janebová (eds.), *Nominal structures: All in complex DPs*, 69–84. Olomouc: Palacký University.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2015a. Counting minimal groups: Towards a unified analysis of the Polish measure word ‘para’. *Grazer Linguistische Studien* 83. 169–177. <https://unipub.uni-graz.at/gls/periodical/titleinfo/1283093>.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2015b. Sums, groups, genders, and Polish numerals. In Gerhild Zybatow, Petr Biskup, Marcel Guhl, Claudia Hurtig, Olav Mueller-Reichau & Maria Yastrebova (eds.), *Slavic grammar from a formal perspective: The 10th anniversary FDSL conference, Leipzig 2013*, 495–513. Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2017. Pairs of things and the meaning of the plural. In Wiktor Pskit (ed.), *Topics in syntax and semantics: Linguistic and philosophical perspectives*, 111–128. Łódź: Łódź University Press.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2020a. Entities, events, and their parts: The semantics of multipliers in Slavic. In Teodora Radeva-Bork & Peter Kosta (eds.), *Current developments in Slavic linguistics: Twenty years after*, 105–130. Frankfurt am Main: Peter Lang.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2020b. Several quantifiers are different than others: Polish indefinite numerals. In Lanko Marušič, Rok Žaucer & Petra Mišmaš (eds.), *Advances in formal Slavic linguistics 2017*, 323–353. Berlin: Language Science Press. DOI: 10.5281/zenodo.3764869.
- Wągiel, Marcin. 2021. Slavic derived collective nouns as spatial and social clusters. In Mojmir Dočekal & Marcin Wągiel (eds.), *Formal approaches to number in Slavic and beyond*, 175–205. Berlin: Language Science Press. DOI: 10.5281/zenodo.5082464.
- Wągiel, Marcin. to appear. Grammatical gender meets classifier semantics: Evidence from Slavic numerals. In Vera Gribanova, Sabrina Grimberg, Erika Petersen O Farrill, Eva Portelance & Brandon Waldon (eds.), *Formal Approaches to Slavic Linguistics 27*. Ann Arbor, MI: Michigan Slavic Publications.

- Wagiel, Marcin & Pavel Caha. 2020. Universal semantic features and the typology of cardinal numerals. *Catalan Journal of Linguistics* 19. 199–229. DOI: 10.5565/rev/catjl.296.
- Washburn, David A. & Duane M. Rumbaugh. 1991. Ordinal judgments of numerical symbols by macaques (*Macaca mulatta*). *Psychological Science* 2(3). 190–193. DOI: 10.1111/j.1467-9280.1991.tb00130.x.
- Watanabe, Akira. 2013. Count syntax and the partitivity. In Département de Linguistique de l'Université de Genève (ed.), *19 ICL: 19th International Congress of Linguistics. July 21–27 2013, Geneva – Switzerland*, 1–18. Geneva: Département de Linguistique de l'Université de Genève.
- Watanabe, Akira. 2017. The mass/count distinction in Japanese from the perspective of partitivity. *Glossa: a journal of general linguistics* 2(1). 1–26. DOI: 10.5334/gjgl.116.
- Whitehead, Alfred N. 1920. *The concept of nature*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Whitehead, Alfred N. 1929. *Process and reality*. New York, NY: MacMillan.
- Wierzbicka, Anna. 1988. *The semantics of grammar*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Wiggins, David. 1980. *Sameness and substance*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Winston, Morton E., Roger Chaffin & Douglas Herrmann. 1987. A taxonomy of part-whole relations. *Cognitive Science* 11(4). 417–444. DOI: 10.1016/S0364-0213(87)80015-0.
- Winter, Yoad. 2001. *Flexibility principles in Boolean semantics: The interpretation of coordination, plurality, and scope in natural language*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Wisniewski, Edward. 2010. On using count nouns, mass nouns, and pluralia tantum: What counts. In *Kinds, things, and stuff: Mass terms and generics*, 166–190. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
- Wisniewski, Edward, Christopher Lamb & Erica Middleton. 2003. On the conceptual basis for the count and mass noun distinction. *Language and Cognitive Processes* 18(5–6). 583–624. DOI: 10.1080/01690960344000044.
- Witkin, Herman A. 1950. Individual differences in ease of perception of embedded figures. *Journal of Personality* 19(1). 1–15. DOI: 10.1111/j.1467-6494.1950.tb01084.x.
- Woodruff, Guy & David Premack. 1981. Primitive mathematical concepts in the chimpanzee: Proportionality and numerosity. *Nature* 293(5833). 568–570. DOI: 10.1038/293568a0.
- Wynn, Karen. 1990. Children's understanding of counting. *Cognition* 36(2). 155–193. DOI: 10.1016/0010-0277(90)90003-3.

## References

- Yanovich, Igor. 2005. Choice-functional series of indefinite pronouns and Hamblin semantics. In Efthymia Georgala & Jonathan Howell (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 15*, 309–326. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v15i0.2921.
- Yoon, Youngeun. 1996. Total and partial predicates and the weak and strong interpretations. *Natural Language Semantics* 4(3). 217–236. DOI: 10.1007/BF00372820.
- Zhang, Niina-Ning. 2011. The constituency of classifier constructions in Mandarin Chinese. *Taiwan Journal of Linguistics* 9(1). 1–49. DOI: 10.6519/TJL.2011.9(1).1.
- Zimmermann, Malte. 2002. *Boys buying two sausages each: On the syntax and semantics of distance-distributivity*. Amsterdam: University of Amsterdam. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Zobel, Sarah. 2017. The sensitivity of natural language to the distinction between class nouns and role nouns. In Dan Burgdorf, Jacob Collard, Sireemas Maspong & Brynhildur Stefánsdóttir (eds.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 27*, 438–458. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v27i0.4182.
- Zucchi, Sandro & Michael White. 2001. Twigs, sequences and the temporal constitution of predicates. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 24(2). 223–270. DOI: 10.1023/A:1005690022190.
- Zwarts, Joost & Yoad Winter. 1997. A semantic characterization of locative PPs. In Aaron Lawson (ed.), *Proceedings of Semantics and Linguistic Theory 7*, 294–311. Ithaca, NY: CLC Publications. DOI: 10.3765/salt.v7i0.2798.
- Zweig, Eytan. 2008. *Dependent plurals and plural meaning*. New York, NY: New York University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Zweig, Eytan. 2009. Number-neutral bare plurals and the multiplicity implicature. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 32(4). 353–407. DOI: 10.1007/s10988-009-9064-3.
- Zwicky, Arnold, Jerrold Sadock & John Kimball. 1975. Ambiguity tests and how to fail them. In John Kimball (ed.), *Syntax and semantics*, 1–36. New York, NY: Academic Press.

# Name index

- Abbott, Barbara, 18, 19  
Acquaviva, Paolo, 5, 6, 47–51, 53, 101,  
112, 219, 275, 281  
Agrillo, Christian, 163  
Aikhenvald, Alexandra Y., 236  
Alexiadou, Artemis, 101, 112  
Allan, Keith, 72  
Alonso-Ovalle, Luis, 242  
Anttila, Arto, 17  
Apresjan, Juri, 130  
Arsenijević, Boban, 130  
Artstein, Ron, 217  
Asbury, Anna, 18  
Asher, Nicholas, 3, 217
- Bach, Emmon, 9, 75, 147, 217  
Bale, Alan, 31, 90, 227, 228, 233, 237,  
247  
Barker, Chris, 3, 22, 58, 65, 239  
Barner, David, 31, 90, 209, 227, 228,  
247  
Barwise, Jon, 1, 18, 45, 66, 126, 230,  
239  
Beck, Sigrid, 46, 61, 281  
Bennet, Michael R., 189  
Bierwisch, Manfred, 3  
Böhm, Jennifer, 163  
Boisvert, Martine, 4, 159  
Borer, Hagit, 3, 72, 219, 247  
Borschev, Vladimir, 94  
Bosnić, Ana, 64  
Boysen, Sarah T., 163
- Brasoveanu, Adrian, 61, 64, 281  
Breheny, Richard, 55  
Brisson, Christine, 109  
Brunet, Jacqueline, 47  
Bultinck, Bert, 230  
Bunt, Harry C., 118, 144
- Cable, Seth, 62  
Caha, Pavel, 234, 237  
Cantlon, Jessica F., 160  
Capaldi, E. John, 163  
Carey, Susan, 155, 156, 160  
Carlson, Gregory N., 11, 61, 147  
Casati, Roberto, 2, 4, 184–187, 190–  
200, 204, 279  
Champollion, Lucas, 1, 5, 6, 36, 46,  
62, 65, 139, 140, 167, 178, 184,  
185, 187–190, 208  
Chao, Wynn, 9  
Cheng, Chung-Ying, 132  
Chierchia, Gennaro, 26, 31, 66, 90,  
92–94, 118, 167, 207, 209–  
211, 220, 234, 245, 280  
Chomsky, Noam, 9  
Clark, Herbert H., 164, 192  
Clarke, Bowman L., 2, 192  
Cleven, Cyril, 102  
Coon, Jessica, 237  
Cooper, Robin, 1, 18, 45, 66, 126, 230,  
239  
Corbett, Greville G., 31, 47, 49  
Cresswell, Max, 191

*Name index*

- Cruse, D. Alan, 6, 139
- Dalrymple, Mary, 61
- Davidson, Donald, 9, 145
- Davies, Mark, 134
- Davis, Hank, 163
- de Hoop, Helen, 17–19, 102, 239
- de Vries, Hannah, 3, 26, 62, 64, 65
- Deal, Amy Rose, 221
- Dehaene, Stanislas, 11, 160, 161, 163
- Dočekal, Mojmír, 58, 127, 138, 166,  
192, 222, 231, 238, 251, 282
- Dotlačil, Jakub, 46, 61, 62, 217, 281
- Dougherty, Ray C., 61
- Dowty, David, 24, 78, 147
- Durrell, Martin, 18
- Eberle, Rolf A., 183
- Elkind, David, 4, 158, 159
- Etxeberria, Urtzi, 62
- Fassi Fehri, Abdelkader, 130, 231
- Feigenson, Lisa, 160
- Fiengo, Robert, 61
- Filip, Hana, 78, 90, 162, 172, 192, 216,  
283
- Fong, Vivienne, 17
- Francez, Nissim, 217
- Franks, Steven, 62
- Fréchet, Maurice, 192
- Frege, Gottlob, 234
- Fuson, Karen C., 160, 161
- Gallistel, Charles R., 160, 163
- Gelman, Rochel, 160, 161
- Gentner, Dedre, 154, 155
- Geurts, Bart, 55, 230
- Gil, David, 62, 174, 176
- Gillon, Brendan S., 1, 31, 46, 90
- Goodman, Nelson, 183
- Görgülü, Emrah, 233
- Greenberg, Joseph H., 236
- Grimm, Scott, 2, 9, 90, 92, 127, 132,  
162, 166, 167, 172, 184, 185,  
191, 192, 199–204, 207, 213,  
215, 217, 219, 220, 222, 268,  
279, 282
- Grimshaw, Jane, 3, 10, 145
- Hall, Robert A., 47
- Hansen, Mikkel B., 157
- Harves, Stephanie, 62
- Haslinger, Nina, 172
- Hausdorff, Felix, 192
- Hauser, Marc D., 156
- Hausser, Roland, 189
- Heim, Irene, 10
- Henderson, Robert, 58, 166, 192, 205,  
282
- Herskovits, Annette, 164, 192
- Heycock, Caroline, 35
- Hoeing, Robert G., 17, 18
- Hoeksema, Jack, 1, 46, 220
- Hoeksema, Jacob, 15, 16, 19
- Hofherr, Patricia Cabredo, 62
- Hofweber, Thomas, 230
- Hollich, George, 157, 158
- Horn, Laurence R., 55, 230
- Hovda, Paul, 187, 190
- Hsieh, Miao-Ling, 108
- Huddleston, Rodney, 103, 125, 137
- Hurford, James R., 237
- Hyde, Daniel C., 160
- Igel, Moritz, 113
- Imai, Mutsumi, 154, 155
- Ionin, Tania, 16, 19, 22, 126, 221, 230,  
232, 233, 239
- Jackendoff, Ray, 17, 18, 75, 239



- Jennings, Sean Lastone Michael, 5,  
178
- Jin, Jing, 108
- Jing-Schmidt, Zhuo, 108
- Kagan, Olga, 240
- Karlsson, Fred, 17
- Keibel, Holger, 135
- Kennedy, Christopher, 41, 230, 282
- Khrizman, Keren, 92, 94, 127, 143, 231
- Kimchi, Ruth, 4, 159
- Kitcher, Philip, 11
- Knežević, Nataša, 62
- Kobuchi-Philip, Mana, 66, 234
- Koptjevskaja-Tamm, Maria, 31, 92
- Korat, Omer, 19
- Kracht, Marcus, 165, 192
- Kratzer, Angelika, 66, 242
- Krecz, Charles A., 5, 178
- Křen, Michal, 130
- Krifka, Manfred, 1, 5, 6, 9, 11, 78, 139,  
140, 169, 174, 177, 178, 184,  
185, 187–190, 192, 211, 217,  
221, 224, 225, 230, 233
- Kučerová, Ivona, 47, 51
- Kupietz, Marc, 135
- Kuratowski, Kazimierz, 192
- Ladusaw, William, 17, 18, 45, 239
- Lahiri, Utpal, 217
- Landau, Barbara, 154
- Landman, Fred, 1, 3, 31, 46, 65, 66, 75,  
90, 92, 94, 118, 126, 143, 168,  
169, 184, 185, 187, 188, 190,  
191, 207, 210, 220, 230, 251
- Lasersohn, Peter, 23, 24, 46
- Lasnik, Howard, 61
- Lausberg, Heinrich, 47
- Lavine, James E., 36
- Leonard, Henry S., 183
- Leśniewski, Stanisław, 183
- Levin, Beth, 162, 217
- Lima, Suzi, 192
- Link, Godehard, 1, 10, 20, 27, 36, 46,  
65, 66, 118, 184, 187, 189, 190,  
207, 209, 219, 220, 222, 223,  
240, 280
- Löfstedt, Einar, 47
- Lønning, Jan Tore, 59
- Lyons, John, 174
- Markman, Ellen M., 157
- Markosian, Ned, 5, 178
- Martí i Girbau, Núria, 16, 19
- Marty, Paul, 239
- Matsuzawa, Tetsuro, 163
- Matthewson, Lisa, 242
- Matushansky, Ora, 126, 221, 230, 232,  
233
- McNally, Louise, 41, 282
- Meck, Elizabeth, 161
- Meili-Dworetzki, Gertrude, 158
- Melgoza, Vicente, 162
- Menéndez-Benito, Paula, 242
- Miller, Daniel J., 163
- Mitchell, Robert W., 163
- Moltmann, Friederike, 3, 9, 20, 22,  
37, 43, 109, 113, 115, 244, 275,  
277, 282
- Montague, Richard, 1, 126
- Morf, Albert, 158
- Morzycki, Marcin, 109, 115, 138, 277,  
282
- Mueller-Reichau, Olav, 11
- Nicolas, David, 3
- Nieder, Andreas, 160
- Nouwen, Rick, 24, 64, 217, 230, 233

*Name index*

- Oh, Sei-Rang, 62  
Ojeda, Almerindo E., 47, 49–51, 275,  
281
- Parsons, Terence, 147  
Partee, Barbara H., 9, 94  
Patejuk, Agnieszka, 62  
Pearson, Hazel, 3, 58, 64, 65  
Pelletier, Francis J., 9, 72, 94, 154, 219  
Pepperberg, Irene M., 163  
Pérusse, Rachelle, 163  
Piaget, Jean, 158  
Piazza, Manuela, 160  
Pontow, Carsten, 188  
Prasada, Sandeep, 156  
Premack, David, 163  
Priest, Graham, 4  
Progovac, Ljiljana, 241  
Przepiórkowski, Adam, 35, 62, 73, 79,  
83, 130  
Pullum, Geoffrey K., 103, 125, 137  
Putnam, Hillary, 9
- Quine, Willard van Orman, 154–157,  
184  
Quinn, Paul C., 159  
Quirk, Randolph, 19, 103, 125, 137
- Reinhart, Tanya, 242  
Rescher, Nicholas, 184  
Ritter, Elizabeth, 101  
Roeper, Peter, 2, 192  
Rohlf, Gerhard, 47  
Rothstein, Susan, 78, 90, 94, 132, 143,  
168, 169, 171, 174, 176, 177,  
200, 223, 230–232, 234  
Rotstein, Carmen, 41, 282  
Ruda, Marta, 36  
Rumbaugh, Duane M., 163
- Rutkowski, Paweł, 17, 241
- Safir, Ken, 62  
Samuelson, Larissa K., 156  
Santangelo, Annamaria, 48  
Sauerland, Uli, 33, 46, 220  
Scha, Remko, 1, 46, 126, 230, 234  
Schein, Barry, 46  
Schmitt, Viola, 46, 172, 217  
Schubert, Lenhart K., 72, 154, 219  
Schubert, Rainer, 188  
Schwarzschild, Roger, 1, 3, 20, 26–  
29, 37, 40, 43, 45, 46, 57–61,  
64, 65, 67, 165, 177, 220, 224,  
225, 245, 275, 282  
Scontras, Gregory, 192, 245, 247  
Selkirk, Elisabeth O., 17, 18, 66, 92,  
143, 239  
Sharvy, Richard, 184, 187, 240, 247  
Shepperson, Barbara, 161, 162  
Shimoyama, Junko, 242  
Shipley, Elizabeth F., 161, 162  
Simons, Peter M., 27, 139, 140, 184,  
187  
Smith, Barry, 2, 192  
Smith, Linda B., 156  
Smith, Peter W., 101, 112  
Snedeker, Jesse, 31, 90, 209, 228  
Soja, Nancy N., 154, 155  
Sowa, John F., 10, 148  
Spaulding, Bailey, 156  
Spector, Benjamin, 220  
Spelke, Elizabeth, 155  
Steimann, Friedrich, 10, 148  
Stowell, Tim, 62  
Sudo, Yasutada, 232, 236  
Sutton, Peter R., 90, 162, 172, 192, 216
- Tadić, Marko, 131

- Tarski, Alfred, 187, 188  
ter Meulen, Alice G.B., 118  
Thompson, Richard F., 163  
Tovena, Lucia, 3  
Tsoulas, George, 219  
  
Unger, Peter, 41  
  
Vaillette, Nathan, 190  
Valkova, Zoya, 17  
Vannestål, Maria Estling, 103  
Varzi, Achille C., 2–4, 139, 184–187,  
190–201, 204, 279  
Veselovská, Ludmila, 241  
von Stechow, Arnim, 10  
  
Wągiel, Marcin, 31, 58, 126, 127, 129,  
130, 138, 148, 166, 217, 218,  
220, 222, 231, 234, 237, 238,  
242, 251  
Wälchli, Bernhard, 31  
Washburn, David A., 163  
Watanabe, Akira, 33, 34  
White, Michael, 132, 200  
Whitehead, Alfred N., 2, 192  
Wierzbicka, Anna, 31, 72, 167  
Wiggins, David, 131, 133  
Winston, Morton E., 184  
Winter, Yoad, 1, 41, 46, 65, 164, 192,  
282  
Wisniewski, Edward, 31, 72  
Witkin, Herman A., 158  
Woodruff, Guy, 163  
Wynn, Karen, 161  
  
Yanovich, Igor, 242  
Yatsushiro, Kazuko, 33  
Yoon, Youngeun, 41, 282  
  
Zamparelli, Roberto, 35  
  
Zhang, Niina-Ning, 108  
Zimmermann, Malte, 62  
Zobel, Sarah, 10, 148, 217  
Zucchi, Sandro, 132, 200  
Zwarts, Joost, 164, 192  
Zweig, Eytan, 46, 220  
Zwicky, Arnold, 23





# Subatomic quantification

The goal of this book is to explore the relationship between the cognitive notion of PARTHOOD and various grammatical devices expressing this concept in natural language. The monograph aims to investigate syntactic constructions and lexical categories, e.g., partitives, whole-adjectives, and multipliers, encoding different kinds of part-whole structures both in Slavic and non-Slavic languages. It is envisioned to inspire radical rethinking of the ontology of models accounting for nominal semantics. Specifically, it provides novel evidence for a mereotopological approach to meaning, i.e., a theory of wholes that captures not only parthood but also topological relations holding between parts. This evidence comes from the phenomenon of SUBATOMIC QUANTIFICATION, i.e., quantification over parts of referents of concrete count nouns.

ISBN 978-3-96110-315-7



9 783961 103157